

C 13263

62263

MICROFILMS

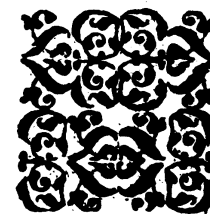
REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE

HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION

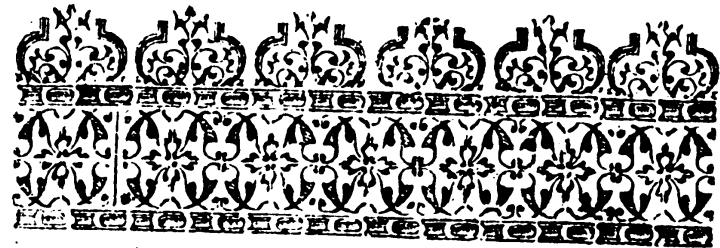
A Briefe Chronicle, of the Successe of Times, from the Creation of the World, to this in- stant.

CONTAINING,
The Originall & liues of our an-
cient Fore-Fathers, before and after the Flood;
As also, of all the Monarchs, Emperours, Kinges,
Popes, Kingdomes, Common-weales, Estates and
Gouernments, in most Nations of this Worlde:
And how in alteration, or succession, they have
continued to this day.



Printed by W. Iaggard, Printer to the Honou-
rable City of London, and are to be
sold at his house in Barbican.

1611.



TO THE RIGHT
HONOVABLE, SIR
VVILLIAM CRAVON, Knight,
*Lord Maior of the Cittie of London; Sir HENRIE
MONTAGVE, Seriant at Law to his Maiestie,
and Recorder of London: And to all the Knights, Alder-
men, and Worshipfull Bretheren, the carefull Fathers
and Gouvernours of this Honourable
Estate.*

Having collected these briefe
notes (Right Honourable,
Right Worshipfull, and my
most respected) concerning
the Successe of Times (in
most of the Kingdoms tho-
row the World) euen from
the Creation, to this instant yeare 1611. and
modelled them all in this slender Volume, that
such as fauour Reuerend Antiquity, might re-
ceiue both pleasure & profit thereby: I thought
A 2 it

The Epistle Dedicatory.

it part of my duty (in regard of some fauour and respect lately by mee receiued) to present your Honor and Worships there-with, as a token of my gratitude, and as a promise of my vttermost imployment, in these, or any other endeouours, whereto my meannesse in ability by you shall be commaunded. I know right well, and such as know me, haue heard me daily confesse it, that I (of infinite others) was the most vnmeetest to vndergoe such a serious businesse, which required, if not the best able, yet those that therein are much better scene then my selfe. Neuerthelessse, importunitie of Friendes, that greeue to see no willing hand put to the plough, or at least such (euen like my selfe) more forward then wise; their perswasions, I say, and some regard had of the times necessity, euery man beeing borne for the good of his Country; hath (vnder your Honorable and Worshipsfull fauour) made me thus aduenturous.

Concerning the helpes I haue had in this laborious trauaile, the Authors themselues, who haue best written, and discoursed of those seuerall Kingdoms and Nations; euen them, & no other haue I herein followed, borrowing beside some such matters from them, as (to my knowledge) haue not in any of our Chronicles heeretofore bin remembred, or at the least, not plainly reuealed.

The Epistle Dedicatory.

led. In our home affaires, especially the antiquity of this famous Cittie, I haue (with others) deliuered my opinion therin, yet swaruing from some, who haue beene thought ouer-scrupulous, sometime straining at a Gnat, yet very easily swallowing a Camell. The Dignitie that your Honor holdeth, of Lord Maior of this Cittie, and those graue Senators, the Alder-men your Brethren, I haue aymed at the Original & Antiquitie thereof; some Authors tearming them *Domesmen*, *Eldermen*, or *Judges* of the Kinges Court. But that the name of Alderman declareth both verie Reuerend Originall, and great Antiquitie; I find recorded, that in the time of King *Eadgar*, one *Ailwin*, a man of the bloud Royall, and, for the speciall great authority and fauour hee had with the King (being Sir-named *Healf-Koning*, that is, *Half-King*) was Alderman of all England, who founded that famous Monasterie in the Isle of *Ely*. Our learned and worthy Antiquary *M. Camden*, hath obserued the Epitaph engrauen on his Tombe, containing these wordes: *Hic requiescit Ailwinus incliti Regis Eadgari Cognatus, totius Anglie Aldermannus, et huius sacri Canobij miraculosus fundator. Heere resteth Ailwin, Cousin to the Noble King Eadgar, Alderman of all England, and of this holie Abbey the miraculous Founder.* Whereby appeareth, that the

A 3

Title

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Title of Alderman, in those ancient, reuerend, and respectiue times, was an addition of honor and high repute, as distinguishing them that deserued that grace, to be men of greater, grauer, and more solide iudgment, in matters appertaining to the Weale-publique, then others, vn capable of such especiall dignity. Of such worthy Fathers hath this famous Cittie beene plentifully furnished from time to time, as in our Chronicle may more at large appeare, and to you those graue Senators and worthily styled Aldermen (out of intire and dutifull affection) haue I consecrated the liuing memorie of these my poore labours: wishing to you all vnfeignedly, that as heauen hath bestowed this earthly honor vpon you, so (hereafter) it may crowne you with neuer dying happinesse.

Yours in all dutie to be commaunded,

A. Mundy.



To the Maister, Wardens, Assistants, and whole Liuary, of the Honorable Company of Merchant-Tailors, being the worthy Society of S. Iohn Baptist, anciently deriued from S. Iohn of Hierusalem, and the famous Knightes of that religious Brother-hood. Also to the Wardens Substitutes, and the sixteene men of the same Company, &c.

IT hath beene my hap (worthy and worshipful Gentlemen) among the variety of Collections, to build vp the body of this brieue Chronicle; to meete with an ancient and much esteemed Record, of a Society and brother-hood, styled by the name of *S. Iohn Baptist of Hierusalem*, and how many Great Maisters haue gouerned that Society, from Anno. 1099. to this present yeare, with some brieue obseruations of their liues and actions, as in Follio 187. more at large appeareth. Concerning the originall, progression, & seuerall Fortunes of this Military Brother-hood, beeing tearmed Knights *Hospitallers*, or Knights of the Hospitall of *S. Iohn Baptist of Ierusalem*; next, Knights of *Rhodes*, and lastly, Knightes of *Malta*; I refer you there to be further satisfied: yet some thinges beeing there accidentally omitted, may fauourably (and not vnnecessarily) here be remembred. These Brethren (by solemne profession) were bound to serue Pilgrims, and poore

A 4

peo-

The Epistle to the

people in the Hospitall of *S. Iohn* at Ierusalem, and to secure (by their man-hood) their passages thither, they charitably buried the dead, were continually in praier, mortified themselves with Watchings and Fastinges, were courteous and kinde to the poore, whom they called their Maisters, and fed them with white Bread, when themselves did eate browne. They grew to be loved and liked of all sortes, and, through the liberal bounty of good Princes and priuate persons (admiring their piety and prowesse) they rose from this low degree, to so high an estate and great riches, that about An. 1240. they had within Christendome nineteene thousand Lordships or Mannors, as the Knights *Templers* had nine thousand, the Reuennewes and Rentes wherof in England, fell afterward also to these knights *Hospitallers* of *S. Iohn Baptist*. And this estate of theirs (growne to so great an height) made way for them likewise to as great honors. So that their Prior in England (liuing then in the goodly Pallace of Saint *Iohn Baptist* of *Hierusalem*, in the streete which receiued name of that house, and is called yet to this day, Saint *Iohns-street*) was reputed the Priue Baron of the land, and called the Lord of *S. Iohns*, beeing able, with fullnesse and abundance of all things, to maintaine a very honorable Port.

In successe of time, as this worthy Citty grew to encrease, not onely in large extendure and beautie of buildings, but also in election of Companies and Corporations, for better supply of the Magistracy, and conueniency of all the aptest meanes thereto belonging; this Branch of your honorable Society of *S. Iohn Baptist* (deriued of that ancient and memorable Stem,
of

Merchant-Tailors.

of Saint *Iohn* of *Hierusalem*) grew to burgen and spread it selfe in goodliest manner. Beeing *Tailors* of the Linnen-Armory, and brethren of Saint *Iohn Baptist* (as most Companies, in those times, had a Saintes appellation) they grew to be great in Kinges fauours, who thought it no indignity to themselves, to be stiled in the Brother-hood of *S. Iohn Baptist*, and from theyr Guildes first Creation by King *Edward* the third, with authority to hold a feast yearely at Midsummer, and to make choyce of a Gouvernor or Mayster (according to the order of a Great Maister, among the Knights *Hospitallers*, of Saint *Iohn Baptist* of *Hierusalem*) and Wardens, to assitt and ayde him in that weighty charge: they proceeded on still (by the ensuing Kings) in further additions of gracious regard, till King *Henrie* the seauenth confirmed their Charter, naming them *Merchant-Tailors*, of the Brother-hood of Saint *Iohn Baptist*, to continue still the memorie of their Originall. Heere may I not also forget, that as the Knights *Hospitallers* at *Hierusalem*, were alwaies respectiue in seruice to Pilgrims and Trauailers: euen so, as if such an humble condition did well merit not to be forgotten, in this Brotherhood (at the beginning) they did vse ech yeare to chuse a Pilgrime, who attended the seruice of the Maister of the Company, and trauailed in behalfe of the whole Society. One of the Pilgrimes names is recorded by *Iohn Stow*, to be *Henrie de Ryall*, and that name of Pilgrime continued vntill the eleauenth year of *Richard* the second, when the soure Wardens, were then called Purueyours of Almes, now called quartermasters of the fraternity.

Seauen Kings haue borne Bretherens name of that
Society,

The Epistle to the

Society (viz:) *Edward* the third; *Richard* the second; *Henrie* the fourth; *Henrie* the fift; *Henrie* the sixt; *Edward* the fourth; and *Henrie* the seauenth, and (as is credibly affirmed) wearing the Liureyhood on their shoulders, they haue gone on the election day, from the Hall, to the Pallace of Saint *Iohns*, in Saint *Iohns* Streete, there to heare diuine seruice, and graciously permitted the Maister to goe on the vpper-hand, such (in those times) was the milde nature of Princes, shewing (by their owne example) how Magistrates, and other their meaner Ministers, ought to be held in honor and respect.

Passing ouer the Dukes, Earles, Lords, Byshoppes, Knightes, and Gentlemen, who haue likewise beene Bretheren of that honorable Society, and many other memorable persons, of whom this little limit alloweth no speech: I wil conclude this Epistle, with a brieue note of two or three worthy Bretheren, among infinite other, whose deserts doe iustly challenge perpetuall acknowledgement.

Sir *William Fitz William*, the elder, being a Merchant Taylor, and Seruaunt sometime to Cardinall *Wolsey*, was chosen Alderman of Bread-street-Ward in London, in Anno. 1506. And going afterward to dwell at *Mylton* in *Northamptonshire*; in the fall of the Cardinall his former Maister, he gaue him kinde entertainment there at his house in the Countrey. For which deede, being called before the King, and demaunded how he durst entertaine so great an enemy to the State: his answer was, that he had not contemptuously or wilfully done it, but onely because he had been his Maister, and partly the meanes of his greatest Fortunes. The
King

Merchant-Taylors.

King was so well pleased with his answer, that, saying, himselfe had too few such Seruaunts; immediately hee knighted him, and afterward made him a priuy Counciller. This worthy Knight dying, gaue an hundred pounds to poore Maids marriages. His debts and debtors, ouer whose names he had written *Amore Deo remitto*, he freely forgave. He gaue to the Vniuersities forty pound; to the poore thirty pound; to mend the high-waies betwixt *Chigwell* and *Copersale* in *Essex* 50. pounds; to mend other high-waies about *Thorney* and *Sawtrie* Chappell, and the Bridge, fifty pounds more. And to the *Merchant-Taylors* his Bretheren, hee gaue his best standing Cuppe, as a friendly remembrance of him.

Sir *Thomas White*, Lord Maior of this honourable City, and a worthy Brother likewise of that Society, beeing a loue of Learning, and an earnest furtherer thereof; first purchased the Hall in *Oxenford*, called *Glocester-Hall*, for Students and Schollers to receiue there the benefit of learning. But his priuate thoughts very often solliciting him, that he should (in time) meet with a place where two Elmes grewe, and that there his further forward purpose should take effect: At length he found out the place, where (at his owne cost and expences) hee founded the famous Colledge in *Oxenford*, called Saint *John Baptist* Colledge, & where those two Elmes (as I haue heard) are yet standing, endowing it with such liberall Guifts, Lands, and Reuennewes, as would require too much time here to be remembred. Beside his prouision for Learning in this worthy place, he erected other Schooles, as at *Bristol*, *Reading*, and a Colledge at *Higham-Ferries*. More, he gaue

The Epistle to the

gave to the City of *Bristol*, the summe of two thousand poundes, to purchase Land, amounting to the yearly vlew of an hundred and twenty poundes, the Maior and Cittizens paying therefore yearly an hundred poundes. Eight hundred poundes must bee lent to sixtene poore Clothiers, fifty poundes each man for ten years space, sufficient security being giuen by them for the same. Afterward, that eight hundred poundes was to passe to other sixtene Clothiers, according to discretion of them put in trust. Two hundred poundes beside was reserved, for prouision of Corne and needfull occasions for the poore, in the order and care of the Maior, Aldermen, and Cittizens, &c.

Then, according to his will, which remaineth yet to be seene, out of this bountifull giift to *Bristol*, these memorable branches and beneuolences, were by himselfe deuised and ordered, beginning in the yeare 1577. and thence forward they went on according to his owne direction. Then was brought to the *Merchant-Taylors* Hall, an hundred and foure poundes, the hundred pound to be lent (for ten years space) to four poore men in the City of *Torke*: And the foure pound ouer-plus, to be imploied about the charges & paines, that no man (vsed in the businesse) might receiue discontentment. Then in An. 1578. the like summe was to be deliuered thence to *Canterburie*, and so thence-forward the same summes (yearly) to the Citties and Townes following orderly.

1579. Reading.

1580. The Merchant-Tay-

lors themselves.

1581. Gloucester.

1582. Worcester.

1583. Excester.

1584. Salisbury.

1585. West-Chester.

1586. Nor-

Merchant-Taylors.

1586. Norwich.

1587. Southampton.

1588. Lincoln.

1589. Winchester.

1590. Oxenford.

1591. Hereford East.

1592. Cambridge.

1593. Shrewsburie.

1594. Lyane.

1595. Bath.

1596. Derby.

1597. Ipswich.

1598. Colchester.

1599. New-Castle.

This summe of one hundred and foure poundes, passing yearly to these fore-named places, from the Merchant-Taylors Hall, and to the good intended vses of the giuer; that there might bee no breaching while for so iust a Stewards Talent, but to haue it kept on in continuall imploiment for the poore: the same order was to take beginning againe (as before) at the Cittie of *Torke*, and so successiuelly (while the World stands) to the Townes before named, in selfe-same course as it had the originall, with great care and obseruance in them to whom it belongeth, that the dead may not be abused, nor poore mens right iniured.

But did he thus shut vp his Purse, and say to himselfe. I haue giuen sufficient? No, hee did cast his pittying eie next on the City of *Coventry*, distressed (at that time) in great and grievous manner. What his instant beneuolence was, he tooke it to bee but as an houres Sun-shine, after a whole day of storme and tempest, although it might yeeld some comfort, were the season neuer so short. But to establish a certainty, that no doubt may or doubt shouldeuer after bee able to remooue, (euen as a worthy Piramide, erected to perpetuity) he gave to the City of *Coventry* 1400. pound, therewith to purchase Lands, rising to the annuall value of 70 li. Twelve

The Epistle to the

Twelve poore Inhabitants of that Citty, were to haue in free Almes twenty foure poundes, each man forty shillings yearly, on the eleauenth day of March. Four young men were also to haue fortie poundes yearly, ten pound each man, and for nine yeares space, vpon sufficient security giuen; And their turnes thus serued, then foure other young men to haue the like summe, and like limitation, and so from nine yeares, to nine yeares, for euer. Afterward it was ordred to two poore men of the same Citty, and lastly to one; in which nature (according to the seuerall limitations) it doth yet, and doubtlesse shall for euer continue. Also the same summe to one young man in *Northampton*; next, in the Citty of *Leicester*; Thirddie, in *Nottingham*; Fourthly, in *Warwick*; Then returning to *Conuentic* again for one year, it repasseth to the said Townes againe, each after other yearly for euer. And least his worthy intent should faile in the continuance, hee enlarged his first gift to *Conuentic*, of 1400. poundes, to 2000. and 50. pound, to bee employed as hath beene remembred, fortie pound yearly being paid out of it to *Saint Iohn Baptist Colledge in Oxford*: And allowances also by himselfe giuen in each place, that bonds should be made without any charge to the receiuer.

Sir *Thomas Row*, Lord Maior of this famous Citty, and a worthy *Merchant-Taylor*, beside his charitable cost and charges, in building the new Church-yard in *Bedlem*, for such Parishes as wanted benefit of buriall: Gaue forty poundes yearly, to maintaine tenne poore men for euer, such as were not Bretheren of his owne Society, but chosen out of fise seuerall Companies (viz.) *Clothworkers, Armorers, Carpenters, Tylers,* and

Merchant-Taylors.

and *Plasterers*: As considering, that by ouer-toyling labour, dangers, fals, bruizes, and such like inconueniences, they were soonest like to become impotent, and vnable to helpe or maintaine themselves. Therefore to each of these ten men, hee freely gaue the sum of foure pound quarterly, to be paid them at the *Merchant-Taylors Hall*, during their liues; and then to succede to other men in the same Companies, according to due consideration, of iust cause and most necessity.

Lastly, worthy Gentlemen, to hold yee no longer, in matter better knowne to your selues then mee, because it is in your owne eyes and eares (almost) dailie, the neuer dying memory, of a yet liuing (and long may he so be) Brother *Merchant-Taylor*, shall be my conclusion. This vertuous and Religious man, knowing Death to be an vnindifferent Executor, and Life much more worthy of trust and imployment; hath preuented that gripple greedy Tyrant, and made such large Legacies to Life, that Death neuer deserued to be put in trust withall. If men of this World, such as GOD hath liberally bestowed his blessings on, would (with this good-minded man) consider, that, let their willes bee neuer so wisely made, yea, all Art and Dexterity therein (to the very vttermost) imployed: yet death, and his long wide gaping Children, haue many hangers on, many meanes & deuises, but many more tricks and vnfaithfull performances; they would trust life the better, as this man hath done, and let death haue only the reuerfion, which is the easier to bee considered on. It is not for my pen to set downe his praises, leaues of Marble or Brasse are meeter for those Carraeters, that

The Epistle to the Merchants-Taylors.

that the decay of teeth of Time may neuer deface.
Let this then be some addition to your honour, that
you haue such a worthy Brother; mindful of the works
of Mercy to the poore, among your selues, and many
places else-where; fearefull of offendours, whom law
sentencing with Death, by the Watch-bell of Prayer
are incited to contrition; and hopefull of al good-
nesse, to pursue the vertuous determinations euerie
where. So that when his Doone shall finde no resting
place for his foot, in reason of this Worldes tumultu-
ous waues; hee may returne to the Arke of blessed-
nesse, the happy home, that he, you, and all else that
feare God, should daily long for.

Tours euer,

A. MvNPT.



TO THE ANCIENT,
WOORTHY, AND RIGHT
Worshipfull Company of the Gold-Smiths;
the Maister, Wardens, Assistsants, Livery:
and likewise to euerie louing Bro-
ther, and member
thereof.

Let me not be thought (Right Worship-
full Society) more bolde then becomes
me, that in search of Antiquitie, and
Successe of Times, guided by good ob-
seruation, and probable Authorities,
I thus present you (in vnfaigned affection) what I
haue gathered, concerning your worthy Brother-hood.
If I had time heere to set downe (without preiudice to
any other Misterie whatsoever) that which Holye
Writ recordeth of you, and of men (then) most ex-
pert in your profession; this poore Epistle would en-
crease it selfe to a very large discourse, and exceede
the limit wherto I haue tied my self in the whol labor.
I passe ouer the captiuitie of Gods chosen people in Ba-
bylon, and the Offices of those three especiall chosen
B men,

The Epistle

men, Zerubbabell, Ezra, and Nehemiah: the first, being their Captaine to guide them home, and provided that the Temple was builded: the second, reforming manners, and making a plantation of Religion: the third and last, to builde up the wals, and make a new Citty of Ierusalem againe: Yet let me tell you, that among the multitude of Officers and Offices, appointed to this businesse, for building the walles, the Merchants and Goldsmithes do beare a remarkeable note, the very words in Scripture being these: Betweene the Chamber of the Cerner vnto the Sheepe-gate, fortified the Goldsmiths and the Merchants. Beside, that which is spoken of Malchish the Goldsmithes sonne, fortifying to the house of the Nethinims; And then, of Bezaleell the Sonne of Uri, filled with the Spirit of God, in wisdom and vnderstanding, to worke in Gold, Silver, & Brasse; who had Aholiab toynd with him, to make all curious workes (appointed by God himselfe) for the Tabernacle of the Congregation, the Arke of the Couenant, and the Mercy-seat, &c. If these be not Testimonies of extraordinary honour and respect, in the very names of Merchants and Goldsmiths (but much more, in the matter of so high an employment) confirmed by an assurance so vnreprovable, and equalling what can be saide (in like case) of venerable Antiquitie; I referre my selfe to be censured by the very severest iudgement.

Secondly,

to the Goldsmiths.

Secondly, concerning the first workers in Gold, Silver, and other Mettalles, in any place of eminence or note in Europe (vnder controul neuerthelesse, of such as haue read and obserued more then I haue done) I finde their Originall to be among the cuer-curious & ingenious Venetians, euen at the first plantation of Venice, which iustly may be tearmed *Miracolo del Mondo*. The foundation of Venice, holds paritie and proportion of Antiquity, with the prime estate of the Franks or French, as you may obserue where it is more at large expressed. Looking backe then to the first Note of Diuine obseruation, and remembering (after the worlds deuision among the sons of Noah) that Iaphets son Tubal had all Europe for his partition, with this last Colleſtion concerning Venice; and then, as all Arts and Sciences haue a place of Original, as Riuer from the Sea, and extend themselves afterward to the remotest places of the worlde: So may it likewise be gathered, that those respectiue times, admiring and honouring Art and Inuention, gaue such way to their present, and succeeding fame & passage, that all Landes became Partners of their predecessors prerogatiues.

Lastly, to speake but of our owne Kingdome, and therein (for breuities sake) but of this Noble Citty it selfe, I finde, that when it had cast off the yoke of strange confusion, endured vnder the sufferance of so manie conquerings: After (I say) it came to haue command

The Epistle, &c.

within it selfe, vnder the awe and gracious fauour of
worthie Kinges and Potentates, who made choyse of
Magistrates, to be their Deputies, and to present their
God-like persons for general obedience: the very first
man that attained to the place of eminence, and was
styled Maire of this renowned City, was called Hen-
ry Fitz-Alwine, Fitz-Liefitane, Goldsmith, and
held that supream Office more then 22. yeares toge-
ther. A memorable Note, in regard of Priority, and
as since then, carefully remembred, so iustly challen-
ging continuance to vtmost posterity.

But because this slender volume speakes more,
(though briefly) of you, then heere can wel be affoor-
ded, and commeth to you from a free hart, in kindnes,
requiring but as free and courteous acceptance: this
is al the charge by me imposed on it. To tel the whole
Golden band of your worthy Brother-hood, that I haue
done nothing heerein, either for flatterie or vaine glo-
rie, or in expectation of mercinarie recompence; but
according to truth, sincerity, and honesty which is the
best defence for any that speakes of Antiquitie.

Yours to be commanded,

A. Mundy.



A Table of the seuerall
Arguments, handled in
this Booke.

The Originall and Succession of our fore- fathers, from Adam to the generall De- luge.	Fol: 1.
From the Flood, to the Princes and Iudges of Israel.	5
From the Princes & Iudges, to the <i>Iewish</i> kings.	12
From the <i>Iewish</i> Kings, to the Kings of Iuda.	14
From the Kinges of Iuda and Ierusalem, to the Monarchy, &c.	19
The Monarchy of the <i>Chaldeans</i> , <i>Assyrians</i> , &c.	19
The Monarchy of the <i>Persians</i> .	20
The Monarchy of the <i>Grecians</i> .	23
The Kings of <i>Macedon</i> .	24
The Kings of <i>Syria</i> .	26
The Kings of <i>Egypt</i> .	29
The Monarchy of the <i>Casars</i> or <i>Romaines</i> .	32
The Emperors of the west from <i>Charlemaign</i> .	54
The Emperors of the East.	61
B 3	The

The Table.

The <i>Ottomans</i> or Turkish Emperors.	89
Originall of the <i>Sarazins</i> .	102
Byshops & Popes of Rome, from the originall, and Ages of the Church.	108
Originall of the Knights of <i>S. Johns of Ierusalem</i> , and all other Orders of Knight-hood.	157
Of the Emperor of <i>Ethiopia, Prete Ian</i> .	214
Of the Kingdome of <i>Persia</i> .	220
Of the Kingdome of <i>Thunis</i> .	227
Of the great Prouince of <i>Moscouia</i> .	229
Of the Kingdome of <i>Poland</i> .	233
Of sundry other Kingdomes Conquered by the Romaines.	235
Of the Kingdome of <i>Portugall</i> .	241
Of the Kingdome of <i>Italy</i> .	255
The Originall of the <i>Venetians</i> .	258
Of the Dukes of <i>Venice</i> .	269
Of the Kingdome of Spaine.	300
Of <i>Germany</i> , and the Princes Electors.	304
The Originall of the French Nation.	305
Of <i>Pharamond</i> , the first king of France, and con- sequently of all the other kings of France.	316
Of the Earls of Holland and Zeland.	382
Of the Kingdome of Ireland.	427
Of the Gouvernors, Lieutenants, and Deputies of Ireland.	435
Of the Kingdome of Scotland.	442
Of Albion, before <i>Brutes</i> arriual, & what Kings raigned	

The Table.

raigned there.	466
The Light of Britaine, and of all the Kinges suc- ceeding after <i>Brute</i> .	471
A Catalogue of the Princes of Wales.	522
Of Englands Bishoppricks, & their circuits.	526
Foundation of the Colledges in Cambridge & Oxenford.	532
Of the Shires in England and Wales.	535
Originall Antiquity, and modern estate of Lon- don.	537
Temporall Government of London, since the Conquest.	573



A SHORT SUM- mary or briefe Chro- nicle of TIMES.

¶ Containing the originall and successi-
on of our auncient Fore-fathers, from
the first CREATION of the World:
As also of the *Monarches, Emperours,*
Kings, Popes, and *Famous men,* with all
the most memorable matters hapning
since the Worlde's beginning, to this
instant time.



OUR Eternall GOD, al god, ^{Yeares of}
Almighty, and most mercifull, ^{the world}
in the beginning, created and
made the World of nothing:
that is to say; Heauen, Earth,
and Waters, as first and prin-
cipall matter, together with the Angels. He dis-
posed and gaue forme in sixe daies, (for he rested
the seauenth, and blessed it) to all thinges inclo- ^{Genel. 1.}
sed within the circle of Heauen. All which hee
did by his word, namely Iesus Christ, and the
blessed

blessed Spirit: these three persons being one Diuine essence (for the workes of the sacred Trinity are inseparable) whom I most humbly beseech to fauour and assist me, in beginning and ending this short Summary.

After that this soueraigne Architect had created (of nothing) in one instant, this first masse of matter, and disposed in six daies this whole round frame: at length, & vpon the first day he created Man of the slime of the earth (in the Damascene territory situate in Syria, or in Hebró, according to the Hebrewes Tradition, into which place he withdrew himselfe after he had sinned) and made him after his owne likenesse, as concerning his soule, which also he created of nothing: he named him Adam, that is to say, Red man, or Red-Earth, according to the Hebrew language. Afterward, he took a rib from Adam, as he lay asleepe in Paradise, and thereof formed Heuah, which signifieth, as Moses writeth (followed by Iosephus) *Sorrow*, and Mother of the Liuing; and according to *Zorarius*, Woman. Thus began the institution of Marriage, and household life together.

Adam and Heuah our first Parents, by persuasion of the Serpent (that is to say, the Deuill) transgressed the Commandment which God had giuen them, for effect of their faith and obedience. In regard whereof, they were cast out of terrestriall Paradise, that is to say, a Garden abounding in pleasures, where God had placed them together: and (with their posterity) were

The Creation of man

Gen. 1.

Marriage & household life.

Genes. 2, 3.

The fall of Man.

were subiected to sinne, death, and the Deuill. But our good God, being made all of mercy, perceiving the offence of Man, did promise him, that the seede of the Woman, which is Iesus Christ, should breake the head of the Serpent, that is to say, his kingdome and power, deliuering vs from the captiuitie of sinne, death, & the Deuill. In this promise we may note the source of spring-head of the Gospell; which after ward was oftentimes repeated, and diuersly signified by sundry figures, for comfort of our holy fathers, euen to the coming of Iesus Christ.

When Adam was throwne forth of Paradise, he began to labour in the earth with great pain. Afterward, he knew Heuah his wife, who brought him a sonne called Caine, who was an husbandman, and the first murderer of his brother Abell, the iust Shepheard. In whom began the first persecution of the Saintes by the wicked, for the true and sincere seruice of God.

In this man also began the Kingdom or city of God, and in the other, the city of the World and of the Diuell, as shalbe better manifested in Nimrod. This murder being thus committed, Caine was abhominable in the sight of God, he withdrew himselfe from his father, and builded a City after the name of his first son Enoch.

Adam had daughters also, and at the age of 230. yeares, he begat Seth.

Seth, at the age of 105. yeares, begat Enos.

Enos aged 99. yeares, begat Cainam.

Cainam, aged 70. yeares, begat Malaleel.

C.2.

Maha-

The reparation of man in the promise of Iesus Christ.

Gen. 2, 3.

Original of the Gospell.

15.

30.

Genes. 2, 3.

The City of God, and of the world.

Genes. 4.

138.

215.

315.

395.

460.

Malaleel aged 605. yeares, begat Jared.

622.

Jared aged 160. yeares, begat Enoch.

67.

Enoch, who at the age of 65. yeares, begate Methusalem, walked with God, declaring his iudgements, to ensue vpon men degenerating from humane and reasonable nature, into brutish and hybried voluptuousnesse. For the Sonnes of God (that is to say, the Sayntes, by the generation of Seth) beholding the Daughters of men (that is to say, the wicked by the generation of Caine) to be fayre: toke them to wife, without any regarde, and celebrated marriages with the people of abomination, of whome Gyants were borne, men of might, and great Renowne.

Genes. 5, 6.

Gyants.

874.

Methusalem at the age of 187. yeares, begate Lamech. Adam dyed aged 930. yeares: Just Enoch was carried alyue vp into heauen.

930.

1056.

Lamech, at the age of 182. yeares, begat Noah the deliuerer of Justice: whom the Poets (not vnderstanding the creation of the worlde) called Heauens Chaos, Seede of the world, & Father of the Gods.

Noah, being 500. yeares of age, with his wife Thitea, that is to say Earth; or, according to the Poets, Aretia, Cybele, Vesta, and Mother of the Gods, begat Sem, Cham, and Iaphet: with whom by the commandement of God, in the hundred yeare after, he entered into the Arke which had bene built by him, and was preserued from the flood.

The

The Generall Deluge.

By which inondation of waters, God brought an horrible vengeance, to punnish the wicked liues of men.

Sem, who was Melchizedech, two yeares after the flood, begat Arphaxad, being then aged 100. yeares.

1659.
Gen. 10, 11
1695.

Arphaxad aged 35. yeares, begat Salê.

1725.
Gen. 11.

Salê, at the age of thirty yeares, begat Heber, and builded the Citty of Salem (though some say it was Sem) that should be called Ierusalem, the Citty of God, seated in the midst of Iudea.

Heber, of whom the Hebrewes were after named, being aged 34. yeares, begate Phaleg: at which time the earth was diuided betwixt the sonnes of Noah. Sem and his off-spring enioied the East part of Syria, to wit, Asia. Cham Zoroastres had Iudea, Egypt, Arabia, and all Affrica. Iaphet, who by the Poets is called Iapetus, had (with his people) all Europe.

1759.
The diuision or partage of the world.
Gen. 10, 11
Berofus in 1.
de Antiquis.
1789.

Phaleg, at the age of thirty yeares, begat Reu, at which time, Nimrod the Babylonian Saturn, & hindmost nephew of Cham, began his raigne; builded the Tower of Babell, where beganne the confusion of tongues into seauenty two, the common language of the Hebrew remaining entyre. Samoths or Dis, King of the Gaules, (of whom the Gaules or Celts, tearme themselves to be descended, as Cæsar declareth in his first Booke) began also his raigne in short time after: as Come-

The kingdom of the Celts.
The kingdom of Italy
The kingdom of the Gauls.
Berof 4. et 5.
The Kingdom of Spaine, &c.

6 A briefe Chronicle,

rus Gallus likewise did his in Italy, and Tuball the Sonne of Iaphet his rule in Caliberia, now called Spaine. Oceanus swayed in Egypt; as Tuscon or Ascenas did in Allemain or Germany

Reu at the age of 32. yeares, begat Saruch.

Saruch, aged thirtie yeares, begat Nahor, or Nachor, tearmed Fayre Iupiter the second, King of the Assyrians.

Nachor, at the age of 29. yeares, begat Thares or Terah, who is saide to be Ninus the third King of the Assyrians. Hee erected Temples, Altars, and Statues to his dead father, which were a great occasion, & the verie source of Idolatrie. Olyris and Ihs first found out the means of Corn at this time in Egypt, and now did Aegialeus become first King of the Syconians, or Peloponnesus, now named Moeca.

Thares, a maker and seller of Idolles, being 70 yeares of age, begat Abraham, Nahor, and Aran the father of Lot. Semiramis the wife of Ninus, (in habit of a man) raigned ouer the Assyrians, in the name of her Sonne.

Noah, died aged 905. yeare clo, 350. years after the flood. Saturne, Pluto, Cybele, Mother of the Gentiles Gods, Sol, Iupiter, Pallas or Minerva, Venus, Cupid, Vulcane, Mercury, and all the crew of these fained Gods then began.

Abraham, boing aged 75. yeares, by the Commaundement of God, departed from his owne Country and kindred, for God had promised vnto him the land of Canaan, and blessing vpon all people, by his wisdom which is Iesus Christ: he

1821.

1810.

1872.

Coyne first found out in Egypt. The kingdom of the Syconians.

1950.

Beros lib. 5. Diodor. lib. 3

2007.

Genel. 9.

2075.

Genel. 12. Gen. 21, 20, 25.

Of the Successe of Times.

7

he begate Isaac. Saron King of Gaule ordained publicke Schooles. Drui his successor, being a verie wise Prince, (of whom the Druides are saide to be deriued) appointed Priests & Philosophers among the Gaules. So do affirme Berosus in his first Booke, Caesar in his first Booke, and Cornelius Tacitus in the Manners of the Allemaynes or Germanes.

Isaac, aged 60. yeares, begat on his Wife Rebecca Esau and Jacob, twinnes. Abraham, Sem and Heber dyed. Inachus was the auncient and first King of the Argiues. At this time Bardus King of the Gaules, became the inuenter of Merces and of Musicke, and Hercules ruled in Lybia.

Jacob, called Israel, at the age of 84. years, married Lea and Rachel, and of them, together with their two Hand-maids, had twelue sonnes: Ruben, Simeon, Leui, father of the Leuites, and Priestly lineage: Iuda (of whom the Iewes doo hold their name) and the Royall lineage of Iesus Christ descended: Issachar, Zabulon, Gad, Aser, Dan, Nephtalin, Ioseph, and Benjamin, all Patriarkes, with Dina, one only daughter, who was the wife of Iob, according as Philo the Iew recoreth.

Of these twelue Patriarkes, the 12. Tribes or Linages descended. Afterward, Iacob being aged 130. yeares, went downe into Egypt with all his family, to his Sonne Ioseph the Deputie to Pharaoh, who had bin sold by his Bretheren. In that place he gaue vnto the ghost, being aged then 147. yeares: hauing prophesied, that Iesus

Berosus lib. 5. Caesar. lib. 6. Cor. Facit in mor. Germ. 2109.

Gen. 25. The kingdom of the Argiues Beros. lib. 5. Diodor. lib. 6

2193.

Gen. 29, 30

2229

Gen. 37, 41

4

Christ

8 A briefe Chronicle,

Genes. 49. Christ should come, before that the Scepter were taken from Iuda, or a Duke of his generation. Galathes the Sonne of Hercules, was King of Gaule, whereof it tooke the name, Prometheus and Atlas at this time were very excellent Astrologians.

2311. Ioseph dyed 54. yeares after his father. The Genes. 50. Israelites now began to be euill intreated by the Egyptians. Moles the last Pephew of Leui, was borne 64. yeares after the death of Ioseph. Cecrops then builded the Citty of Athens, and was first King thereof: Also, he was the first Authour of the most abominable idolatries, that euer were among the Grecians, The Deluge of Deucalion.

Exodus. Princes and Iudges of Israel.

2454. Moses, aged 80. yeares, by the commandement of God reproued Pharaoh; wrought many myracles in Egypt, with-drewe the people of Israel our of Egypt by the Red-Sea, being in number more then six hundred thousand.

Exod. 12. Galath. 3. This their departure thence, happened in the yeare 430. of the promise made to Abraham, for the blessing of all Nations by his seed. Moyses gaue the Law to the people (in the Deserts of Arabia) as a School-maister, until the comming of the promised seed. For this cause he ordained for sins of the people, diuers Ceremonies of sacrifices marriages, punishments, & solemnities of feasts. For the action of War, he numbred more then six hundred and thre thousand, without comprehension

Of the Successe of Times.

9 sion of the Leuites, to whom he prescribed they charge. In the end, he instructed the rude people in diuers commandements. For Gods ordinances he constituted Ioluah his successour, and rendred vp his spirit in the 120. yeare of his life: and of the departing out of Egypt, the 40. read Exodus, Leuiticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy, all which are here thus briefly collected. Dardanius hauing slaine his Brother Ialon, was the first King of Troy: Iamiges was then King in Italy: the most cruell Tyrant Buhris King in Egypt: and Mercurius Trilmegistus, that is to say: thre times the most great King, Priest and Philosopher: See M. Ficinus in his life.

Ioluah passed the people by rote thorough the Riuer of Iordan, into the Land of Promise. The Sunne stayed while he fought the battel: he slew one and thirty Kings. And after he had distributed their Countries amongst the people: he died thirty yeares after the death of Moyses. The Israelites then left God, and serued Idols. Orcus, King of the Molosses made then a rape of Proserpina: And Cadmus brought the Charracters of Letters into Greece.

Othoniell, of the Lignage of Iuda, gouerned the people eight yeares, and was the third Iudge of Israel in order, and not the first, as some haue supposed. He deliuered the people from the oppression of the King of Mesopotamia.

Aiod or Ehud, slew the king of the Moabites, 2534. Iudges 3. reigned eight yeares, and deliuered the people from the idolatry of the Moabites. In this time began

The kingdome of Troy.

466.

Ioluah.

2526.

Iudges 3.

2534. Iudges 3.

began, but much rather encreased the Gods and Idolatries of the Gentiles (according to Iosephus) as Bacchus, Pandion, Radamanthus, Aëacus, Minos King of Crete. Dedalus and Icarus, at this time made their flight. Tantalus Amphion, founder and first King of Thebes, Linus.

2614.

Barach with Debora the Prophetesse, iudged 40. yeares, ouercame with ten thousand men only, the Army of Sisara, consisting of two hundred thousand men. The Argonautes sayled then to Colchos; then liued Areus and Thietes, Pan also, and Midas King of Phrygia, abounded in Treasures.

2654.

The king-
dome of
the Miceas

Gedcon a valiaunt Captaine, iudged fortie yeares, and deliuered the Israelites from the seruitude of the Madianites. In this time liued Circes, Medea, Enchanteresses, with Medusa and Andromeda. Euristheus first king of Mycena, & was slaine by Eacides, hauing commaunded (well nere) thorough all Greece, for the space of forty five yeares together.

2694.

Abimelech, the naturall Son of Gedcon, was Judge thre yeares, he slew 69. of his naturall & legitimate Brethren, only that he might raigne. Sparta of Lacedemon was the builded by Spartus the Sonne of Phoroneus: Others doo attribute the building thereof to Arithenes, who was their first king.

2671.
Ruth.

Thola was Judge 25. yeares: then liued Ruth Mother to the Grand-mother of Dauid: then also were Castor, Pollux, Apollo the inuenter of Musick, Esculapius his Sonne, Orpheus and

Museus

Museus, who were the first Poets, according to Linus.

Tair iudged 22. yeares, during which time, the people liued in maruailous quiet, as they did before, in the raigne of Thola. But afterward there happened interregnum eighteen yeares together: in all which time the Israelites were seruite to the Philistims, for their idolatries. Pyrrhus then inuented the Tennis Play: Theseus vanquished the Minotaure, and Hercules came from Spayne into Italy: 55. yeares before Aeneas.

Iephtha the Bastard was Judge six yeares, and being thereto compelled by his dolw, hee slew his onely Daughter. Theseus now made his rape of Helena, shee being then a very young Mayden. Sybilla Ariethrea, liued in this time, shee that foretold the ruine of Troy, and of whom Homer telleth many goodly tales.

Abeslan or Ibsan iudged seven yeares: The History of Ruth happened in this time. Pluto, Neptune, then were, and Paris stole Helena, the wife to Menelaus king of the Lacedemonians.

Elon was Judge ten years, in whose time happened the Warre betwene the Greekes and the Troyans, for the rape of Helena Wife to Menelaus, by Paris Sonne to Priam; the last King of Troy.

Abdon iudged eight yeares, Aeneas with his companions came into Italy, and Francus (if we may beleue Manethous and others) the Sonne of Hector, with his followers also came into Aulia. Of the one descended the Latines, & kings of

of the Romaines: and of the other the Kinges of France. In these dayes liued Pilades and Orcites the two loyall friends.

2791. Sampson the strong, was Judge 20. yeares, he slew a thousand Philistims with the iawbone of an Asse, and was deceiued by a Strumpet. The
Judges 20. Linage of Tribe of Benjamin was now almost utterly destroyed, onely thoro' detestable voluptuousnesse.

2811. Hely Priest and Judge, raigned fortie yeares, and was punished of God, for his ouer great indulgence towards his children. The Ark of Moses was then taken by the Philistims. Beate the Sonne of Syluius third King of the Latines, expelled then the cruell Gyants out of the Island, which (after his owne name) he called Brittain, now England, and deuided his Land to his three Sonnes, in three seuerall kingdoms, to wit, Locgria to Locrine: Cambria, now called Wales, to Camber; and Albania, now called Scotland, to his third Sonne Albanact.

2851. Samuel the Prophet, and innocent Judge to those wicked children. He annointed Saul to the Israelites, they desiring a King: And then began the Kingdome of the Lacedemonians, instituted by Eurilthenes, and of the Corinthians founded by Arletes.

Kings of all the Iewish people.

2851. S Aule, first King of the Israelites, with Samuel raigned fortie yeares. Hee pardoned Agis King

King of Amalec his Prisoner, and reserueth the spoile to Sacrifice to God, contrary to his Commandement. He toke counsell of Pythoniss, the Enchantresse: for which he was reprobued of God, and was slaine in the battell.

2891. David, both King and Prophet, in his youth he was a Shepherd, and feared God: but afterward forgetting himselfe, he committed both adultery & murder. He raigned forty yeares, and being wearied with many molestations, he wrote his Booke of Psalmes to the glory of God. To him was renewed the ancient promise of Iesus Christ, and of his eternall kingdom: who (as concerning his manhood, and according to the flesh) descended of him.

2931. Salomon raigned forty yeares. Of such provision as David (with mighty expences) had prepared: in the fourth yeare of his raigne hee builded a Temple to God, which in seauen yeares after was finished, it being 80. yeares, after y^e coming forth of Egypt. He composed the Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, and the Canticles. At length, spending his time in the delight of women & strange Concubines: he, who was a holy man, elected of God as both Sonne and King: fell into idolatry. In regard whereof, his kingdom (after his death) was deuided to the kingdom of Iuda, which was for Rehoboam the Sonne of Salomon; & to the kingdom of Israel, for Ieroboam the Sonne of Nabat.

Kings

Kings of Iuda, or of Ierusalem.

2971.

Rehoboam the Sonne of Salomon, King of Iuda, despised his Elders, and adhered to the counsell of young heads. He reigned wickedly 17 yeares. Ieroboam the first King of Israel, indu-
ced the people to idolatry. In this time flourished the Poet Homer.

2988.

Abiam the Sonne of Rehoboam, reigned thre yeares. He trusting in God, ouercame Ieroboam king of Israel, who was accompanied with eight hundred thousand chosen, strong & valiant men, yet lost fve hundred thousand of them, by the others Army, which consisted but of foure hundred thousand.

2991

Asa, a very good King, reigned one and fortie yeares: he toke away the Idols, and deposed his Mother from the Title of Lady, because shee had erected them. He, trusting in his Physicians, and not requiring helpe of God, being diseased in his fete, dyed.

3032.

Ieholaphat reigned fve and twenty yeares, he was a most debonaire Prince, appointing euery where Law-makers and Magistrates, admonishing them daily to do their dutie. In his time the great Prophet Elias was waapt vp into heauen. Ahab a most wicked King of Israel, toke to wife Iezabel as wicked a woman: they were both reproued by the Prophet Elias: The Priestres of Baal were destroyed.

3555.

Iehorim, the wicked Sonne of a vertuous father,

1111.
Kings.
4. Kings 2.

that reigned eight yeares, beeing the husband to Athalia the Sister of Achab. Now was the prophet Elizeus. In these dayes Licurgus the Law-maker, did cut off the excesse of fode & garments: Hesiodus.

Orthozias, importuned by his Mother Athalia, the Daughter of Amry, reigned wickedly one yeare. He was ouerthrowne by Iehu, king of Israel, the last of Salomons line. Iehu also vanquished Iezabel, & the wife and brethren of Achab, with all the Priestres of Baal, in whose Temple they made their Thefts and Robberies.

Athalia slew all the Royall seede or race, except Ioas, who was nourished and kept by Iehoida. Afterward Athalia was slaine in the seuenth year of her raigne.

Ioas reigned iustly fortie yeares, during the time of Iehoida the Priest: who being dead, hee slew Zacharias his sonne in the Temple. Sardanapalis king of the Assyrians beeing then vanquished, threw himselfe into a fire. Afterward his Monarchie was diuided among his Officers, into the kingdomes of Assyria and Medea. Pigmalion be-
ing king of Tyre, Dido his Sister builded Carthage, which she reduced into a kingdome: shee being a woman verie magnanimous, and chaste, as Iustine affirmeth, in his eighteenth Booke, whatsoeuer Virgill and Ouid say to the contrary.

Amasius reigned fve and twentie yeares: hee was admonished by the Prophet, not to put his trust in humaine strength: yet for idolatry he was taken and slaine by his enemies. Some do report, that

3060.

3061.

3067.

The king-
dome of
Carthage.

3107.

that at this time was the ending of the effeminate Sardanapalus, and so consequentlie of the first Assyrian Monarchy, which continued after Nimrod, 1358. yeares.

3126.

Ostias reigned iustly two and fiftie yeares. He undertook the sacrificing Priests office, for which he was smitten with Leprosie, in the 18. yeare of his raigne. In this time, Abdias, Amos, and Ioel the Prophets lived. Belus, by some termed Belocus, first King of the Babylonians, was translated to the new Kingdome of the Assyrians, and now was the beginning of the Olympiad in Greece. When also beganne the kingdome of the Medes, by Arsacus Lieutenant to the womanish Sardanapalus: And that of the Macedonians by Gramaus.

The king-
domes of
the Medes
and Mace-
donians.

3188.

Ioathan a good King, reigned sixteene yeares, in which time were Micheas, Nahum, and Ionas the Prophets. Romulus and Remus, in the first yeare of the seauenth Olympiade, builded the Citie of Rome in Italy: For the beginning whereof, it is necessarie to read Dionisius Halicarnassus in his first Booke: Solynus Cap. 2, and Pausanias, rather then Catoes Originals, and Fabius Pictors fragments, suspected rather of Noueltie, then antiquity: according to Beat. Reuanus. Some do referre it to the following raigne: about this time began the kingdome of the Lydians, by Ardis,

The king-
dom of the
Lydians.

3204

Achaz the idolater, reigned sixteene yeares. Esay then prophesied (as appeareth in his seauenth Chapter) of Jesus Christ, to bee borne of a Vir-
gin.

gin. And Micheas, that hee should be borne in Bethlehem: About this time began the kingdom of the Romaines, by Romulus.

The king-
dom of the
Romans.
3216.

Ezechias a good King, reigned 29. yeares: hee brake the Serpent of Moses, whereunto the people had so many yeares offered Sacrifice. Salmanazar King of the Assyrians (for Idolatry) ruined the whole kingdom of Israel vnto Samaria, which had continued 244. yeares. The Angell of God did then ouerthrow an hundred & four-score men of warre, in the Army of Sennacherib, for their most execrable blasphemies. Tobias was captiue then in Niniuy. Numa Pompilius, king of Rome, added two months to the yeare, January and February, there being no more before, but ten, in regard of them.

Manasses, being a wicked and cruel king, reigned 55. yeares: he caused the Prophet Esay to be sawed in sunder thorow the middell. And being captiue by his enemies, he acknowledged God; and being reduced to his kingdom, he dempished the Idols. Tullus Hostilius, third King of Rome destroyed the kingdom of Alba, where came the family of the Iulij to Rome. Candaulus & Gyges were then Kings of Lydia.

3247.

Amon, a more wicked King then his Father Manasses, reigned two yeares, and was slaine by his owne seruants. Zaleucus was then Lawgiuer to the Locrians.

3302.
4. Kings 13

Iosias a very good King, reigned 31. yeares: he cut downe the halloied Woods and the Idols. In this time the Bookes of Moyles, which for
D many

3304.

many yeares together had bin lost, were found againe, and now liued Sophonie, Abacuck, and Jeremy the Prophets: as also Archilocus, Sionides, and Phocylides Poets. Ancus Martius, was the fourth king of Rome, Epimenides.

3335.

Ioacham, a very euill king, the third moneth of his raigne, was led captiue into Egypt, and his Brother constituted king in his place, by the king of Egypt.

3336.

Iocim raigned eleauen yeares. For his abominations, he was chained and led captiue to Babylon, by Nabuchadonoser the great king of the Assyrians. Tarquinius Priscus, was fift king of the Romaines. In Greece then liued Sapho, Stesichorus, Pherecydes, Draco, Solon, and others of the Sages.

3346.

Ioachim, otherwise called Ieconias, being 18. yeares old, and besieged by the Assyrians, yielded himselfe with his Mother, his Princes, and the greater part of his people, to Nabuchadonoser and was transported into Babylon, where (in prison) he begat Salarhiel, father to Zorobabell: then liued Ezechiell, Baruch, and Daniell.

3349.

Sedechias his Uncle, was constituted king in the place of Ieconias, by Nabuchadonoser, by whom, after the eleuenth yeare of his raigne, he was taken as a Kibell: his eyes were pluckt out, and then he was led with the rest of the people to Babylon. In this time, the Temple and City of Ierusalem was miserably burned by the Assyrians

When happened that lamentable captiuitie of Babylon, foretold by the Prophets, and continued

ed seauentie yeares: all which was occasioned by the contempt of Gods word, false Doctrine, and auarice in the Priests and Prophets: conioyned with the tyranny of their kings, and sinnes of the people, but especially idolatry: as appeareth in Jeremy, Cap. 19, 22, 23, 29, 32. Baruch 6. Ezechiell 13, 22. And then was this great Nabuchadonoser (for his arrogancie) thrust out of his kingdome, and fed with the Beasts. Seruius Tullius was first king of the Romaines; Croesus in Lydia, Balthazar in Babylon, and, for abusing the Vessels of the Temple, hee was slaine. The kingdome then deuolued to Darius the Medean, Uncle of Cyrus, king of Persia and Medea.

The Monarchy of the Caldeans, Assyrians, or Babylonians.

Nabuchadonoser, the great king of Babylon, in the 24. yeare of his raign, and of the world 3362. was he that established the great and first Monarchy, described with that of the Persians, Grecians, and Romaines by Daniell, compared to the head of gold, and to the Eagle flying. It endured but seauenty eight yeares, in thre kinges, and he that raigned longest, it was but 43 yeares.

Euilmerodach, whom Herodotus calleth Labynitus, raigned thirty yeares. Thales, Clito, Pittacus, Bias, Cleobulus and Periander, wise

men of Greece, are all referred to this time. And it is an error to separate them otherwise, as some haue done, Solon being the most ancient.

3412. Balchazar, the contemner of God, and renew-
er of the olde Caldean idolatry (abelished beioze)
abusing (in his feasts) those vessels, which had
bin taken from the temple of Ierusalem, and ma-
king a mockery at the true God of the Iewes; was
put to death by the Medes and Persians, who pos-
sessed themselves of the Monarchie, in the tenth
yeare of his raigue. There is great difficulty a-
bout this Monarchie, which cannot here bee de-
clared.

Blasphemie
the ruine of
the monar-
chy.

The Monarchy of the Persians.

3406. Cyrus sent home the Iewes into their country,
with Zerobabell their conductor, to repayre
the Temple. He made warre against the Scythi-
ans for the space of sixtene yeares: in which time
raigned his Son Cambyles. Daniell then fore-
told the passion of Iesus Christ, and the desolate
ruine of Ierusalem vnder Vespasian, after seauen-
ty weekes were passed ouer, which were 490.
yeares after the repayration of the Citty: Tar-
quine the proude, for the violation of Lucretia,
was then chased out of Rome. Consulles were
created the year 244. after the building of Rome.
Cyrus raigned 29. yeares. Read more of Cyrus &
his sonne, Herodorus lib. 1, 3. Xenophon 8.

Dan. 9.
Matth 24
Luke 21

Cambyles

3435. Cambyles raigned alone eight yeeres, being a
cruell man, he slew his Brother and Sister. and
caused a Judges skin to be slayed off, because hee
had iudged falsely. Pythagoras the great Philo-
sopher sailed into Egypt, to learne Divinity. And
to Babylon for Astrologie, and the course of the
starres. Many doo relate the History and over-
throw of Holoernes to this time: but according
to Genebrard, it is reputed to the time of Na-
buchadonosor.

Darius, the sonne of Hidaspes, otherwise cal-
led Ahasuerus, the husband of Hester, raigned 36
yeeres. He entred into Greece with sixe hundred
thousand fighting men, & afterward vanquished
Miltiades, being accompanied onely with eleuen
thousand men. Coriolanus the Romaine was
now put into exile, and Esop composed his booke
of fables. Now liued also Anacharsis, Anaxime-
nes, and Heraclitus Philosophers. Anaximan-
der invented the Horologe and Spheare, & strong
Milo was in this time. Read more of Darius in
Herodorus and Iustine, Lib. 1.

Xerxes raigned twenty yeares. Hee assailed
the Grecians with a far greater Army, then that
his father had, which was repulsed by Themis-
tocles. In meane while, his Sonne Artaxerxes
held the Kingdome, by whose commaundement,
he was restored the Common-weale of the Iewes;
and Nehemias (by strong hande) repayed the
walles of the Citty. Now liued Cimon, Ariste-
des and Pindarus the Poet, as also Pericles, that
wise and valiant Athenian Capaine: of whom,
read

3445.

3470.

read more in his life, set downe by Plutarch.

3506.

Artaxerxes, or Darius Long-hand, helde the kingdom aboue twentie yeares. So he did the ten men write the lawe of the twelue tables at Rome; and now liued Empedocles, Sophocles, Gorgias, Anacreon, Democritus, Euclides, Hippocrates, and Herodotus. Greece became diuided into two factions, by reason of a great & contentious war. Read more thereof in Thucidides & Xenophon.

The Peloponnesian warre.

3544.

Darius the Bastard reigned 19 yeares: in whose time liued Socrates, Aristophanes, Thucidides, Alcibiades, Lysander, Conon, Epaminondas, Architas, Timon, Dionisius of Siracusa the Tyrant. And now was the kingdome of the Scythians, and Francus in Franconia (according to Trithemius) where reigned forty kings.

3565.

Artaxerxes Mnemon, reigned forty yeares, and exercised acts of Armes with his Brother Cyrus. Thrasibulus chased the Lacedemonian Tyrants out of Athens. Rome was taken by the Gauls, vnder the conduct of Brennus that bold warrior. Then liued Xenophon the Captaine, Philosopher and Orator, Plato, Phocion, Isocrates, Polybius, Praxiteles, Metasthenes, Camillus, and Crates.

Tit Liv dec.
4. Lib. 8.

3604.

Oechus (a most cruell Tyrant) reigned sixe and twenty yeares. Phillip King of Macedon, oppressed the liberty of all Greece. At Rome was then Curtius Torquatus, Decius Corinnus: the hundred and sixty Patron Sorceresses. Iadus was High Priest of the Iewes, and then liued Berosus the Historian.

Artes

Artes or Arfaces, reigned three yeares. His tyrannicall actions were the cause, that all the race of great Cyrus perished. Alexander the great, the Son of Phillip, then vanquished and demolished the City of Thebes: And then were Demosthenes, Diogenes, and Epicurus.

3625.

Darius the last King, was ingrateful and disloyall, hee was also overcome by Alexander, in the first yeare of his raigne. The Samnites then subdued the Romaines: and then was Ceius Papyrius Cursor. M. Curius Dentatus, triumphing in his humility of minde, refused the treasures of the Samnites, and he would neither be vanquished in warre, nor corrupted with money. Valer. Max. lib. 2. cap. 3.

3629.

The Monarchy of the Græcians.

Alexander the great, hauing one onely Army, of two and thirty thousand footmen, and foure thousand five hundred horsemen, marched thorow all Asia. In the seventh yeare of his Monarchy, he was poisoned in Babylon. Read his life, set downe in Plutarch, and Iustine lib. 11.

3630.

After his death, there grew dissension betwene the Captaines and Macedonian Lordes, who should be successour of this great Emperour. At length it was resolved on the person of Arideus, sur-named Phillip, the Brother of Alexander, & Perdiceas was created Captaine General. Sone after, the Provinces and Governments were distributed among Alexanders Captains, who immediately

D 4

mediately appropriated them to themselves, each one enjoying the title and quality of a king. Thus this great Monarchy was deuised into many parts and kingdomes: all which (neuerthelesse) were (in short tihile) reduced into three principall kingdomes, Macedon, Syria, and Egypt.

*Of Macedon, and the succession of Kings
there raigning*

3641.

Arideus Phillippus, the Brother of Alexander, who had bin elected successor, raigned in Macedon six yeares, gouerning wholly by Antipater, who managed all the affaires of the kingdom. This king was slain by Olympias the mother of Alexander.

3647.

Cassander the Sonne of Antipater, after the death of Arideus inuaded Macedon, hauing caused the Mother and wife of Alexander to be slain, Olympias and Roxana: hee raigned eightene yeares.

3665.

Antipater and Alexander, the sons of Cassander, raigned together foure yeares. Antipater slew his Mother. Alexander made warre vpon Antipater, calling Demetrius to his aide: who caused him to be slain.

3669.

Demetrius, after the death of Alexander, raigned seauen yeares. But hauing attempted to recover the Empire of his father Antigonus in Asia-minor, which Seleucus then held: he was banquished and taken by Seleucus, and dyed in prison.

Anti-

3686.

Antigonus, Gomathes, the Sonne of Demetrius, raigned afterwarde in Macedon, for the space of 36. yeares, hauing reuouered the kingdom, which (after his fathers death) had bene inuaded by many, that held it for the space of eight yeares. For Pyrrhus King of the Epirotes, held it first. Lyfmachus next tooke it from him, while he was seriously busied with the Romaines. Lyfmachus being dead, Ptolemy Ceraunus inuaded it: but in short tihile after, this Ptolemy was slain by the Gauls, who came into Macedon, and (by this means) Antigonus re-entred vpon the kingdom of his father.

3721.

Demetrius, who raigned eight yeares, left his Sonne, named Philip, very young in years, and one Antigonus was made his Tutor or Gouernor, who marrying with the Mother of his Pupill, by that meanes made himselfe king.

3732.

Antigonus Dolon raigned twelue yeares. Aratus chiefe of the Achaian line, hee called to his aide, against Cleomines King of the Lacedemonians, who was banquished by Antigonus, and tooke the Cittie of Sparta.

3742.

Phillip the son of Demetrius, raigned 44. yeares: and hauing made warre against the Romaines, he was banquished vnder the conduct of T. Quintus Flaminius, and all taken from him that he inioyed, except the sole kingdom of Macedon: wherein succeeded

3786.

Perseus who raigned eleuen yeares. He was banquished and taken prisoner by Paulus Aemilius, Consull and Captaine Generall of the Romaines,

maines, and led in triumph to Rome, the yeare of the Citties building, 587. And then was Macedon reduced into the foyme of a Province.

Of Syria, and the Succession of the Kings there raigning.

3643.

After the death of Alexander the Great, Seleucus was the first king of Syria. Perdiccas being dead, he regained the Cittie of Babylon, & part of the Indiaes. Some after, by the helpe of Ptolomy king of Egypt, hee made warre against Antigonus, who commaunded in the lesser Asia: and hauing ouercome him, laid claime to the kingdom, and was made King thereof, and in short time after, he ioyned al Asia-minor to Syria. Antigonus being slaine in battaile: And thus by him was established the great Empire of Syria. Hee vanquished also Lyfimachus, and took from him the kingdom of Macedon. But soon after, he was slaine by Ptolomeus Cerannus, hauing raigned 32. yeares in Syria.

3684.

Antiochus Soter (that is to say, Saviour or Preseruer) the Son of Seleucus, raigned 19. yeares, to whom succeded.

3703.

Antiochus, sur-named *Deos*, that is to say God, who raigned 15. yeares.

3718.

Seleucus Callinicus, the son of Antiochus, raigned twentie yeares. In his time, Arlaces the Parthean, reuolted from his obedience; & hauing vanquished manie of his neighboring Nations, hee founded the kingdom of the Partheans, which afterward became most potent. Seleu-

Seleucus, surnamed Cerannus, (that is to say, Lightning) raigned thre yeares: And after him came Antiochus the great, who raigned 36. yeares. He was conquered by the Romans (vnder the Scipioes conduct) in two foughten battailes: with whom (afterward) he made peace, on condition that he should leaue the lesser Asia, from y^e mountaine Taurus, to the Romans. After whom succeded his sonne.

Seleucus Philopater, that is to say, *A Louer of his Father*, who reigned twelue yeares.

Antiochus Epiphanes (that is to say, Famous) who also was sonne to great Antiochus, raigned twelue yeares. This is the King that took Ierusalem, and did so much harme to the Iewes, polluted and contaminated the Temple, and would constrain them to change their Religion. He put the seauen brethren most cruelly to death, & made a most famous Martyrdome of them. His Army was vanquished by Iudas Machabeus, and after him, his sonne.

Antiochus Eupator, raigned two yeares. In which time, Demetrius the Sonne of Seleucus Philopater (who had bene giuen in Hostage to the Romans, for the peace of Antiochus y^e great, his Graundfather) being fled from Rome, & come into Syria; caused a great number of the people to reuolt, that afterwarde deliuered him into the handes of the said King Antiochus, who caused him immediatly to be put to death.

Demetrius Soter, after the death of Antiochus, raigned 1. yeares. In this time, the Iewes were gouer-

gouverned by the Machabees.

3813.

Alexander, the naturall sonne of Antiochus Epiphanes, hauing gathered an Army, and being seized of some Citties in Syria, vanquished Demetrius in battaile, and slew him. This Alexander reigned five yeares.

3818.

Demetrius Nicanor, the sonne of Demetrius Soter, came into Syria with an Army, and being ayded by the King of Egypt, he invaded the kingdome. Alexander fled into Arabia, where he was slaine: and Demetrius reigned two yeares.

3820.

Antiochus Sedestes, the sonne of Alexander, (assisted by Triphon) persuled Demetrius, and invaded the kingdome, which he held 3. yeares.

3823.

Triphon slew Antiochus and possessed himself of Syria, where he reigned thre yeares: Demetrius being yet liuing, who was (in short while after) taken by the Partheans.

3826.

Antiochus, surnamed Soter and Pinus, Brother of Demetrius Nicanor vanquished Tryphon, who afterward was slaine: And hauing reigned twelue yeares, he died in a battel against the Partheans.

3838.

Demetrius Nicanor, who before had reigned two yeares, was let go by the Partheans, & reigned afterward foure yeares more: But being ouercome in battaile by Alexander Zabin, he was slaine.

3841.

Alexander Zabin, whome the King of Egypt had sent to the Syrians complaining of the cruelty of Demetrius, reigned thre yeares.

3844

Antiochus Grypus, the sonne of Demetrius, hauing

ning vanquished and slaine Alexander Zabin in battell, reigned 29. yeares. During which time, his Brother Antiochus the Cyziceniian, made warre vpon him, without intermission.

After the death of this Antiochus Grypus, mighty troubles were in Syria for some time, because they of the royall race were in continuall warres, killing and massacring one another. Untill such time as one Antiochus (the sole remainder of that race) dying without any successor: Tigranes K. of Armenia invaded this great kingdom: where vpon he was (not long after) surprized by the Romaines, vnder the conduct of Pompey, and the Countrey was then reduced into the forme of a Province: the yeare of the City of Rome, 693.

Of Egypt, and the Succession of the Kings there reigning.

PTolomeus Lagus, Soter the most excellent man of all Alexanders Captains, was made King, & reigned fortie yeares ouer Egypt: Theophrastus, Zeno, Theocritus, and Menander then liuing, and the Romaines made warre against Pyrrhus. Read more of this King in Iustine, lib. 13, 14, 15. Orosius lib. 3, cap. 23. Fergusius was the first King of Scotland.

Ptolome Philadelphus, reigned 38. yeares. He first appointed that great Library in Alexandria, and caused the Bookes of the Bible to be translated into the Greeke tongue, by the seauentie two Interpreters. Aristeus, Phalaris, Chrisippus, Carneades,

3641.

The kingdome of Scotland.

3682.

Carneades, and Ararus then liued: and at Rome happened the first Punick warre, Regulus.

2717. Ptolomey the Liberall, husband to his owne Sister, raigned 26. yeares. At Rome then grew the second Punick War: and then liued the Scipioes, Fabius Maximus, and Marcellus. Hanniball was vanquished by Scipio Africanus the eldest: And in this time liued the Authour of the Booke of *Wisdom*.

2743. Ptolomey the Parricide, raigned 17. yeares. He slew his Mother and his Sister, who also was his wife. At Rome began the warre of Macedon, against King Phillip; and the war of Asia, against the great Antiochus, and Hanniball the fugitive. Then liued great Cato, Ennius, Neuius, Plautus, Panetius: And Iesus the Sonne of Syrach, Autho^r of the Booke of Ecclesiasticus: Simon the Just being Byschop of the Iewes.

2760. Ptolomey Epiphanes, vnder the tutelage of the Romaines, raigned 24. yeares. The Brethren Matchabees did then valiantly withstande Antiochus, the most cruel Tyrant of Syria: his great repentance is to be read in the second Booke of Macchabees, the ninth Chapter.

3784. Ptolomey, called Matricide, raigned 35. yeares. Paulus Aemilius hauing taken the Persian king, made Macedon a Province to the Romaynes. Then happened the third Punicke Warre: The warre of Achaia, and of Numantia in Spain, vnder Scipio Africanus the younger, and Lelius, Terence then liuing.

3812. Ptolomey the Liberall, otherwise called Physcus,

cus, a verie detestable man, being Brother to Ptolomey the Parricide, raigned nine & twentieth yeares. He married his Brothers wife, and afterward her Daughter. The Sects of the Pharisees, Sadduces, and Essenes then arose. At Rome was the seruile warre: And the lawes for actions of the field by the Gracchi.

Ptolomey Alexander, hauing expelled his brother Lathyrus, raigned seauentene yeares. Afterward he was thrust out himselfe by his owne people, for the death of Cleopatra, a wicked woman. At Rome was the Iugurthine warre, and the Sunnes visibly scene in this time. Fundius doth attribute these seauentene yeares, and this raigne, to Ptolomey Lathyrus, preferring him before Ptolomey Alexander.

Ptolomey Lathyrus, being repealed to rule againe, raigned eightene yeares. At Rome was the Cimbric warre, Mithridates warre, and the civil warre betwene Marius and Sylla. When liued Lucullus, Ansonius, and Crassus Orators. Lucrētius the Poet, Varro: Sylla dominated cruellie, who retyring himselfe, to liue solitarie in the fields: dyed of Hermine engendred in his owne home.

Ptolomey Auletes, raigned thirtie yeares. Being excluded by his owne people, vnder Pompeys authority, he was resealed by Gabinus. Pompey ouer-came Hircanus and Sertorius, the Pyrates, as also Tigranes and Mithridates. Then was the conspiracy of Cataline: Caesar vanquished the Gauls: Cicero liued in exile: and Crassus was foiled

Sects of the
Pharisees.

3848.

pli. l. 2. ca. 31

3865.

Warre be-
tween Ma-
rius & Sylla
Flor. lib. 3.

3887.

foyled by the Partheans.

3913.

Ptolomey Dionysius, the last King, reigned 8. yeares: he caused great Pompeyes head to bee cut off. Then lived Catullus, Hortensius, Salust, Diodorus Siculus, Cato Utican, M. Lepidus, Marcellus, and Marke Anthony.

3920.

Cleopatra helde the kingdome a while with her Brother, and afterward (wholly by her selfe) two and twentie yeares: Shee, understanding that Marke Anthony was vanquished by Augustus, slew her selfe. Now was the civil warre between Pompey and Caesar: And that goodly Library, that contained two hundred thousand Volumes, was burned in this time. Plutarch in vit. Antoni.

Civil War
betweene
Caesar and
Pompey.

The Monarchy of the Caesars,
or Romaines.

3918.

Julius Caesar, a very gracious Prince, and one of the Romans chiefest Capitaines: reigned five yeares. He vanquished Pompey and his confederates: Ptolomey hee slew, & restored Cleopatra his friend (Sister to Ptolomey) to the kingdom of Egypt. Returning home to Rome, he was slain in the Senate house, by Brutus, Cassius, and other Conspirators. Dioscorides then lived: but if you would haue more of Caesars life, read Suetonius & Florus, in the life of Caesar.

3923.

Octavius Augustus, the last nephew of Julius, by the Sisters side, and his adopted Sonne, reigned 36. yeares: he was happy in war, moderate in peace, and liberall to every one. Then lived Virgil,

Virgil, Horace, Tibullus, Propertius, Virtrunius, Mecenas: And then dyed Cleopatra, and her husband Marke Anthony, Egypt being then reduced into a Province. Herod a stranger (fauoured by Augustus) was then King of Iudea. So, the Scepter being wholly taken from Iuda; Jesus Christ, God and man, the Saviour of the world, was then borne of a Virgin in Bethlehem, according to the Prophecies of Iacob, Genes. 49. Esay 7. Micheas 5.

Jesus Christ came in the yeare of Augustus sixty two, and of the world, 3963. Ouid was then in exile: the City of Lyons founded: and then lived Titus Livius, Valerius Maximus, Strabo: and Francis King of the Sicambrians, in the lower Allemaigne: Aquila, Tiberius, Galba, Labenus and Caius were then Law-giuers, or Law-makers. Herod the great murderer of Innocents, and there were numbred then at Rome, foure hundred, sixty foure thousand men.

Claudius Tiberius, the Sonne of Linia, afterward Wife to Augustus, reigned 23. yeares, beginning very well, but proving afterward to be most wicked. Jesus Christ, for our saluation, was then crucified in Hierusalem, under Pilate the Prouost of Iudea: he said, that A good Shepheard should clip his Sheepe, and not deuour them.

C. Caligula, Sonne of Germanus, a most wicked Man, reigned thirtene yeares. This beast, the ruine of men, made himselfe to be adored as God: hee poisoned his Uncle Tiberius, and deuoured all his Sisters, leaving them then to others

3963.

The yeares
of Christ.

17

39

thers like abusing. *T. Claudius*, Uncle of *Caligula*, and *Pontifex of Men*, raigned foureteene yeares. He preferred *Nero* before his owne Son, by the treason of whom hee was poysoned with a *Mithridate*. *Messalina*, his first wife peerelesse in all labricity and wickednes, then flourished: And *Saint Peter* the Apostle liued (reported to bee the first Bishop of Rome:) then liued likewise *Philo* the Jew, *Perseus*, *Mela*, *Pliny* the elder, and *Columella*. *Saint Paule* the Apostle went then thorow the World, proclaiming *Iesus Christ*, accompanied with *Saint Luke*. Then liued *Dionysius Arcopagita*: And then was the first Councell of *Ierusalem*.

43.

Nero, the Sonne of *Agripina*, afterward the Wife of *Claudius*, raigned thirtene yeares. Hee was the first Persecuter of the Church, and did put *Saint Peter* and *Saint Paule* to death: hee slew likewise his Master *Seneca*, also his owne Mother, and *Lucan* the Poet. Then liued *Simon Magnus*, and *Appolonius*: *Nero* being expelled from Rome, slew himselfe: after hee had set Rome on fire, to make himselfe pastime of a *Wor* fire.

47.

Sergius Galba the seauenth month of his Empire, was slaine by *Otho*. *Suetonius*, *Egesius*, Lib. 4. Cap. 21.

70.

M. Siluius Otho, he also most wickedly slew himselfe, in the third month of his Empire: confessing, that he had cruelly tormented the spirit of *Galba*. According to *Suetonius*, and *Tacitus*, Lib. 7.

71

Anlus Vitellius, brought vp at *Bourdeaux de Caprea*,

Chorea, being a vicious Man and a glutton, was hanged in pieces, and cast into *Tyber*, hauing raigned eight months. He caused himselfe to be served at his Table, with two thousand severall kinds of Fishes, and seauen thousand of Fowles, all at one supper. *Suetonius*, Lib. 9. *Iosephus*, Lib. 5. de Bel. Iudai.

Vespasian, a modest and gracious Prince, a louer of skilfull men, and good Artisans, raigned ten yeares, accompanied with his Sonne *Titus*, who ruined *Ierusalem*: *Iosephus*, *Proclus*, *Epietetes*. This ruine was the most lamentable that euer happened, for therein dyed 110000. men: read *Iosephus* in his five and seauen Bookes of the Jewish Wars, and *Egesippus*.

Titus, the delight and solace of mankind, raigned two yeares. He bled to say, That no man ought to depart from a Prince, with a sad countenance: *Cassius*, *Neracius*, *Proculus* and *Pegasus* were then Lawyers, and *Saint Bartholmew* was then martyred in *India*: *Saint Matthias* in *Iudea*: *S. Andrew* in *Scythia*: *Saint Mathew* in *Ethiopia*, *Saint Thomas* in *Bragmania*. *Ierusalem* was then taken: the Famine being so extreame, as Mothers were compelled to eat their owne children.

Domitian, Brother to *Titus*, was a most wicked man, and persecuter of the Christians: hee raigned fiftene yeares: then liued *Martiall*, *Iuuenall*, *Statius*, *Trogus*: and *Saint Iohn* wrote the Gospell, as also *Iosephus* did the Warres of the Jewes. *Domitian* would needes afterward be called

71.

81.

83.

called God and Lord of his people, wherefore (being hated of all men) he was slaine.

97.

Nerua, a good Prince, and the adopted father of Traian, reigned one yeare: he gaue more than an hundred thousand Croones, to relieue poore Cittizens. He tooke alway extream tarations, and (wanting money) he sold his garments, plate and Wallace, esteeming his owne Parents and kindred much lesse, then he did the publick benefit. The Christians were in great quyet vnder him, and the banished repealed, among whome was S. Iohn.

99.

Traian a good Emperour, but that he persecuted the Church: reigned 19. yeares. Being admonished, that he was ouer gracious to all men, he answered: *That he was such to his Subiects, as he could wish others should be to him, if he were a Subiect.* When liued, S. Ignatius, S. Eustachius, Pliny the yonger, Plutarch, Aulus Gellius, Suetonius, Tacitus Solinus.

118.

Ælius Adrianus, a man studious and skilfull in all Sciences, and the first Emperour that suffered a beard on his face, reigned 21. yeares: *Julius Celsus, Iulian, and Neracius Trifens, were Lawyers, & counsellors to the Emperour. When were liuing Ptolomy the great Astrologer, Phavorinus, Dionisius the Milesian, and Heliodorus. Hierusalem was repaired by Adrian, who therefore had his name chaunged, and was called Helias.*

139.

Antoninus Pius, reigned 23. yeares. He was a Prince of such esteeme, as strange Nations would

would resort vnto him, and make him Judge of their differences; for hee had alway this saying ready: *I had rather save one Cittizen, then kill a thousand Enemies.* In this time were Polycarpus, Irenæus, Iustine Martire, Egesippus, Appian, Florus, Macrobius, Iustine, Gallen, and Palladius: Lucian the Atheist, also was then toyne with Dogs. This Emperour tooke alwaie the wages or hire of strumpets, punished idle Magistrats, and was called Father of his country. Read Eutropius, Lib. 8. Thelesphorus the ninth Pope (as some report) did then institute, or rather restore the time of Lent.

A diuine saying of a Pagane.

162.

M. Antoninus, the Philosopher, called Aurelius, bozne in Gaule, with L. Commodus Verus, and called Brethren in the Bookes of the Pandectes) reigned 19. yeares. This good prince being vntwilling to oppresse his subiectes, made sale of all his fairest and richest Jewels, plate, & wearing garmentes belonging vnto him and his wife. Eutrop. lib. 8.

Lucius Aurelius Verus, gouerned the empyre with his brother Marcus Antoninus, the space of cleauen yeares: By some Authors he is set down in order before his brother, & by others after him.

L. Commodus, the most wicked sonne of good Antoninus, reigned 13. yeares. He was strangled by his Concubine, and other Conspirators. Eutrop. lib. 8. Orosius lib. 8. cap. 18. Lampridius doth most amply describe his life at large.

181.

Ælius Pertinax reigned six moneths. He had refused the Empire, and being desirous to re-

194.

for me the government, he was slaine by Iulian his succellour; who bought the name of Cæsar of the Warriours. The people much bemoaned this Prince, crying out aloud: O father of goodnesse; Father of the Senate; Father of al bounty: Farewell.

194.

V. Iulian, raigned seauen moneths, and being hated of all men, for sleying his predecessor, him selfe was also slaine by appointment of the Senate. Dissention grew amongst the Christians, for the celebration of Easter; And the second Councell appointed the day of Sunday, and five other after, Euseb. lib. 5, cap. 24. Merianus, Scetuola, Martianus and Cassius, were now Jurisconsultes: Aphrodisius and Aphronius Sophisters.

Pescennius Niger, or Nigerius, the sonne of Annius Fuscus, indifferently lerned, fierce, proud, and inclined to all vice: was saluted as Emperour by the souldiours of Syria, where he commanded, and was slaine by Seuerus.

195.

I. Septimius Seuerus, raigned 18. yeares. He was a Persecutor of the Church, but otherwise a pialiant Prince, addicted both to good letters and Armes. He was so well beloued, and gouerned so nobly, that the Senate said of him: *Eyther he should neuer haue bin borne, or else hee deserued neuer to die.* Read Sparr. and Viet. Then liued Origen, Tertullian, Philostrates the Sophister, and Apuleyus.

Cl. Albinus, issued of the Romaines families, of the Posthumians and Albines, made him selfe Empe-

Emperour in France. He was surprisid by the Souldiers, and brought halfe aliue to Seuerus: where hauing his head smitten off, he was hanged on a gibbet, and being torne with dogges, he was throwne into the Riuer.

A. B. Caracalla, the sonne of Seuerus, and his band to his stepmother, raigned seuen years. He slue Geta his brother, and Papinian the great and famous Lawyer, with diuers other. At last, him selfe was slaine by a souldior of his Guard. Herod. lib. 4.

213.

Antoninus Geta, the sonne of Seuerus and Iulia, borne at Milau, After the Parthian warre, wherein he wan great fauour, was called Cæsar Antoninus, in the life time of his father.

Op. Macrinus, with his sonne Diadumenus, raigned one yeare. Both the one and other had their heads smitten off by their men of warre. Macrinus was learned and seuer, but (withall) detestable and craftie, causing his predecessor to be murdered.

220.

Marcus Aurelius Antoninus Heliogabalus, the Bastard of Caracalla, who was a dishonest whore-hunter, and most abhominable in life beside: gaue great estates to wicked Balwds, Pandors, Jesters, &c. And being generally despised, he was slaine by his souldiours, in the fourth year of his raigne: both his owne bodie and his mothers being dragd along the streets, and cast into the common laystall.

221.

Alexander Seuerus, raigned peaceably without effusion of blood 13. yeares. He was a good prince,

224.

The king-
dome of
Persia

and did utterly forbid the selling of Offices. *Vlpianus*, *Paulus*, *Pomponius*, *Alphenens*, *Africanus*, *Callistratus*, and other excellent Ciuill Lawyers (the schollers of *Papinian*) then liued, with *Dion* the Historian, and *Philostratus*. The Kingdome of the Persians was then founded by *Artaxerxes*, and after transported to the *Sarazens*, and now commanded by the *Sophi*.

238.

Maximinus, a persecutor of the Christians, reigned three yeares. Being at first but a silly shepherd, he was made Emperour by the Souldiours (without authority of the Senate) and then by them slaine.

241.

Gordianus, a Prince of a noble spirite, with his sonne named *Gordianus* the younger, a good Prince, reigned six yeares, and was slaine by *Phillip* his successor. In his time was a wonderful Eclipse of the Sunne. Read *I. Capitolinus*, who placeth also *Pupienus* and *Balbinus* (created by the Senate) with *Gordianus* the elder.

Pupienus Maximus, a new man, and sonne to a Smith, gaue himselfe alwaies to vertue and Military seruices, prouing fortunate against the *Polonyans* and *Germans*.

M. Caelius Babynus, and *Pupienus* after they had bene Consuls, and that the *Gordians* were slaine in *Affryca*, were created Emperours by appointment of the Senate, against *Maximinus*, and both of them were undeseruedly slaine.

Gordianus the second, yongest sonne of *Gordianus* by his daughter, boyn at Rome: was slaine

iii

in a sedition of souldiers, by *Phillip* Prefect of the *Pretorians*.

C. Valens Hostilianus, is not placed in this ranke by some Historians, because immediately he died, smitten with the Pestilence, so that scarcely there remaineth any memory of him.

Phillip, an Arabian by Nation, was the first Christian of the *Cesars*, and reigned five yeares. He gaue (by his Testament) all his riches and treasures to *Pope Fabian*, And heere began the riches of the *Roman Church*. Hee was likewise slaine by his successor, as he had kilde his Predecessour.

247.

Decius Trian, a persecuter of the Christians, reigned two yeares. *S. Saturnine* the Bishop was martyred at *Tholouse*. *S. Laurence*, *Hippolita*, *Cecily*, *Agatha*, and *Appollina*.

252.

Q. Herennius Hetruscus, is not by any Historian placed among the Emperours. *Peuertheleste*, in this ranke is his picture found, in the booke of *Hubert Goltzius*, and there it is recorded of him, that he was the sonne of *Decius*, & that he was slaine in *Hungaria*, in a Battell against the *Goths*.

Vibius Gallus, with his sonne *Volusianus*, reigned two yeares: Being persecutors of the Church, were both slain by the souldiours. At this time there was such a contagious pestilence, and almost so generally dispersed, that in many places, there was left no Creature liuing. This pestilence continued fiftene yeares, and seemed to be partly occasioned thorough the wicked government

254.

ment of this Emperoꝝ.

Amilianus Lybicus, boꝛne in *Mauritania*, in his yong yeares followed Armes, and soon after he was made Emperoꝝ. He was slaine at *Sparta*, being aged 40. yeares.

256.

Licinius Valerianus, with his sonne *Galien*, persecuting the Church, raigned fiftene yeares. He was Captiue to *Sapor* King of *Persya*, whoe vsed him as a foote stool when he mounted on horse backe. *S. Cyprian* and *S. Cornelia*, were then martyred. *Porphyrius* wrote against the Christians: The thirte Tyrants vsurped the Emppye. Read *Trebelius*, *Polyo*, &c. *S. Paul* the first Hermite began the solitary life.

Galien the son of *Valerian*, suffered the Christians to liue in quiet, and reigned nine yeares alone, after that his father was ledde captiue into *Persya* by *Sapor*. He was exceeding wise, but addicted to Lust.

Saloninus Valerianus, the sonne of *Galien*, was slaine with his Father, being retired to *Milain*, and was but ten yeares old.

Cassius Labienus Posthumus, from being a simple souldioꝝ, attained to great dignities: and being in *France* was made Emperoꝝ in the time of *Galien*, where he was slaine.

271.

Flavius Claudius, (of whom vsued the familie of the *Constantines*) a good Prince, of noble lineage, and highly esteemed, reigned two yeares. *Dionysius* being then Pope, deuised the Diocesses and Parishes of the Christians. Tom. 1. de Concil. *Iamblicus*, *Plotinus*, and *Iuuenius* priest, redu-

reduced the foure Gospels into *Hexameter* verses.

Aurelius Quintillius, brother to *Claudius*, after the death of his brother was saluted as Emperoꝝ by the Senate, and slaine 17. daies after.

Valerius Aurelianus, a cruell man, reigned six yeares. He tormented the Christians, and repulsed the *Franconians*, entring out of *Germanie* into *Gaul*. He was the first that wore an Imperial Crowne: a louer of Military discipline, and one that rigorously punished the vices of his Souldioꝝ. He banquished *Zenobia* a very Warlike Lady, holding the Emppye of the East.

273.

Tacitus was slaine the first moneth of his emppye. This good Prince caused the books of *Cornelius Tacitus* to be receiued into all Libraries. The *Manicheans* began (from the time of *Aurelianus*) to infect the Church.

279.

Annius Florianus, brother to *Tacitus*, being desirous to raigne, vsurped the Emppye as by inheritance: but in a short time, hee was slaine at *Tharsus* by his souldioꝝ.

Probus a good Prince, the Authoꝝ of peace in the high and lower *Germany* oꝝ *Almain*, reigned six yeares and foure moneths. He said That hee had no need of Warriors, hauing no enemies; and that the souldior (not doing any thing) ought not to eate vp publike provision.

279.

Carus, a good and wise Prince, reigned two yeares, with his sonnes *Carinus* and *Numerianus*, two brethren of very different nature. The first, was most wicked, and full of cruelty: The other

286.

other fall of goodnesse, valour and knowledg. When liued *Volcarius*, *Herodian*, *Lampridius*, *Spartianus*, *Pollio*, *Vopiscus* and *Capitolinus* Historians.

288.

Dioclesian with *Maximianus Herculinus*, reigned 20. yeares: he was a most cruell persecutor of the Christians, and would haue himselfe to be worshipped. *Katharine*, *Lucy*, *Agnes*, *Barbus*, *Sebastian*, *Vincent*, *Cosmo* and *Damian*, and innumerable other Martyrs throught the world (in his raigne, to the number of 17. P.) were put to death in thirty daies.

Valerius Maximus, surnamed *Herculinus*, a man of fierce and cruell nature, was very outrageous in lust, especially with his owne Sisters: blockish in giuing counsell, without ciuility and gouernment, and therefore had *Dioclesian* to assist him in the Empire.

208.

Constantius Chlorus, father of *Constantine* and *Galerius*, the one gouerned in the East, the other in the West foure yeares together. *Constantine* commanded in *Gaul*, *Spaine*, *Affrica* and *Italie*: The other in *Greece*. *Arnobius*, *Lactantius*, *Dorotheus* bishop of *Tyre*, *Eusebius* and other Learned personages liued at this time.

Galerius Maximianus, tearmed *Armentarius*, because he was a great-heards son, was made Emp. being a goodly person, & a fortunat warriour. *Maximinus*, nephue to *Armentarius* by his sister was Emp. & persecuted the Christians in the East. *Seuerus* Prefect of *Italy* and *Africke*, was published Emperour by *Galerius*, & fighting with *Maxentius*, was taken at *Ravenna* and slaine.

Maxentius, elected Emperour by his soldiers, reigned a Tyrant, and was like vnto his father *Maximinus*. Being vanquished by *Constantine* neere to *Pont-Miluius*, he was drowned in a Gulfe, and his body neuer after found.

Licinius Licinianus, borne of Countrey Parents, was fortunate in the wars which he had against *Maximinus*. Afterward, hee became a mocker of Christ, and persecuted such as beloued in him; and because he was ignorant, hee was a great enemy to all that were learned.

Martinianus, was created Caesar by *Licinius* against *Constantine*, he was in his camp at night, but fled before next morning.

Constantine the great, son of *Helena* an holy woman, with *Maxentius* and *Licinius*, reigned 31. yeares. He was religious and affable, and transported the Bible into diuers Countries. He assembled the Councell of *Nice*, against *Arrius* the Heretick. He builded the City of *Constantinople*, calling it after his owne name: whither the Imperiall seate was translated, and changed from *Rome* into *Greece*, after he had granted *Syluester* to be Pope. *Euseb. lib. 10. Niceph. lib. 8.*

310.

The Councell of Nice.

Crispus was made Caesar by his father *Constantine*, but being afterward falsely accused to his father, he was put to death, for that he would not consent to the inordinate appetite of *Faustine* his Stepmother.

Constantine the second, with his brethren reigned 17. yeares, loyning thereto the three yeares reigns of *Magnentius*, *Themistius*, *Donatus*, and

311.

and Libanius the Sophister then iued : and S. Anthony the Heremite was knowne in Egypt by many miracles.

358.

Julian the Apostata, helde the true Religion ten yeares, and was named Empero; by the men of warre in Paris, against his will. He forbade the Christians the study of letters : and being wounded to death, hee cryed out : At length thou hast vanquished, O Galilean, S. Cyrill, Optatus, Basile, Nazianzene, Epiphanius, Hilarie, Didimus, Exuperus (all learned Diuines) then flourished.

368.

Iouianus, a kind and learned man, raigned eight months, and made confession to his Warriours, of the name of Iesus Christ. Now was the first order of Monkes instituted by S. Basile, vnder certaine rules of liuing.

368.

Valentian, a good and Catholique Prince, and Valens his Brother, raigned sistene yeares. This man held the error of the Arrians, and constrained the Monkes to undertake Armes in war : he died unhapply.

381.

Gratian, the son of Valentian, during whose whole life time, hee was an associate in the Empire. Hee raigned afterward with Valentian the second, his younger Brother, and Theodosius five yeares.

387.

Maximus feared Empero; by his Souldiers, slew Gratian, and held the Empire foure yeares : after which time, Valentian returned to the Empire againe five yeares.

395.

Theodosius, after that Gratian was slaine by Maximus, raigned three yeares with his Brother Valentian:

Valentinian : the death of whom was bemoaned by Saint Ambrose, for the great zeale hee had to Christian Religion. S. Hierome, S. Augustine, and P. Orosius then liued.

399

Arcadius and Honorius, the Sons of Theodosius, raigned twenty nine yeares, as well in the East as in the West. About this time, the great Empire of Rome began to decline (by the infidelity of Rufinus and Stilico their Tutors.) The very greatest part thereof was bled by the Scythians, Burgundians, Lombardes, Hungarians, French, Goths, and Vandals : And Rome was foure times taken by the Goths and Vandals, within 139 yeares. Then liued S. Chrysostom and Claudian.

Rome four times surprized.

Honorius raigned with Theodosius, Sonne to his Brother, sistene yeares.

411.

Theodosius the second, youngest Sonne of Arcadius, raigned at Constantinople twenty seven yeares, after the death of Honorius ; having assisted Valentian the third, the Son of Constantius, and Placida Daughter to Theodosius, who raigned five yeares in the west. At this time, the Frenchmen leauing Franconia, beganne to enter vpon the Gaules, vnder Clodion their second King.

427.

F. Valerius Martianus, raigned in the East seven yeares, and Valentian the third (at the same time) in the west : during their raigne, the Burgundians & other western Nations, were conuerted to the Faith. The Vandals came out of Spayne into Africa, and afterward they toke Rome, vnder

453.

der the conduct of their King *Gensericus*. *Attila*, King of the *Hunnes*, entred into *Gaul* with five hundred thousand men: deliuered battle to *Meroëus* their second king, who had ioined with *Ætius* Lieutenant to the Emperoz. There hee lost an hundred and fourscore thousand men, & fled into *Hungaria*, not any man being wounded behind. About this time was great *Arthur* King of *Britaine*.

460.

Leo the first, reigned 17. yeares, associated by *Leo* the sonne of his daughter; who after he had reigned one yeare alone, gaue up th. Empire to

476.

Zeno his Grandfire, who raigne tyrannically 17. yeares. The estate of the Church was then very greatly troubled, as also that of the Western Empire. *Italy* had then nine Emperors in twenty yeares, who all slue one another.

493.

Anastasius raigne twenty five yeares: He was an *Eutichian* Heretique, was smitten with lightning, and dyed (as a iust punishment) for his Heresie. *Fulgentius*.

519.

Iustine raigne 9. yeares: he was first a Swineheard, afterwards a Cold-heard, next a Carpenter, a Souldier, a Captaine, and last of all Emperoz, gouerning very well and godly, and expelling the *Arrian* Heretiques. Then liued *Boetius*; and *S. Bennet* or *Benedict* began his order.

528.

Iustinian raigne thirty eight yeares. All his care and study, was to repaire the decayed Empire, and re-establish ciuill right: in the execution wherof, he was seconded by excellent personages, especially by *Belfarius*, *Narses*, and *Tribonianus*.

The

The first chased the *Vandals* out of *Affrica*, which they had held 95. yeares: and deliuered *Rome* from the *Gothes*, who had conquered it, and yet were once moze expelled thence by *Narses*.

Iustine the second, raigne ten yeares, beloued of al men for his liberality. *Sophia* his wife mocked him with *Narses*, the Gouvernour of *Italy*, wher hee being offended, called the *Lombardes*, by whose helpe he reuenged himselfe. Now was the Kingdome of the *Lombardes* founded by *Clebus*, where raigne thirty two Kinges, vntill the time of *Charles* the Great.

The Kingdome of the Lombardes.

Tiberius the second, raigne seauen yeares: hee was a very charitable man, one that loued God and his Saints, and therefore (no doubt) was beloued of him againe.

577.

Mauritius raigne twenty yeares: hee was descended of very meane parentage, and (in the end) was murdered for his couetousnesse: a vice as much discommendable in a Prince, as liberality is becomming, and maketh him renowned.

584.

Phocas raigne eyght yeares: And being the Murderer of his Predecessor, himselfe was likewise murdered, withall his Race. Now was the contention for the Primacy of the Church, betwene *Rome* and *Constantinople*, and now was *Saint Gregory*.

Contention for Primacy of the Church.

604.

Heraclius raigne thirty yeares, who was the Murderer of *Phocas*. The fifteenth yeare of his raigne, beganne the rule of *Mahomet*, the false Prophet of *Arabia*, where were the *Agarenes* and *Sarrazins*: to whom the *Egyptian* and *Arabi-*

612.

ff

an

an *Prince* (called *Soldanes*) next succeeded. After them came the *Turks*, about the year 1300. *Mahomets* false Doctrine (by the negligence of the Emperors and Christian Princes) grew to such a head: that it not onely poisoned *Asia* and *Africa*, but also a very great part of *Europe*.

640.

Constantine the third, reigned four moneths, being a good Prince, and very young: Hee was poisoned by his Step-mother, that her son might raigne.

641.

Heracion, who having his nose and tongue cut out, was banished two yeares after.

642.

Constans, the Sonne of *Constantine*, reigned twenty seven yeares: And being very covetous, he was slain by his own followers, in the Bathes of *Syracusa*.

670.

Constantine the fourth, reigned 17. yeares. He overcame in one Battell, thirty thousand *Sarazins*, and afterward fell to great wickednes. The learned and venerable *Beda* lived in this time.

687.

Iustinian the second, a wicked man, reigned 16. yeares, but not without interruption, being dejected by *Leontius*, and *Leontius* by *Tiberius Abimaris*, who reigned other three yeares, therfore these three are said to raigne sixteen yeares. This was the beginning of the Dukes of *Venice*, in which had bene governed before (for the space of 230. yeares) by *Tribunes*.

The State
of the Vene-
tians,

713.

Phillip Bardasanes, reigned two yeares. Hee was cast out of his Emprye by his Lieutenant, & after that, they pluckt sooth his eyes. Hee had much talke and little wisdome, disposing badly of the

the goods of the Emprye: he became after a schismaticall Monk.

715.

Anthemius, called also *Athanasius* the second, reigned three yeares: He was dejected from his Emprye by *Theodosius* chiefe of his Army, and turned into a Monastery. He hadde taken away the Emprye, and then pluckt out the eyes of his predecessor.

718

Theodosius the third, reigned one year. He left the Emprye, seeing himselfe to be assailed by *Leo* his successor, and became a Monk.

719.

Leo the third, a wicked man, reigned twenty four yeares. He was called *Iconomachus*, a defacer of Images, and would not suffer the Christians to have any in their Temples. Hee was excommunicated by *Gregory*, and by authority of a Councell held at *Rome*, against his owne of *Constantinople*. *Blondus lib. 10.* The *Sarazins* besieged *Constantinople* three yeares together, in which time died three hundred thousand of *Pe-*
silence and famine.

742.

Constantine, first of that name, the son of *Leo* the *Isaurian*, succeeded his father in the Emprye of *Constantinople*, the yeare of our saluation 742. He was surnamed *Copronymus*, because he would discharge his belly in the founts, appointed for Christian Baptisme. He was an utter enemy, not only to the Images of Saints, but also unto their reliques, causing them to be burned. He did put to death many of the best and most respected persons, and (among others) two Patriarches of *Constantinople*. He made warre against the

¶ 2

Eul-

Bulgarians, both by land & Sea, *Fortune* some-
time smiling vpon him, other whiles toying. In
his absence, one *Artabasdus* was made Empe-
roꝝ at *Constantinople*. But hee receiuing newes
thereof returned, and either put out, or rent forth
the new Emperors eies, & caused his children to
be slaine. In his time, there was so cold a Win-
ter, that the Sea of *Constantinople* was frozen.
After many cruelties, this Emperoz died a Lea-
per.

743.

Artabasdus, albeitt he was descended of mean
birth; yet notwithstanding, for the faultlesse,
good vertues, and commendable qualities which
were in him, he was liked of the Senate & soul-
diers, and afterward was elected Emperoz by the
zealous Christians, for the hatred that euery one
bare to *Constantine* the first. He became a better
louer of the Saints, and fortified the Cittye of
Constantinople against *Constantine*, who had bin
expulsed thence. Nevertheless, both hee and it
were besieged, and the Cittye being surprized, his
eies were pluckt out, & his children put to death.

775.

Leo the fourth, was Emperoz after his Father
Constantine the first. He was not onely heire to
the Empire, but also to his Fathers vices: And
his mother, who was deuout and one that loued
God, would giue no consent that he should be
Emperoz. He made some attempts vpon the Sa-
razins that dwelt in Syria. He took the Crowne
which *Mauritus* had dedicated to God, and set it
on his owne head, it being very richly beautified
with rich pretious stones: But sone after, he had
an

Of the successe of Times.

an Impostume in his head, with a fiery Ague,
whereof he died.

Constantine, first of that name, and some to
Leo the fourth, was Emperoz after his Father:
Hee reigned nine yeares (very young) with his
mother, who with his consent also, was perswa-
ded by *Therapsius* Patriarch of *Constantinople*, to
call a generall Councell of three hundred and fifty
Bishops. In short while after, *Constantine* ex-
cluded his Mother from the Emperors govern-
ment. He caused the eies and tongue of *Nicepho-
rus* to be puld and cut out, hearing of a secret in-
tention, to make him Emperoz. Also he did shut
vp in a Monastery his wife *Mary*, who was the
daughter of King *Charlemaine*, and then took a
Concubine, by the counsell of his Mother, whoe
pretended that her sonne was hated of the people.
Wherevpon not long after, she caused him to be ta-
ken, and plucking forth his eies, shut him vp in
prison, where he died, in the yeare 798. and then
she reigned alone, about the space of five yeares.

790.

Irene, issued from *Attica*, was wife to the em-
peroz *Leo* the fourth, by whom he had *Constan-
tine* the first before mentioned, and reigned with
him nine yeares, and afterward alone by hir selfe
five yeares, or little more, as hath already bene
said. She was thence expelled by *Nicophorus*, &
sent in exile to the Isle of *Lesbos*, which at this in-
stant is called *Mitiline*. At the time when this
Lady governed the Empire of *Constantinople*,
Charlemaine was sacred and crowned Emperoz
of *Rome* (or of the West) for his vertues.

798

A brieft Collection of the History & liues of the Emperours of the West, from the time of King Charlemain, who was the first Emperor in the West.

802.



Harlemaine, king of France, and the greatest Emperour (for all perfections) that cuer was: The restorer of Justice, equity and peace, among men, and re-establisher of

The king-
dome of
England

Common-weales, with honest Lawes, and Religious doctrine, learned in languages and all disciplines: reigned King and Emperour 14. yeares. *Gal. lib. 4. Emil. lib. 2.* The Kingdome of England then began by King Egbert.

815.

Lewes his sonne, surnamed (the Mecke) or *Debonaire*, was likewise King and Emperour 26. yeares. He caused a Councell to be held, where in all Ecclesiasticall persons were forbidden to weare any superfluous garments, ieiuelles, and Ringes. In reuenge wherof, they prouoked his sonnes to conspire against him two seuerall times.

841.

Lotharius his sonne, contended with his Brother *thien*, *Lewes Germanicus*, and *Charles the Bald*. After a warre no lesse great and sharpe, then unhappy and lamentable, he remained Conquerour, and reigned fiftene yeares.

846

Lewes, the second son of *Lotharius*, reigned 21 yeares: hee was at continuall discord with his Uncle *Charles the Bald*, for the Kingdome of *Austrasia*.

Charles

Charles the Bald, sonne to *Lewes the Mecke*, was Emperour and king of France, two yeares.

877.

Lewes the Stammerer, was made Emperour by the meanes of Pope *Iohn the second*: hee died at *Compeigne* vpon a good-friday.

879.

Charles the Grosse, Emperour and k. of France, who degenerated from the Noble race of *Charlemain*, reigned ten yeares.

880.

Arnold, whose body was full of vermine, by the iust iudgement of God, he being addicted to so many seuerall rapines. He reigned 12. yeares.

891

Lewes the third, or rather the fourth sonne of *Arnold* reigned 1. yeares. Some do hold that after *Arnold*, vntill the time of *Otho*, there was no true Emperour of Rome, but vacation of the empire, for the space of threescore yeares.

903

Conrade, being the last of the race of *Charlemain*, reigned seauen yeares.

913

Henry the first, called the *Faulconer*, whome brought peace to all Germany, reigned 18. yeares. He was expert in Armes, beganne the pence of small money among the *Almaynes*, and subdued the *Vandals*, who then receiued the Christ. faith.

919

Otho his sonne reigned 56. yeares. It was said of him, that he made good proue, that he whoso God will helpe, no man can harme, for hee had innumerable enemies, and yet very easily he subdued them all.

928

Otho the second, his sonne, too seuerer, reigned ten yeares. He re-seated *Nicephorus* his Godfather Emperour of Greece, after hee had bin driuen out of his Empire.

974

984
The begin-
ning of the
princes Ele-
ctors of Ger-
many.

Otto the third, raigned nineteene yeares: Hee was called (for his spirite) the wonder of the world. In his time began the institution of the Princes Electors of the Empire, in the yeare 1002. This is the common opinion, which (neverthelesse) the learned *Onuphrius* declareth to be erroneous, verifying by certaine authorities, and testimonies of the Authors of times: that the Emperors (after this *Otto*) were elected, not by seauen Princes: but in generall, by voyce of all the Arch-bishops, Bishops, Princes, Lords, and Gentlemen of Germany, and continued so till the time of *Rodolphus* the first, which was in the yeare 1280. And he saith, that it cannot be certainly gathered, at what time the seauen Electors were instituted: not finding any one of the auncient Authors that speakes thereof. And yet notwithstanding, hee is of the minde, that they were established, in the Interim of the interregnum and schisme of the Empire, which continued twenty three yeares after the death of *Frederick* the second, which was in the yeare 1250. untill the election of *Rodolph* of *Hapsburg*.

1002

Henry of *Bavaria* the second, raigned twentie two yeares: Hee was a prudent and victorious Prince: and hee expelled the *Sarrazins* out of Italy.

1027

Conrade the second, raigned fiftene yeares. In this time the name of a Cardinall (as is saide) came first in vse.

1040.

Henry the third, surnamed the *Black*, raigned 17. yeares, hee laboured earnestly to take away the

the Schismes of the Church, happening by the plurality of the Popes: whereof hee deposed three as unworthy, and ordained, that there should be no more created, without his permission.

Henry the fourth, raigned fifty yeares. He was present in 62. battels, and great troubles happened betwene him and *Gregory* the seauenth, touching the power to elect and confirme the Pope. The Kingdom of Ierusalem taken by *Godfrey* of *Bulsen*, and the floure of *Christendomes* Nobility. 1057.

Henry the fift, raigned twenty yeares. Hee took *Rome*, and the Pope, who would not crown him, except hee would ordaine his election to be without the Emperors, and contrary to the order of *Henry* the third. Now began the Kingdomes of *Portugal*, *Naples*, and *Sicily*. The Kingdoms of *Portugal*, *Naples*, and *Sicily*. 1107.

Lotharius the second, raigned 11. yeares, being very much respected for his great valour in war, his loue to religion, & reparation of good laws, &c. 1127.

Conrade the third, raigned fiftene yeares, a good Prince, and made warre against the *Sarrazins*, with *king Lewis* the young. 1138.

Frederick the first, called *Barbarossa*, a Prince addicted to hardines, magnanimity, and Justice, raigned 37. yeares. This is the man, upon whose overmuch humility, Pope *Alexander* the third declared the insolency of his *Luciferian* pride: in treading on the Emperors back, and then he began to sing: *Super Aspidem & Basiliscum ambulabis*. Then liued *Anicen*, *Auerroes*, & *Mesius*. The Kingdom of the Tartars. And *Changins* was first king of the Tartars. 1152.

Henry

1190. Henry the first, raigned tenne yeares, a good Prince, he subdued the kingdome of Pouilla or Apulia.

1190. Phillip brother to Henry, a good Prince, raigned nine yeares. In his time beganne the frier orders of Mendicants, or begging friers, Iacobins and Gray friers. *Ab. Vsspergens. hist.*

1199. Otho the fourth, raigned four yeares. He came to the Emperre by the meanes of Innocent the 3. and afterward lost it by his owne occasion, being murdered in the end, as he had done his predecessor.

1212. Fredericke the second, reigned 37. yeares, being both wise and magnanimous. He was expelled the Empire, by the meanes of Pope Innocent the fourth. This Prince was the restorer of Astronomy, by helpe of the Almagist of Ptolomy. The factions of the Guelphes and Gibelines, now caused great harmes in Italy.

1250. Conrade the fourth, reigned three yeares, a good Prince. He was excommunicated by Pope Innocent the fourth, according as (by him) his father was deprived of his Empire.

1254. Willielmus, reigned two yeares, a good prince. Albertus Magnus, Lullius and Alphonsus, King of Spaine, were then great Astrologers. There was interregnum 17. yeares.

1273. Rodolohus reigned 19. yeares. He made Austria the Imperiall seat, ordaining his sonne Albert first Duke there, of whom is the house of Austria descended.

1292. Adolphus reigned six yeares. He was expelled for

for his vices, by the Princes Electors, and slain afterward in warre, by Albertus his successor.

Albertus reigned ten yeares. Pope Boniface 1299 the eight, gaue him the Realme of France, & the Papall chaire was transferred to Avignon, 72. The first turkish Emp. yeares. Peter was Othoman the first Emperour of the Turkes.

Henry the seauenth, reigned six yeares, a very graue and prudent Prince: But a Iacobine frier (being suborned by a Florentine) poisoned him with the consecrated Host. 1309

Lewis of Bavaria, reigned 33. yeares. He used very great clemency towards his enemy and prisoner, Frederick of Austria, restoring him to his Dukedome. Now began the Sects of the Flagellanti or Whippers: Bartholomew, Petrarch, and Boccace, then living. 1314

Charles the fourth, Author of the golden Bull, reigned 32. yeares; Dante then lived. 1347

Wenceslaus reigned 22. yeares, very carelesly. He was taken by his brother Sigismund, and put into prison at Vienna. They were both sonnes to Charles the fourth. Lithuania then receiued the Christian faith. 1379

Robert or Rupert, reigned ten yeares: then lived Chrysolaras, Laurentius Valla, Pope the Florentine, and Tamberlain the Tyrant of the Tartares, led an Army of a million of men. 1400

Sigismund reigned 27. yeares, a man renowned for wisdome and godnesse. Then was the Councell of Constance, wherein three popes were deposed. John Hus, and Hierom of Prage, were then burned. 1481
Albertus

1438

Albertus the second, reigned two yeares well and valiantly. He chased *Amurath* the Turke out of Hungary.

1440

Frederick the third, a lover of Peace, raigned 53. yeares. Then was *Constantinople* taken: The Art of Printing found out: Artillerie more ancient 1380. *Gaza*, *Victorinus*, *Blondus*, *Aeneas Sylvius*, *Platina*, *Bessarion*, *G. Trapezoncius*, *N. Perottus*, *Pomponius Latius*, *H. Barbaxus*, *A. Politianus*, *I. Picus Mirandula*, *B. Mantuanus*, *Ph. Beroaldus*.

1494

Maximillian, a lover of vertuous men, raigned 27. yeares. He was valiant and learned, & could deliuer his actions himselfe, in the Latine tongue. Then liued *I. Nauclerus*, *Volaterranus*, *G. Valla*, *Polydor Virgill*, *A. Sabellicus*, *I. Reuchlinus*, *Ionianus*, *Pontanus*, *M. Ficinus*, *P. Crinitus*, *Amb. Calepinus*, *Trithemius*, *P. Bembus*, and others.

1514

Charles the first, a most magnanimous prince, raigned 35. yeares. In his time happened maruellous mutinies in Germany, by Peazantes and Rusticke people, of which were slaine more then an hundred thousand, in lesse space then 3. Moneths. Beside these strange warres, there insued ciuill dissentions likewise, about matters of religion. *Erasmus*, *Io. Lud Viues*, *Luther*, *Munster*, *Camerarius*, *Fuelius*, *Latomus*, *Sadoletus*, *Pagninus*, *Eugubinus*, *Melancthon*, *Rhenanus*, *S. Grineus*, *Zozius*, *Oldendorp*, *Alciat*, *Zuinglius*, *Oecolampadius*, and others then liued.

1558.

Ferdinando, a Prince wise, vigillant, liberall,

kind, and a louer of quietnesse: He made warre vpon the Turkes in Hungary, for the space of 38. yeares, and laboured to accord the Christians, to the end that the enemy might be resisted by general consent. He raigned seauen yeares: and then liued *Gesner*, *Lycosthenes*, *Sturmius*, *Gualternus*, *Rinius*, *Pantaleon*, *Vadian*, *P. Constantinus*, *Fnn- tius*, &c.

Maximillian, the second sonne of *Ferdinand*, was a good and prudent Prince, not dissolute in habits, but liuing soberly, hauing knowledge in many tongues, good iudgement, speaking discretely and sententiously, and inclined to receiue al requests; as also to giue liberally: Heer curious of rich Cabinets, or sumptuous buildings. He reigned twelue yeares.

Rodolphus the second, sonne to the most vertuous Prince *Maximillian*, and rainging at this present. To whom God giue grace, as to al other Monarches, Princes and Potentates, to do those things that become a Christian Prince, blessing him with good Councell, faithfull people, &c.

Now come we againe to the Emperors of the East.

Nicephorus, who was kinsman to *Irene*, got the Empire from her by craft, exiling hir thence, as hath bene before declared, and merely vsurping the Empire of *Constantinople*. At his first entrance, euery one hadde a singular good opinion of him, because they greiue weary of a *Calomans* gouernement. Heuerthelesse, he proued to bee

1564

1576.

803

wicked, cruel and couetous, & therfore felt quickly his deserued punishment. For entring battle against the *Bulgarians*, he was discomfited and slaine. His sonne *Stauratius* (whom he had made fellow Emperour with him) was likewise then sore wounded, and dismissed of the Empire with in thre moneths after, by *Michaell Curopalates*, who had married his sister *Procopia*. And so hee was sent to finish his daies in a Monastery.

804

Stauratius, the sonne of *Nicephorus*, a man deformed and mishapen, having also a simple spirit, was made companion and participant in the Empire with his Father: And yet notwithstanding, very soon after his Fathers death, he was chased from his Empire, his haire being shaven off, and he inclosed in a Monastery, not reigning (after his father) above thre moneths, or thereabout.

811

Michaell Curopalates, otherwise called *Rangabus*, was Emperour after *Nicephorus*: and his sonne *Stauratius*. This Emperour *Michaell* was better skild in the affaires of peace, pollicy, and Justice, then in the action of warre. For in his first battell against the *Bulgarians*, he fled away like vnto a Coward, and hid himselfe in a Monastery, to which life hee yelded himselfe, and quite forsooke the Empire, as not willing to meddle any more, eyther with warre, or the State of an Emperour. He, according as *Nicephorus* did the like, sent an Ambassadoe to *Charlemaine*, the new made Emperour of the west, to treat of peace and alliance with him. And it was agreed, that the

the *Venetians* should liue according to their owne Lawes, Customs, and ancient liberties.

Leo of Armenia, was Emperour of *Constantinople*, being the fift of that name, and the fourth after *Charlemaine* Emperour of the *Romaines*, who began with *Nicephorus*. He was Colonell of the warlike troopes, belonging to the Emperour *Michaell Curopalates*, and aspiring to dominion, he raised a commotion, and so was made Emperour by the Souldiers. Hee being thus elected Emperour, entring into his Pallace Royall, hee caused the priuy members of the Sonne of the said Emperour *Michaell*, to be cut off, and then banished him. He Conquered the *Bulgarians*, recovered *Thrace*, took many of his enemies, reprehended their boldnesse, that had surprized *Adrianapolis*, and prepared also to besiege *Constantinople*. Hee would by no means suffer the Images of saints, but beat downe and defaced them. Not long after, himselfe was taken and slaine in a Church, as he was assisting Divine seruice, in the eyght yeare of his Empire: his wife was bestowd in a Monastery, and his Children closely conuailed away.

Michaell the Stammerer or Stutterer, a wicked man, and murderer of the foresaid *Leo*, was after him made Emperour of *Constantinople*. Hee was descended of base and vile place, and there was one called *Thomas*, a man also of as base Birth, that sought to vsurpe the Empryre, working so many disturbances thereto, that the Emperour being halfe in despaire, commanded a great chain of

813

820

of yron to thwart the arme of the Sea, euen from *Constantinople*, so farre as *Pera*. But in the ende, he took this *Thomas*, and caused his handes and feet to be cut off. At this time the *Sarazins* surprised *Candy*, had two seuerall victories ouer the *Greekes*, and *Michaell* died of a flux in his belly.

849.

Theophilus, sonne to *Michaell* the *Stammerer*, was Emperour of *Constantinople* after his father. He was a good Iusticer, & well affected towards his Subiects: but he held the Images of Saints in great detestation, and seuerely punished all such as worshipped them, being (therein) his fathers true follower. Two seuerall times he gave battell to the *Sarazins*, that wasted and spoiled the Countreies of *Asia*: And as many times was he foiled, losing there all his Tents and Banillions. *Amorium*, a little village of the higher *Phrygia*, (being the place of his birth) was besieged, taken, and risted by those *Sarazins*: The Emperour grieved thereat so inmeasurable, that he refused to eate, and would drinke nothing but colde water: So falling into a *Dysenterie*, he died.

842.

Theodora, after the decease of *Theophilus* her Husband, (as Tutresse or Guardian vnto her son *Michaell*, who was in his young yeares) gouerned the Empire of *Constantinople* very sufficiently, comforting the poore distressed Christians, and reuoking home such as liued in exile, about the question of Images. She treated a peace with the King of *Bulgaria*, affiancing him vnto his sister, wherby both he and his Subiects were conuerted

uerted to the Christian Religion. At length *Michaell* being able to guide the reynes of the Emperour; his mother *Theodora* entred into Religion and left him to rule alone, in the yeare 856.

856

Michaell the sonne of *Theophilus*, succeeded his father in his infancy, his mother and Gouvernesse *Theodora*, holding (for him) the Empire of *Constantinople*. But when *Michaell* grew to greater strength, hee took the charge of the Empire himselfe. whereto his mother gladly consented. He more resembled his Graundfather, then his father, both in negligence and prodigality, spending great riches which his warres brought him in. He was sometimes so addicted to the *Circensian* sports, as hardly he could be draine from them. He made *Vasilus* the *Macedonian*, his equall companion in the Emperour, by whome hee was soon after slaine: hauing reigned eleauen yeares, nine moneths, and five daies, after that his mother *Theodora* had entred into Religion, which, with his former time of rule, compleated 25. yeares, ten moneths, and fourteen daies.

Vasilus of *Macedon*, who had slaine the Emperour *Michaell*, entred presently vpon the empire of *Constantinople*, and was receiued and approved of all, in the Imperiall Pallace. When hee was a yong infant, he had bin brought (among other captiues) to *Constantinople*. to be there sold: neuerthelesse, he was in the end Emperour, and fortune so fauoured him, that his children, and his childrens children, were also Emperours after him. First of all, he caused those summes of mo-

867.

nie

nie to be restozed backe againe, which *Michael* his Predecessor had prodigally giuen away, and so they were deliuered into the *Treasurie*. He instituted his three sonnes heyres to the Empire. He had many battailes against the *Sarazins*, & still proued victorious. Many *Iewes* and *Scythians* (by his meanes) receiued the *Christian faith*: yet such was his hard hap, to bee slaine (in hunting) by a Hart, that ran his hornes into his belly.

886

Leo, the first of that name, surnamed the Philosopher, began his raigne in the yeare 886. first, with the helpe of the *Turkes*, he vanquished the *Bulgarians*, who had reuolted from him: but soon after, being abused by the *Turkes*, thozow baine suggestions, he sustained great losse. Notwithstanding, he failed not to leauy an Army against the *Sarazins*, whereby (vnder the conduct of *Nicetus*) he brought away a triumphant Victorie. He was very vigillant ouer the Common-weal, and oftentimes would walke alone in the night, (disguised in habit) only to try his watchmen; who did beate him soundly, and also carried him to prison, whom the next day he rewarded both with money and honours.

904

Alexander, brother to *Leo* the sozenamed Emperour, succeeded him in the Empire. Hee was quite contrary in manners, both to *Basilius* his father, and *Leo* his brother, so; he was of badde gouernment, giuen wholly to his pleasures, and committed the charge of his State affaires, to flatterers and flatters, who were his daily coun-
plices

plices and companions, in all naughty and wicked actions. He died of a flure of bloud, issuing from his nose and priuy-members, after he had gormandized and excessively played at the *Tennis*. For, mounting (in an extreame heat) vpon his horse, and violently stretching himselfe, hee brake a veine, whereof he died.

Constantine the seauenth, sonne to *Leo* the first, of whom we haue already spoken, was at the age of seauen yeares, left (by his father) vnder the care and charge of his mother *Zoa*. And he began to holde the Empire of *Constantinople*, after his sozenamed Uncle *Alexander*, the yeare of our Saluation, 906. A certaine man, named *Romanus Lecapenus*, made great resistance against him for space of 26. yeares, and purposed to deiect him quite. But in the end, *Lecapenus* was seized by his olone sonnes, and shut vp into a Monastery, for he was the sole cause, that *Zoa* the mother of *Constantine*, was likewise made a recluse in a Monasterie. Now, when the sonnes of *Lecapenus* had deuised to doe the like to *Constantine*, as they had done vnto their father: the same stratagem happened to themselves, and they were inclosed in a Monastery. So *Constantine* recovered his Empire, which he gouerned alone very sufficiently; suppressing some Tyrants, and inducing diuers Princes of the *Turkes* to the *Christian faith*. He made learning to shine in *Greece*, and left a Booke vnto his sonne, discourting the affaires of the Empire, which the *Venerians* do yet keepe as an especiall Jewell. He raigned fourteen
2 yeares

906

yeares with his mother *Zoa*. with *Lecapenus* 26. yeares, and about fittene yeares alone, which was in all nare 55. yeares.

910.

Romanus Lecapenus, a man of base descent, wrought so much trouble to *Constantine* the seventh in his Empire, that he was constrained to receiue him as companion in the Imperiall dignity, in the yeare 920. and *Constantine* accepted his daughter *Helena* in marriage. But neither the sacred Oath which he had sworne vnto him, nor yet the neere alliance in kindred with *Constantine*, could restrain him from vsurpation of the Empire, for himselfe and *Christopher* his son: but he sought to thrust *Constantine* wholly out of all. But he was deceiued in his owne designs, for, vpon the bad successe in warre which he had against the *Bulgarians*, and *Simeon* their Duke, he was taken by his owne sonnes, *Stephen* and *Constantine*, who despoiled him of his Empire, and carried him to a Monastery in a rare neighbouring Island, there to plate the Philosopher alone by himselfe. Then, practising to worke the like device vpon *Constantine* fortune turned his back towards them, and in the same snare which they laid for another, themselves were cunningly caught: for they were shut vp within a Monastery, and so *Constantine* remained a peaccable Emperour.

919.

Romanus, the yong sonne of *Constantine* the 7. held the Empire of *Constantinople* after his father. But he was gouerned vnder the disposition and order of *Nicephorus Phocas*. This Emperour

Romanus

Romanus, excluded his mother and his sisters: who, in greife and despayre, that they should fall from so great pompe and estate, concluded to support the weake condition, by the worst meanes that could be, even the prostitution of their bodies. And as for him, he being addicted to sports and Epicurisme, died poisoned.

Nicephorus Phocas, ruled the Empire of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 963. He fought often, & very fortunately against the *Sarazins*, who vnruly held *Calabria*, *Scicily*, *Cyprus*, *Candy* and *Cilicia*, which at this day is called *Caramania*. In *Scicily* the affaires were not well mannaged, by his Committers and Lieutenants: But concerning himselfe, he recovered *Cilicia*, and the greater part of *Asia*, for a good beginning: And some after, he went powerfully vpon *Antioche*, which hee surprized in the night, and forced the *Sarazins* to fly for refuge. This man was hated of all his Subiects, because that (vnder the colour of Warre which he then had) he laide great Imposts, exactions, and polings vpon them. He caused also a corrupt kind of money to be forged, and diminished likewise the waight: by meanes whereof, being so out of fauour with the Cittizens, he was the easier slaine sleeping in his chamber, by *Iohn Zimisces*, and *Theophila*, (wife to *Nicephorus*) gaue fauourable entrance to the murderers, and all the stranglers that were with him.

Iohn Zimisces, the murderer of *Nicephorus*, was Emperour of *Constantinople* after him. Hee was a man valiant in warre; he recovered all

963

Bulgaria, which the *Roxalians* held, and *Sphen-dollanus* their king submitted himselfe vnto him. But after this victoꝝ, being returned to *Constantinople* with triumph, he was poisoned. He made fellowes with him in the Empire, *Basilus* and *Constantine*, brethren, who were sonnes to *Romanus*, the predecessor of *Nicephorus Phocas*.

976.

Basilus the second, and *Constantine* the eight, being brethren, and sonnes to the yong *Romanus*, were Emperors of *Constantinople* after *Iohn Zimisius*, in the yeare of Saluation 976. *Barda Sclerus* made ciuill warre vpon them, intending to vsurpe the Empire: but being foiled in the battell, he fled to the *Persians*. The like did *Phocas*, when he was ouercome, and for the same cause: for, taking it in scorn to be misprized, after he had well declared his duty against *Sclerus*, he sought to make himselfe Emperoz. *Basilus* (afterward) banquished the *Bulgarians* in many battels, and as a punishment for their Rebellion, he caused the eies of fifteen thousand Captiues to be pulled out: reseruing onely but one of them, to guide the rest to *Samuell* their Duke. For they had ouer-run the Country of *Thrace*, *Macedon*, & *Greece*, and put all to fire and sword. Now was all *Bulgaria* subiect to the Empire of *Constantinople*, which till then had euermore bene rebellious. Duke *Samuell* liued not long after, but died with more griefe and beration. *Constantine* was companion with his brother *Basilus* in the Emperre, more in Honor then power: But after his death he was sole Emperoz almost thre yeares, and di-

ed

ed swallowed by in his pleasures and vaine voluptuousnesse.

Romanus of *Argyr*, or (as he was commonlie called) *Argyropilus*, kinsman to *Constantine* the eight, succeeded him in the Empire. At the beginning, he changed many bad matters into better: But being vnable to make head against the *Sarazins*, hee gaue his minde to gather a huge masse of money. Afterward, by the Treason of *Zoa* his wife, and her Adulterate companion: he was drowned as he bathed himselfe in his stoue, or Hot-house.

1019

Michaell the *Paphlagon*, the Adulterat friend of *Zoa* the Emperesse, and who had suffocated her husband *Argyropilus*, bathing in his stoue: was by her made Emperoz of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1034. He had bene a seruant-stranger, hauing his head very unfashionable, and euerie houre he was subiect to the falling sicknesse, foaming at the mouth. In brieft, whatsoeuer deserued any respect in him, only was, that he hadde a pleasing Complexion, which made *Zoa* extreamly deate vpon him, she being well kept into age. Yet (for all this) he did not misgouerne the Emperre, but tooke truce with the King of *Egipt* for thirty yeares. He deliuered the Citty of *Edessa*, which was besieged, and was very benigne to all them of his Court; except to *Zoa*, for the horrid lewdnesse he knew by her. At length, being full of the Dropsie, he appointed *Michaell Calaphates* (the adopted sonne of his Wife *Zoa*) to be his immediate successor.

1034.

C 4

Michaell

1042.

Michaell Calaphates, the adopted son of *Zoa*, (after the death of *Michaell the P.pblagon*) presented himselfe at her feete, swearing that he intended not to hold the Empire, but in name only; and that all the power should remaine in her. By which flatteries & coynd speeches, he was made Emperour of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1042. Soone after, he laid a plot against *Zoa*, imposing falsely upon her, that she had deuised to poison him: Whereupon, her head was shauen, and she commaunded to a Monastery. But the People growing mutinous against him, made *Theodora* (sister to *Zoa*) Emperesse: repealed *Zoa* from the Monastery, pursued *Calaphates*, and plucked out both his and his sonnes eyes. He was called *Calaphates*, because his father was a maker of ships, or a Shipwright.

1042

Zoa repealed from her exile and Monastery, by the people, was re-placed in the Soueraigne State of *Constantinoples* empire, to enjoy the same with her sister *Theodora*, which was in the same yeare, when as *Michaell Calaphates* had reigned but foure moneths. Thus the bad gouernement of Emperours raised an opinion, that the Empire might be better ruled by Women, then by men. But, as a woman is euermore variable and inconsistent, according to the Poets iudgement: Euen so *Zoa* (albeit she was a woman, and aged threescore yeares) did yet neuer cheate, burne in carnall and voluptuous concupiscence. Whereupon, shee recalled *Constantine Monomachus* from exile, and taking him to be her husband, made

made him Emperour. These two women hauing then held the Empire, scarcely thre moneths.

1042

Constantine the ninth, surnamed *Monomachus*, who likewise being of the Imperiall line & race; was made Emperour by his wife *Zoa*, at *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1042. He was very carelesse, and full of his owne pleasures, and kept a beautiful Strumpet in stead of his Wife: neuertheless, hee maintained and got the victory in two great ciuill warres, and some others beside. It was then that the *Turkes* began to extend their powers very farre in *Asia*; and yet no withstanding, they were vanquished with the *Roxallians*, and *Patzinaces*, which were two Nations of the *Scythians*: *Zoa* died, being threescore and tenne yeares old: and *Constantine* being full of the gout, hauing also a plurisie, died thereof some few years after.

Theodora, sister to *Zoa*, who had formerly held the Empire of *Constantinople*, as hath bene already declared in our speaking of *Zoa*: entred upon the Empires rule againe, but alone by her selfe, after *Constantine Monomachus*, in the year 1055. and gouerned about two yeares. And we hold it no shame, to place her in the rancke and number of the Emperours, considering, that she did not declare her authority in the Empire, with an effeminate or negligent spirit: But gaue so good orders, and caried her selfe so manly, that she maintained peace and tranquillity, as well towards strangers, as among her owne people. Moreover, all goodnesse and quietnesse so abundantly flourished,

1055.

flourished in the time of her government: as no occasion can bee alleadged, neither will any man of wisdom misprize the Empire and Dominion of such a Woman. But as sicknesse (with age) did ouer-charge her, by the pleasing perswasions and remonstrances of her ordinary seruants: she made partaker with her in the Empires sway, a certaine man (some-what too aged) named *Michaell*, and then she liued not long after.

1057

Michaell, sic-named the Auncient, was Emperour of *Constantinople* after the saide *Theodora*, and onely by her meanes. Hee was renowned both for Nobility and riches: but in other affaires, concerning the support and charge of the Empire: he was very vnapt, in regard of his many years, which made him burthenous and insufficient. And when he had scarcely ruled one yeare: *Isaac Comnenes* both dismissed, and deposed him from the State of the Empire. So liuing solitarily, and like a private man: he died some after.

1058

Isaac Comnenes, was Emperour of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1058. Hee deicted from the Empire, *Michaell* the Auncient: neuerthelesse, hee was a man, valiant and couragious, renowned for his actions both in peace and war, of great spirit, but somewhat arrogant. The Patriarch of *Constantinople* gaue him good aide, in raising him to the Empires Dignity: but hee requited him very badly, so: he banished him & all his friends. He was deriued of a Noble race, diligent, ready and expeditious in al his businesse: But a disease in the side tooke him as hee was hunting, which,

growing

growing to desperation of any long life, he made himselfe a monke, instituting as Emperour *Constantine Ducas*, with the good liking and consent of the Senate and people. It is written of him, that he was so chaste, that he would not accompanie his wife after her first child: albeit his Physicians aduised him thereto, for helpe and mitigation of his disease.

1060

Constantine the tenth, called also *Ducas*, was Emperour of *Constantinople*, after the forenamed *Isaacke*, in the yeare 1060. At his first entrance there happened a great conspiracy against him, which he suppressed, but with very great difficulty. He was deuout towards God, and a good iusticer: but insatiable avarice disgraced him, for which, he was hated of his owne people, and condemned by his enemies, who did much harme to the Empire. In his time happened a strange accident, and yet no nouelty to *Constantinople*, that many Churches and houses were ouerthrowne by an Earthquake. He died aged threescore yeares, leauing *Endoxia* his wife, and three of his sonnes heires to the Empire.

1067

Endoxia and her sonnes helde the Emperie of *Constantinople*, after their father *Constantine Ducas*. This woman would haue wel gouerned the Empires affaires, if warres had not much molested her abroad. As strangers (then) came rushing in on all sides of the Empire, so was it conceiued by generall opinion, that the ablest man that coulde be, had had his hands full, in a charge of such import. And yet at length, *Endoxia* (contra-

ry

ry to her Dath and promise to hir dying husband) hauing reigned seauen moneths and some few daies: remarried with *Romaine Diogenes*, which match shee derely afterwarde repented, as being much wearied with the arrogancy of this man, who would needs gouerne all himselfe.

1068

Romaine, surnamed *Diogenes*, tooke vpon him the Empire of *Constantinople*, in the year 1068. He made warre two severall times, and in the first attempt, fortune spake him faire; but very unkindly in the second: for his people being one part slaine, and the other driven to flight, himselfe left alone (albeit an Emperour) was taken: which accident had neuer been seen before, that the Emperour of *Constantinople*, was taken prisoner in warre. And yet notwithstanding, it is said, that the Turke, *Sultan Azan* hearing those tidings, could not beleue it, but stayed his iourney some what short of him. And then sending for him, he had no sooner scene him, but he held him in honour and estimation: and giuing him great presentes, sent him backe againe at liberty, after he had concluded a peace with him. But in this interim, all things were renuersed at *Constantinople*, as it is a vsuall custome, so soone as vnwelcome newes are brought: For *Eudoxia*, was expelled, *Diogenes* dismissed, and *Michael de Constantine* chosen Emperour: who first caused the eyes of *Diogenes* to be plucked out, and afterward banished him: in which miserable estate he died, and was faine to be buried by his wife *Eudoxia*.

1071.

Michael, who was termed *Parapinacius*,

iii

in regard of the great famine that happened in his time, was made Emperour of *Constantinople* in the year 1071. He was a man altogether vnapt for so weighty a charge: for, being wholly addicted to his Booke, and to compose verses with his Scho'maister *Pjellu*, the Turkes assailed the Emperre on all sides, especially on that part of *Asia*: Whereupon, his chiefe Commanders and Captaines, (tho' in iraire constraint) made election of another Emperour ouer them, to wit; *Nicophorus Bataniat* who was the more easilie accepted of the Citizens, because they held their negligent Emperour in high disdain & contempt. I vnderstand that *Michael* was put into a Monastery, with his wife and son, and there he was made a Monk.

Nicophorus Bataniat, who was descended of the line of the Emperour *Phocas*, easily (as being the very noblest of all other) obtained the Empire when *Michael* was expelled thence. Hee tooke *Constantine*, the son of *Constantine Ducas*, whose would haue v'rped the Empire, & causing him to be shorne, aduanced him to the order of priesthood. Afterward, *Nicophorus* himselfe was deposed by the brethren of *Comnenes*, (who before had assisted him in expelling the v'rpers of the Empire) and was shut vp in a Monastery, where he liued but a short while. *Alexius Comnenes*, the younger brother, but best beloved amongst the souldiours, held the empire after him, and on the very day of Easter entered *Constantinople*, which he spoiled as an enemy.

1078

Alexius

1081.

Alexius Comnenes, Son of the Emperour *Isaac*, took on him the Empire of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1081. He went with the *Venetians* against *Robert Guiscard*, but he was repulsed and vanquished. Whereupon, he strove to hinder and breake the memorable enterprize of the *French*, for the recovery of the Holy land. But *Bohemond*, Duke of *Apulia*, leuied an Army against him, and besieged *Baudras*. Then *Alexius*, dreadeing his power, made composition with him, promising to furnish the *French* with victuals, and all other needfull things. Afterward, he erected two goodly buildings, one for more *Ouphants*, and the other for a Colledge. He was also very charitable to more aged men, discret and moderate in his manners, and not lightly induced to punish. He gaue fauour and support to all men of merite and vertue, exalting them to places of dignity. In the end, being ouerpresseled with a long sicknesse, he died in the threescore and tenth yeare of his age.

1118.

Caloian, Sonne to *Alexius*, held the Emperre after his father, in the yeare 1118. He made many warres in *Asia*, vanquishing in diuers Batels, both the *Turkes* and *Persians*, taking sundry Citties from them. He was a contrary opposite to the *Venetians* and the *French*, who were then vnited: notwithstanding, the *Venetians* took the *Iles of Rhodes*, *Samos* and *Miteline*. Hee died of the picke of a Dart, which himselfe had poisoned, smiting his hand (by chance) vpon it, as he made offer with it against a wild Boare: He aduanced all his owne friends to dignities.

Manuell

1142

Manuell, or *Emanuell*, brother, or (as some say) Sonne to *Caloian*, entred on the Empire of *Constantinople* after him, in the yeare 1142. He entreated *Conrade* Emperour of *Rome*, to lende him ayde against *Roger* king of *Scicily*, who both troubled, and would haue vsurped the Emperre, each after other, and likewise to assist him against the *Turkes*, as thus his request feuerally pretended. But *Manuell*, hauing a contrary, and another kind of leauen hid in the dole, sent *Conrades* men where they were all famished. For did it suffice him to deale thus vilely with them, but he did as much to the men sent by *Lewes* (surnamed *Gods gift*) king of *France*. So that in a short while, so great a number of the *French* perished by falshood and Treason, that the name of *Manuell* became odious among the *French*. *Roger* entred (in earnest) vpon the Countrey of *Greece*, besieged *Constantinople*, and with a gallant *brando* culled many floures of gold and siluer, out of the Emperours garden. *Manuell* offered outrage to an Ambassadoe of *Venice*, and (in one day, surprised all their Marchants, whom he had betrayed vnder the colour of peace: for which, the *Venetians* constrained him afterward, dearly to buy his owne peace. He made warre against the *Turks*, wherein he was almost taken: And after hee had reigned eight and thirty yeares, hee liued as a Monk, and died of a grievous disease.

Alexius the sonne of *Manuell*, helde the Empire after him, in the yeare 1180. vnder *Andronicus*, his cousin-germain, who then was his Tutor,

1180.

to, afterward his companion in the empire, and at last his murderer, so secretly he caused his head to be cut off, and threw his body into the Sea, he being but fifteen yeares old.

1183

Andronicus Comnenes, the sonne of *Isaake*, entered on the empire of *Constantinople*, after his cousin germain *Alexius*, whom cruelly he had caused to be murdered, in the yeare 1183. *William*, king of *Sicily*, made warre vpon him, to revenge the death of *Alexius*. And as he was assailed on all sides, *Isaacke*, surnamed the *Angell*, (contrary to all opinion) came so suddenly vpon him, that he not onely foiled him, but dejected him from the empire, and hauing seized vpon his person, he caused one of his eyes to be pulled out, and then set him vpon an Asse, with his face backward, crowning him with a wreath of rotten Garlick or Onions, and holding the stalk of one of them in his hand, in stead of a Scepter. In this order was he shewen through the City of *Constantinople*, men, women, and children, doing many iniuries vnto him, casting both dirt and filth in his face, smiting him also with stones and staves. In this manner being cruelly bruised and murdered, he was hanged vp: when yet the women would not leaue him so, but dismembred him into the smallest pieces.

1185

Isaack the Angell, took the empire on him after *Andronicus*, in the yeare 1185. He qualified the tyranic of many, and entertained magnificently *Frederick* Emperour of *Rome*, who passed into *Syria*. Hee redeemed (with a great sum of money)

mony) his younger brother *Alexius*, whoe (most unthankesfully) bereft him, both of his eyes and Empire, because he seemed to fauour the *Venetians*. He kept him likewise in prison, vntill that *Alexius*, the sonne of *Isaac*, (in despite of his uncles mallice) by tears and faire intreats, obtained succour of the *French* and the *Venetians*, where with he deliuered his Father: who very soon after died, hauing taken too much the fresh ayre, after his so long close imprisonment.

Alexius the Angell, murderer of his Brother *Isaac*, helde the Empire of *Constantinople* after him, in the yeare 1195. He was most wicked, & cruelly handled his elder brother, onely to vsurpe the Empire. The like hee would haue done to his Nephew *Alexius*, who escaping from him, was carried by Sea into *Dalmatia*, where hee found the Nobility of *France*, with *Baldwin* and the *Venetians*, whom he moued to warre against his uncle, promising them thirty thousand marks of gold, and all kind of victuals, if his imprisoned father, or himselfe, might (by their meanes) regaine the Empire. Whereupon, those valiant lords boyled saile towards *Constantinople*, and took it; hauing first broken the chain which thwarted the Sea. *Alexius*, saued himselfe by flight, *Isaac* was deliuered out of prison, who died some after: and his sonne *Alexius the younger*, was elected Emperour.

1195.

Alexius the yonger, being sonne to *Isaac*, was seated in the Empire, in the yeare 1204. by an agreement made betwene him, and the *French*.

1204

and

and *Venetians*. It is said, that then it was sought to haue the Patriarch of *Constantinople* subiect & inferior to the Pope of Rome: and that the Emperour should recompence the *French* and *Venetians*, for the damages which *Manuell* had done vnto them. But scarcely was he entred into his gouernment of the Empire, and employing his paines to accomplish his promises, when as *Murziphilus* (no noble man, yet one whom he hadde aduanced to great authoritie) killed him. And so this yong and innocent Prince died by Treason. *Murziphilus* finding his sinne much disliked, in the night time fledde away, with his Wife, his strumpets, and treasure: yet, not long after, hee was brought backe againe from *Morea*, as a Captiue to *Constantinople*, where he died miserably. By this meanes, both the Citty and empire of *Greece* remained to the *French*, and *Baldwine* was the first Emperour of the *French* nation.

Baldwine Earle of *Flanders*, was after *Alexius* the younger, elected emperour of *Constantinople*, by all the warlike souldiours of *Flaunders*, as also the Marquesse of *Montferrat*, of *Sauoy*, and of *Venice*, in the year 1205. Besore this election, there was a condition thus determined: That if the emperour (who was to be elected) should be of the *French*, the *Venetians* should make a Patriarch; as it happened. *Baldwine* then recouered all that belonged to the Empire of *Constantinople*, except *Adrianople*: which *Theodor*, kinsman to *Alexius* the murderer, held as his wiues dowry, and kept there his Empire. But as the *French* laide

1205

laide siege thereto, and were vpon the very point of surprizing it: *Baldwine* was there taken and put to death, hauing scarcely gouerned one yeare.

Henry the brother of *Baldwine*, was made Emperour after him. Hee pursued the besieging and assault of *Adrianople*, but the *Sarazins* coming to succour it, he retzred to *Constantinople*, which then he strongly fortified. He made peace and alliance with the *Vallachians*, toke their Dukes daughter in marriage, and (both farre off, and at home) guided all affaires prouidently. Hee constituted *William*, (son to *Boniface*) K. of *Thessaly*, soon after his fathers death, leauing his daughter *Iolanta* as his heyre, who was married vnto *Peter* of *Auxerre*, that succeeded him in the Empire.

1206

Peter de Courtnay, or (to speake better) of *France*, being the yongest sonne of *Lewes le gros*, and Earle of *Auxerre*, (by the meanes and right of his wife *Iolanta*, in regard that *Henry* hadde leste no heyre male) succeeded in the Empire of *Constantinople*, the yeare 1216. He returning to Rome after his Coronation, besieged *Bandras*, in fauour of the *Venetians*: But it proued in vaine, for at a gallaunt Banquet, hee was beheaded by *Theodor Lascarus*, who called himselfe Emperour of *Adrianople*, and of the *Gracians*. This trechery was performed vnder the shadow of a feigned peace, with a faithfull promise made vpon a false Oath. Others say, that *Lascarus* had laid ambushes in the Forrest of *Thessaly*, in the place called *Tempe*, and that he surpased *Peter* in such manner,

1216.

ner, shutting him vp in Captiuitie, and that so he died. His wife *Iolanta* during this his thraldom, held the Emperie two yeares.

1220.

Robert, sonne to the forenamed *Peter*, so soone as he heard the tidings of his fathers hard aduventure, departed presently from *Fraunce*, and went directly to *Constantinople*, where he was receyued as Emperour, in the yeare 1220. There hee carried himselfe valiantly, vntill such time as hee toke to wife a young Lady, who was promised & troth-plighted to a Gentleman of *Burgundy*, that neither could or would endure such a shame. But he, boldly comming into the Pallace, did cut off the Ladies nose, and threwe hir mother into the Sea, because she had been the procurer of this vniust marriage. To all which the Emperour durst not say one word, but went to Rome to receiue the Crowne: And returning thence not long after, with an intent to bee reuenged, he died of a strange disease in *Achaia*,

1228

Baldwine the second, sonne to the said *Robert*, succeeded his Father in the Empire of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1228. But because he was ouer-young, *Ercennus* King of *Jerusalem* (in title onely) was sent from *Italy*, to be toynd with him as his gouernour: whose daughter hee married, making none account of the daughter of the king of *Pontus*, whereby great warres ensued. *Baldwine*, being but barely storied of money for these warres, and very hardly pressed: engaged his son to the *Venetians*, and to the King *S. Lewes*, a pice of the true Crosse, as it was reported to be, and

and many precious Reliques of the Church. So leuying a great Army, he planted it at the entrance of the strait of *Constantinople*: But in the meane while (by secret intelligence) *Michaell Paleologus* had gotten into the Citty. Then *Baldwin* flying thence, with the Patriarch, betooke themselves to *Negropont*, dreading only the outward harmes, while they within were ten times worse. Then did the *Greekes* recouer the Empire of *Constantinople*, which the *French* hadde helde almost the space of threescore yeares.

1239.

Michaell Paleologus, hauing thus cunningly seized on the Empire, and got it into his owne possession: held it stil very manfully, for the space of two and twenty yeares. But hee ran into his peoples hatred, for making agreement with pope *Gregory* the tenth, in the Councell at *Lyons*, and acknowledging duty to him. After him, his son succeeded.

1261

Andronicus, who within a while after, toke his sonne *Michaell* to be his associate in the empire. But *Michaell* being dead, his sonne *Andronicus* the younger, made warre vpon his graundfather *Andronicus*, and compelled him to accept him as companion with him in the Empire. Whereat the Emperour *Andronicus* conceived such inward dislike, that he soone after died, hauing reigned 43. yeares.

1304.

Andronicus the younger, carried himselfe both wisely and valiantly in gouerning the Empire. He died of a burning feauer, hauing reigned 33. yeares, his sonne succeeding.

1341.

John Cantacuzen, who was Schoolmaister to *John Paleologus*, and fellow also with him in the Empires government, of whom moze shalbe said in the life of *John Paleologus*.

1341

John Paleologus, called also *Caloian*, succeeded his father in the Empire of *Constantinople*, the yeare 1341. He being very young, had for his Tutor and companion in the Empire *John Cantacuzen*, who was expelled by the seditious deuises & sleights of a man of meane birth, but yet quicke, dexterious, and full of courage, which made him the better accepted in Court: It is said also, that the ambition of the Patriarch of *Constantinople*, was thereto a great furtherance. But he being impatient at such an iniurie, made war for five yeares, against the mother of *John Paleologus*, and against *John* the said Emperour, and was the first man, that brought the *Turkes* in Armes into *Europe*. At length, *Constantinople* yeilded it selfe vnto him, and when he toke it, he did no wrong to any one, but carried himselfe as fellowe Companion of the Empire, giuing his daughter in marriage to the said Emperour *John*. Afterward, he made warre vpon the *Genowaies*, spending one while well, and another ill, hauing (neuerthelesse) with him the *Venetians*, and the men of *Arragon*. Then *John Paleologus*, whoe had bene banished, made warre vpon him, being principally ayded by the *Turkes*, and to whome hee gaue first habitation in *Europe*: by which meanes, he cunningly entred *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1357. And then *Cantacuzen* (forsaking the

the Empire) entred into a monastery, and liued there as a Monk. But *Matthew*, his sonne, saking to be Competitor with *Paleologus*, was constrained to desist. So *Paleologus*, hauing had the victory in diuers warres, died in the yeare 1384. hauing reigned sixtene yeares with his Tutor *Cantacuzen*, and 27. yeares alone by himselfe, in all 43. yeares. After him was Emperour (for the space of thre yeares) *Andronicus* the eldest sonne; who neuerthelesse is not set in the number of the Emperours.

Mannell (by some called *Emanuel*) son to the said *John Paleologus*, held the Empire of *Constantinople*, in the yeare 1387. And the most remarkable matter in his life, was that he left seauen sonnes: of which, *John* the eldest, succeeded in the Empire, in the yeare 1421.

1387.

John, eldest sonne to *Mannell*, entred on the Empire after his fathers decease. He being moze addicted to peace and quietnesse, then War, gaue his assistance in the Councell at *Ferrara*, which was after ward transferred to *Florence*, *Eugenius* the fourth, then being Pope. As Emperour of the East, he was graciously welcommed by both the Churches, the *Greek* and *Latine*, which were then made one. Returning home to his Empire, he liued no long time after, but died, not leauing any posterity of him, in the yeare 1445.

1421.

Constantine the eleauenth, and sonne of *Mannell*, after the death of his brother *John*, held the Empire, called the *Greek* Empire, in the yeare, 1445. He hauing bin King of *Morca* before, was

1445.

called *Draco*, for the cruelty which hee exercised against the *Turkes*. But when *Constantinople* was taken by *Mahomet* the second, son to *Amurath* the second: Then, all trembling, and hee retiring to a gate of the Citty, to escape by flight, was stifled to death, in the prease and confusion of people, that likewise fled away, the 29. day of May, 1453. His head was carried on the point of a Lance, to be shewn through the enemies camp in derision. And undoubtedly, it is a matter worthy note, as also of some meruaile, that *Constantinople*, edified or re-edified, enriched, and exalted by *Constantine* the first, sonne to *S. Helena*, and after the manner of *Rome*: shoulde vnder this *Constantine* the cleauenth (hauing his mother to beare the same name of *Helena* likewise) bee surprized, and kept vnder the power of the *Turkes*, euen to this instant.

(. . .)



A brieft History or summarie of the Othomans or Emperors of the *Turkes*, for the space of three hundred yeares.



Thoman, the sonne of *Orthogules*, was Empero^r of the *Turkes*, in the yeare of our Saluation 1300. He was the first of this Nation that carried this name; which he had, in regard of a Castle that he took in *Galatia*. And he was the first also, that renewed the glory and hono^r of his Nation. For these people hadde taken *Ierusalem*, in the yeare 1008. but they were conquered by the *Christians*, vnder the conduct of *Godfrey of Bullen*, and those that then remained of the *Turkes*, retired themselves to *Nicea*, hauing (neuer after) any one of renoune vntill this man; who made himselfe a Monarch, & hath the first place in the History of the *Turkes*. He was but of meane descent, yet of great spirit, cunning, dilligent, and ambitious: hauing euermore (in his hart) a desire to raigue, and ponder vpon all meanes, that thereto might best aduance him. In this high disposition, hee founde fortune very sanourable to him: for he subdued the

1300.

the greater part of *Bitinia*, & tooke many fortres nere to the *Pontick Sea*. But his very greatest honour, was, the surprising of *Sina*, a Citty anciently called *Sebastia*. He died aged, in the first yeare of *Phillip de Valois*, King of France, and *Edward the third*, King of England.

1328

Orchanes, Son to the said *Othoman*, was Emperour of the *Turkes* after his father. He would not alter a iote of this newe authoritie, no more then his father did, and whom he farre surpassed in Warlike actions. By his liberality and good carriage, he won the hearts of his people, pursuing on (very well) what his father had begunne. By his industry, vigilancie, and providence, he won the Countries of *Mysia*, *Lycania*, *Phrygia*, and *Caria*, and tooke in *Marre Prusya* (which is now called *Bursa*) and which was the abode of the Kings of *Bithynia*, where he received a hurt, whereof he died, in the first yeare of the raigne of *Io. K. of France*, *Edward the third of England* still raigning. He raigne 22. yeares, leaving *Soliman* and *Amurath* his sons and successors.

1348.

Soliman, sonne of *Orchanes*, raigne 2. yeares after his father. He made warre upon the *Greekes* passed from *Asya* into *Europe* where he vanquished the *Bulgarians*, and tooke many places from them: especially in *Thrace*, he got the Cities of *Adrianople* and *Philopolis*. Some say that he died in his fathers life time, with a fall from his horse in hunting, and that (very soone after) his father died with griefe. And this is the reason, why some doe not set him in the rank of *Turkish Emperors*.

Amu-

1350

Amurath, first of that name, and sonne to *Orchanes*, was Emperour of the *Turkes*, in the year 1350. Good Fortune attended on him, as shee did on his Graundfather, and on his own father likewise: But he was as contrary to his graundfather by the mothers side, as his father had been to his predecessour, who bereft him of a great part of *Cilicia*, by killing his sonne. *Amurath* (incited thereto by *Iohn Paleologus*) sent twelue thousand *Turkes* for service of the said *Paleologus*; which was the source and beginning of the ruine of *Constantinople*. For, being allured with the riches of *Europe*, to make another voyage, he passed (in the *Genowaies gallies*) six thousand *Turks*, vnder colour of (yet) giving fresh succour to the Emperour of *Constantinople*, and to expell his enemies out of the Empire: But it was with full intention, to vsurpe *Greece*. So he crossed the arms of the *Hellespont Sea* to *Abydos*, seizing *Calypolis*, and other Citties. Afterward, with a verie strong power, he set vpon the Emperour himselfe, who no way doubted him: Then tooke he *Serua* and *Bulgaria*, whose Princes he foiled, comming in good manner against him. But one of the followers of *Lazarus*, Despote of *Serua*, in reuenge of his Masters death (slaine in the fight) killed *Amurath* in the yeare 1378.

Baiazeth, King or Emperour of the *Turks*, first of that name, after the death of *Amurath* his father, slew his elder brother *Soliman* by Treason, and enioyed the Empire of the *Turkes* alone to himselfe. To reuenge the death of his father, he made

1378.

made warre against Marke, Lord of Bulgaria, both vanquishing and killing him, and subduing beside a great part of his country. In short while after, he ran thorough the Countries of Hungary, Albania, and Valachia, and doing great hurt unto them, took many Christians, whom he carried Prisoners into Thrace. In regard of most bold attempts in his Partiall businesse (wherein hee was both hot and sudden) hee was called *Baiazeth Hildrin*, that is to say, *Heavens Lightning*. He subdued almost all Greece, being assisted with the gifts and graces of Nature, both in body and mind. He besieged Constantinople, for the space of eight yeares, the Emperour wherof was gon into France, to require assistance, which was granted him. Nevertheless, Baiazeth had the victory ouer the French, Hungarians, Germanes, Seruians, & Mysians, at once assembled against him. And so returning to Constantinople with a fresh besieging, and finding no meanes to preserve the Empire of Constantinople: suddenly Tamberlain came against Baiazeth, and gaue him battel on mount Stella, where Pompey fought with Mithridates. Where did Tamberlain conquer him, bound him in chaines of gold, & placing him in a Cage of yron, led him in that manner thorough Asia and Syria. In which miserable estate Baiazeth died, and after his decease, we find that there was interregnum, until Mahomet one of his sons came.

1407.

Iosuah or Cyriselebes, whom some wrongly name Calapine, the eldest sonne of Baiazeth, after the foyle of his Father, was defeated of Asia by

by Tamberlain, & led Captiue to Constantinople for the Emperour, as a singular prize. But he was bled as the sonne of a Prince, and soon after (with great humanity in the Emp.) released, and sent home into Asia, where he recovered his Fathers kingdom. After, when he had well reestablished his forces, he stoutly resisted Sigismund King of Hungary, who came to assaile him, and had won diuers Provinces from him: presuming that the Turks could no way releue him, after so great an ouerthrow giuen by Tamb. But fortune spake no friendlier to Sigismund, then she had formerly don to him, when he fought against Baiazeth at Nicopolis, his people being all larded with arrows before they could fall into order of battell. For the Horsemen turned bryde euen at the first shooke & noise of the Enemy, and Cyriselebes remained conqueror, who was slaine by his brother Mustapha, otherwise called Musulman, in the very flower of his age, the yeare 1407.

Mustapha or Musulman, was Emperour of the Turks a very small time, for his brother Moyses possessed himselfe of the State, and expelled him. Somename this Mustapha, Orchanes the second; whom they tearme to be son and heire to Iosuah or Cyriselebes, and that he was slaine by Moyses, his vncle by the fathers side: but Moyses quickly did suffer his deserved punishment. For losing both goods and life together, himself was also slaine by his owne brother Mahometh. There be that write, that this Mahometh reigned next after his father Baiazeth, making no mention of Iosuah,

1408

02 *Cyriscelebes*, neither of *Mustapha* 02 *Orchanes*, no2 of *Moyse*: but after *Baiazeth*, do make his sonne *Mahometh*, presently to follow.

1409

Moyse was expelled, and put to death by his brother *Mustapha*, 02 (as others say) his nephew *Orchanes*, and some after, he was likewise slaine by his brother *Mahometh*: And these twoe (by some) are not set in ranke with the Turkish Emperors, because they are said to raigne very little time, 02 not at all.

1409

Mahometh, first of that name, brother to *Iosuah*, *Mustapha*, and the sozenamed *Moyse*, is said (notwithstanding the rest) to be Emperour of the Turkes, in the yeare 1409. There are som that do attribute only to this man, all those matters which are reported of *Iosuah* 02 *Cyriscelebes*. He ouer ran the Countries of the *Bulgarians* & *Valachians*, imposing great Tributes and Taxations vpon them. When he entred on the *Satrapes* of *Asya*, recouering all those places which *Tamberlaine* had taken. He chased out of *Galatia*, and the Countries of *Pontus* and *Cappadocia*, his owne kindred and Allies, without extending any pity, to any Princes and Lordes of his owne blood: albeit it is true, that he left some in their owne intire dwellings. Being returned into *Greece*, hee came to *Adrianople*, (the Metropolitane Citty of *Thrace*) and there he constituted the seate of his Empire, expelling thence the Christians that had there any abiding. He died in the twelfth yeare of his Empire, which is reckoned to be in the yeare 1418. leauing his sonne *Amurath* the second, to be his successor.

Amurath

1418

Amurath the second, Sonne to the sozenamed *Mahometh*, succeeded his father in the Turkish Empire, in the yeare 1418. He (vnderstanding the death of his father, and desiring to passe from *Asya* into *Thrace*) vanquished his Uncle *Mustapha*, to whom the Greeks gaue fauour and succour. He was the first, that (for the guard of his person) made election of Christian Renegados, to bee his *Ianissaries*, by the power and courage of whom, both he and his successors haue subdued almost the whole East. He assailed with his forces, and did great dammages to the Countries of *Hungaria*, *Bosnia*, *Albania*, *Valachia*, & *Greece*. He tooke *Thessalonica* from the *Venetians*. He had victory against *Ladislaus* King of *Poland*, against the Cardinall *Iulian*, and against *Huniades*. He held the Empire 02 Kingdome of the Turkes, for the space of 32. yeares, and then left it to *Mahomet* his Sonne.

1450

Mahomet the second, Emperour of the Turkes, succeeded his father *Amurath* in the year, 1450. He began his reigne as an Homicide, causing his younger Brother to be murdered, because his fathers body should not be buried alone. He was a most wicked and sinfull man, not beleauing in any God. For he would say, that his *Mahomet* was a false Prophet, like vnto himselfe, & made a mockery of the Saintes, Prophets, and Patriarches. He woon, and left the surname of *Great*, to the house of the *Ottomans*. Hee ruyned the Emperre of *Constantinople*, which he seized by assault the 29. day of May, 1453. as hath bene already ready

ready declared, in the report of the life of *Constantine* the eleauenth; together, with the Empire of *Trebisonde*. He took twelue kingdomes, & two hundred Citties, from the Christians, in the year 1479. He besieged the Isle of *Rhodes*, which was then held by the knights of *S. Iohn of Ierusalem*, but his labour was in vaine, for it was courageously defended by the said knights, & their great maister *Peter d' Aubusson*, or *d' Ambois*, a French man. At length, he died of the Collick, the fourth day after he sickened; hauing liued, 8. yeares, & reigned one and thirtie.

1481

Baiazeth, second of that name, and sonne to *Mahomet* the second, by meanes of the *Janissaries*, was made Emperour of the *Turkes*, in the year 1481. He conquered and expelled *Zizim*, his younger brother, whom the chiefeest Lordes would haue had to be Emperour: but hee beeing fled for refuge to the Isle of *Rhodes*, the great maister of the knights, sent him to King *Charles* the eight. *Baiazeth* banquished *Caraman*, and recovered all whatsoeuer hee hadde gotten from the *Turkes*, on either side of the Mount *Taurus*. He subdued *Valachia*, and so went on against the *Sultane* of *Egipt*, who was too strong for him: For, hauing receiued the fugitiue *Mamelukes*, after the death of *Caraman*, and entertaining (besides) a great number of *Arabes*, for his defence, oftentimes hee conquered and put *Baiazeth* to flight. Afterward, *Baiazeth* subiected the Inhabitants of the *Ceraunian* Mountaines, and took from the *Venetians* *Lepanto*, *Modon* and *Duraz*.

In

In the end, his youngest sonne *Selim*, whose (by means of the *Janissaries*) had gotten preferment before the eldest, and was declared to be Emperour in his fathers life time: enforced him to flight, and afterward poisoned him, in the year 1512. at the very same time, when the battell of *Rauenna* was fought, vnder the happy reigne of King *Lewes* the twelfth.

Selim hauing expelled, and after poisoned his father, because he liued too long, was Emperour of the *Turkes*, in the year 1512. To this paracide, he added the murder of his brethren *Achmet* and *Corcuthus*, and caused seauen of his nephewes to be strangled, that were the children of his brothers. He conquered and expelled the *Sophi* of *Persya*, and (in diuers battels) discomfited the two *Souldanes*, *Campson* and *Tomombens*, with the *Mamelukes* and *Arabes*. Hee added *Egipt* and *Arabia* to his Empire, and took the great *Cayro*. Then returning home to his country of *Greece*, an ulcer ingendred in his Reines, which increasing continually like a Canker, procured his death, in the eight yeare of his reygne, Anno 1519.

Soliman, whom some tearme to be the second of that name, Emperour of the *Turks*, carried that name (as is said) because he very wisely provided for all affaires, whereunto the issue of them was also as correspondent. For this name of *Soliman* (by som transposed syllables) deliuereth the name of *Salomon*, the most renowned King for wisdome. There was not any before him, nor of the

A

race

1512.

1510

race of the *Othomans*, more seuerer and valiaunt. For the deedes and warres of *Soliman*, came not one iote behinde those of his Father: hauing recovered *Syria*, banquished *Gazel* that was reuolted, and surprisid *Belgrade* and *Rhodes*; then afterward *Buda* two seuerall times, and put to the worse the Army of *Austria*, that fled away before him. And nere vnto *Buda*, had the victorie ouer *Rokandolphe*, who had a great Army. He banquished the *Spaniards* at *Castelnoua* in *Dalmatia*, and put to flight the Army by Sea, which seemed invincible. In the yeare 1543. he took *Smigonia* and *Alba Regalis*, two worthy Citties of *Hungaria*. He conquered the kingdomes of *Assyria* and *Mesopotamia*, with the Cittie of *Babylon*, that might be compared with *Memphis* and *Egypt*, conquered by his Father. He ouer-ran and wasted the frontiers of *Armenia*, *Medea* and *Persia*, and twice took *Tauris*, the principall Cittie of *Persia*, chasing the *Sophi* (farre off before him) into the mountaines. For the rest, the *Turks* themselves doe confesse, that for 200. yeares before, they neuer had Lord that was a greater Iusticer, more sober, wise, and humane, then he was. But this humanity ceased in him, when he caused his eldest sonne *Mustapha* to bee strangled, to please his Concubine *Rosa*, who desired that hir sonne *Selim* might be Emperour after his Father. Hee was repulsd by the Emperour *Charles* the first, when hee came (with a powerfull Army) to besiege the Cittie of *Vienna* in *Austria*. He besieged also the Isle of *Malta*, in the yeare 1565. whe-

1543.

1565

Of the successe of Times.

whether the *Knights of S. Iohn of Ierusalem* had retired themselves, after the surprisall of *Rhodes*. But the Isle was manfully defended by their great maister, being a Frenchman, named *Peter Parisot*, called also; *le Valette*, and *Soliman* was compelled to raise his siege. In the yeare 1566. He died in *Hungary*, at his siege before the Castle of *Sighet*, hauing reigned 47. yeares.

Selim, second of that name, Emperour of the *Turks*, succeeded in the Empire (by the meanes of *Basha Mehemet*) after the death of *Soliman* his Father in *Hungary*, which for a time was concealed, and hee entred into possession of the Empire, before the death of his Father was discovered. He subdued *Aiman* in *Arabia*, and took the Isle of *Cyprus*, in the yeare 1571. In the end, he lost his small Army, in the battell of *Lepanto*, which he had against the *Christians*, in the very same yeare 1571. But sone after, he came vpon them againe, and then renewed peace with the *Venetians* and their Common-wealth. Afterward, he recovered *Thunis* & the *Goulette*, which the king of *Spaine* had made vse of in *Africa*: And he died in the yeare 1574. hauing reigned eight yeares. But all the forenamed memorable actions, were performed by his *Bashas*, and not by himselfe: for hee (all the while) took his pleasure, being greatly giuen to women and wine.

Amurath, third of that name, and son to *Selim*, was created Emperour of the *Turks*, and enioyed the Empire after his fathers death, within eight daies, in the yeare 1574. By a cruel and

1566.

1571.

1574

barbarous custome of the Contrey, he caused his Brethren of his owne to be slaine, and two Concubines of his Fathers, whose were great with Child: to the end, that he might solely reigne alone, without feare or suspicion, and so be avoyded of all impeachments, which he wel understood might ensue by parity, and such as shoulde laye claime to the like fortune. He began his gouernment somewhat yong, being aged but 28. yeares, being a wonderfull louer of his paternall Mahometane Religion, a great Justicer, and imitator of his Grandfather *Soliman*. He tooke some cities in *Hungarie* and *Sclauonie*, which afterwarde were regained from him. Some say, that he was dull and lumpish of spirit, and fell oftentimes with the falling sicknesse, which made his face to look llemished, and of a leaden colour. He gaue himselfe to women and great feasting, for he was the father of 102. children, and yet became very grosse and corpulent. Hee died in January, 1595. the 21. yeare of his raigne, not hauing attained to fifty yeares of age.

1595.

Mahometh the third, succeeded his Father *Amurath* the third, in the yeare 1595. And to shew himselfe the sonne of his father, and no whit to degenerate from his Ancestors, he caused 19. of his brethren to be barbarously murdered, and many of his Fathers Concubines to be drowned, that were found to be great with childe after his decease, so that no child should remaine, to trouble him in his gouernment. But, as cruelty and barbarousnesse doth commonly dwell in a negligent

gent spirit, addicted to sloth and pusillanimitie: euen so, did not he any thing deseruing memory, he being wholly giuen to his bodie voluptuousnesse. He did put to death his eldest sonne, and the mother of that sonne, because they had inquired of Astrologers, how long time hee shoulde raigne. In the yeare 1603. the *Sophi* of *Persya*, regained *Tauris* and *Bages*, and those great countries, which the predecessors of this *Mahometh* had invaded, as hath bin already declared, in our report of *Selim* the first, and *Soliman* the second. He died of the Plague at *Constantinople*, in January 1604. hauing raigned nine yeares.

Achmet succeeded his father in the Emperre, being but seauenteen yeares old, in the year 1604. In the yeare 1605. he tooke *Strigonia*, and some other places in the Kingdome of *Hungaria*. It is said, that (in his Army) he causeth his Fathers dead body to be carried, embalmed and enclosed in a Coffin of Lead: holding opinion, that his military desaigns and exploits shall thereby proue the more fortunat. He hath made peace with the Emperour *Rodulphus*, and those of the house of *Austria* for fifteen yeares, which makes it therefore the more beloued, that hee will conuert his forces against the *Sophi*. He now reigneth, this yeare 1611. and (by outward appearance) couets to be feared.

1604

A brieft Discourse concer-

ning the Sarrazins, the Originall of their name,
and what People they haue been, euen to this day.



Having deliuered a shorte Sur-
uer of the Turkish Ottomans,
from their first King or Empero:
to the man that now gouernaeth:
I thought it not impertinent to
my purpose, to say somewhat al-

so of the Sarrazins, who are held to be before them,
and much more auncient then they. For list I
here to call in question, those errors committed by
Sabellicus, *Blondus*, the *Tyrian Bishop*, *Volatte-*
rannus, & many other graue Autho^{rs}, who (in their
writings) doe tearme the *Mahometists* or *Turks*
to be Sarrazins: for they neuer knewe any such
name, neither were at any time so called, but only
Mulsalmans, which is as much to say, as, peo-
ple faithfull in the Law. Some others, who haue
thought their iudgements to be much more prege-
nant, sticke not to say: that this name of *Sara-*
zin, did come of *Sarra*, the wife of *Abraham*, of
whose race the great Prophet *Mahomet*, (inuen-
ter and deuiser of the Law or Religion, helde at
this present by the Sarrazins and *Turkes*) they
say was descended. But this opinion likewise is
not receineable: for they desired rather to be cal-
led *Agarians*, in regard of *Agar*, handmayde to
Sarra, and mother of *Ismaeli*: or else *Ismaelites*,
because they iudged themselves to be yssued of the
said *Ismaell*, bastard son to the forenamed *Abra-*
ham. But

Mulsalmans
what it sig-
nifieth.

Whence the
Sarrazins de-
rive they
deriue.

Of the Suecesse of Times. 103

But let vs leaue these false etymologies, which
neither carry or yeld any true likelihood, & come
to the very Originall of the name Sarazin. The
error grew from hence, that some short while be-
fore *Mahomet* (or *Muhamet*, as others tearme
him) arose, and began to extend himselfe as well
towards *Suria* as *Persya*: there liued then in the
Rocky *Arabia* and *Idumea*, certain *Arabes*, who
made their abode or dwelling (and yet doe to this
day) vnder small Tents or enclosures, and hadde
not any other trade or maintenance for their li-
uing, but by thefts and robberies, which they dai-
ly exercised vpon all passengers, were they *Turks*, were people
Christians, *Pagans* or whatsoever. Of which
Robbers and Thieves, the Countrey coulde ne-
uer be freed, nor can be at this day: as such doe
faithfully affirme, who haue traualled on pilgry-
mage to Mount *Sinai* in *Ierusalem*. And the
Turkes themselves doe confesse, that when De-
uotion drew them forth on pilgrimage, to the ci-
ty of *Medinat al Nabi*, that is to say: the City
of the Prophet, situate in *Arabia felix*, where
the Sepulcher of *Mahomet* is: and when likewise
they doe yet passe thorow the very greatest soli-
tudes and deserts, as many times the *Christians*
doe: They finde them to bee peopled with these
wicked kindes of Thieves, as formerly hath bin
said, who name themselves *Sarracenis*, not in re-
gard of Religion or blood, but by an auncient ap-
pellation of the said people, of whome *Ptolomey*
makes mention, and saith, that their liuing is in
Idumea.

Sarrazins
were people
dwelling in
the desert of
Arabia, and
Idumea

Amia

*Ami, Mar-
cel, in vita
Iul, Apost,
lib, 14*

The antiqui-
ty of the Sa-
razin people

Amianus Marcellinus, in the History of *Iulian* the Apostat Emperour, makes a description of them, and saith: that Those places (more than two hundred yeares befoze the Originall of *Mahomet*, or of his *Alcoran*) were fully furnished with the said *Sarrazins*: and *Assyria* afterward, euen so farre as the Cataracts of *Nylus*, or the kingdome of *Prestor Iohn*, where they vsed the same courses, violences & thefts vpon merchants, and inhabitants of the neighboring Countries, according as the *Arabes* or *Alarbes* doe at this day. Whereupon, because that their chiefest habitation was in the Desarts and Mountaines, which are in *Arabia* and the neighbouring quarters or Countries, as *Chaldea*, *Assyria*, *Mesopotamia*, *Suria* and *Egipt*. When the *Arabes* arose with their new Religion, and had frequented the foresaid Regions: the neerer Countries supposed that these people were those former *Sarazins*, by ignorance of their Language, as also by rashnesse of some Writers, who liued then in *Suria*, and since that time in *Spaine*, seeming to haue good knowledge of those people, and therefore continually then called *Sarazins*.

Error in trans-
lation of the
Alchoran

Moreover, to confirme that vaine appellation, those Interpreters in *Spaine*, who (by commandement of *S. Bernard*) were appointed to interpret the *Alchoran*, in euery place where they found the vocable *Mulfulman*, which is as much to say in the *Arabian* tongue, as, *Peaceable*, and *faithfull towards God*: they interpreted the same *Sarracenis*, or *Sarazins*. This *Mulfulman* then

is the vocable, whereby al that belæue in the *Alcoran* will be called; whether they bee *Arabes*, *Syrians*, *Persians*, *Tartars*, *Turks*, or *Moores*.

Whosoever then would enter into any peaceable and friendly conference with them, (albeit none doe hate their name more than the *Turks*) must call them *Mulfulmans*, as we do our selues *Christians*, or faithfull people. So are they all named, by the Autho^r of the *Ismaell* or *Ismaeli- tish* race, and by their *Bashars* Prophet. After our manner, and in respect of Religion, they term a man *Mulfulmam*, and a woman *Mulfulmina*, or *Mulfulminet*: albeit some say *Mussim*, by a corrupt pronounciation. As we may well conceiue by our owne selues, who do vse to call those disguised wandrers, that walke among vs with deformed faces, and long vsauored lockes, vsing all subtle Thefts, pifieries, and legerdowmaines they can deuise, we nick-name them to be *Sarazins*, *Egiptians*, or *Gypsies*.

I thus conclude then, that when *Historians* write, that the *Sarazins* inuaded and made vse of *Rhodes*, next of *Thrace*, then of *Italy*, *Spaine*, and other Countries: it is to be vnderstood of the Orientall people and *Affricanes*, that were of the *Mahometan* Religion, because they vsed the selfe same cruelties, thefts, and robberies, as the *Sarazins* of rockie *Arabia* did. And to speak truly, all *Europe* wold (at this instant) haue bin haunted with those people, if they had not bene formerlie expelled and spoiled. It remaineth yet freshe in memory, that the great Graundfather to *Phillip* king

Sarazins will
be called
Mulfulmans

What peo-
ple are ment
by the *Sara-
zins*.

king of Spaine (not long since deceased) named *Ferdinand*, expelled them out of the Kingdom of *Granado*, with their king called *Melen*, and he bestowed six whole years together in stout wars, onely in foiling them: And then the dominion, which the *Sarazins* and *Moors* held in *Spaine*, had small conclusion. After which time, those faithlesse *Mahumetists* durst neuer presume any more upon *Spaine*, where they had held the Kingdome of *Granado* eight hundred yeares.

A great slaughter of the *Sarazins* in *Spaine*.

Another in *Italy*.

The Turks overcame the *Sarazins*.

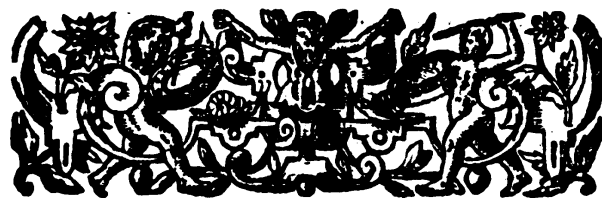
Before the said *Ferdinand*, king *Alphonso*, in the yeare of our Lord 1233. slew in diuers places aboue two hundred thousand of them, when they held strong forts and Citties in *Spaine*, which he forced them to forsake, and since then haue bene utterly ruined. *Henry* the Emperour made another great massacre of them, in the yeare of Iesus Christ 1010. in *Italy*, expelling them wholly out of that Countrey. Among the *Sarazins*, there were not only very generous persons: but likewise some men of great learning: as *Anicen*, *Mesuns*, *Isaac*, *Mansor*, *Auerroes*, and many others. Now, as all things haue their vicissitude, and alteration by courses: so after that the *Sarazins* had reigned in *Africa*, and partly in *Europe*, for about the space of eight hundred yeares, there came a people from diuers parts of *Scythia*, which at this day we call *Turks*, who in lesse than two hundred yeares, overcame in armes those people called *Sarazins*, with many other *Christians* beside, not onely in *Asya*, but in *Europe* and *Affrica*. And albeit that those *Turks* were of the same

Religion, to wit, *Mahumetists*: yet did they not abstaine from bearing and troubling them with warre, euen in like manner as they did the *Christians*. For in the yeare 1012. they took *Ierusalem* and all *Iudea* from them: but the *Sarazins* of *Egypt* recouered them againe, and held them for three hundred yeares after. Nevertheless, they were yet againe detected thence in the year 1517 by the *Turks*, the *Sarazins* losing then not onlie *Palestine*, and the Holy-land, but likewise *Egypt*, *Syria*, *Arabya*, and the very same Countrey of *Idumea*, where as the *Sarazins* had their original, and are there subiect to the *Turks* now at this instant. For *Campson* their king, lost the daie against *Selim*, Emperour of the *Turks*, and *Tomombeus* his successour, being next chosen to be king in his place, was taken, and afterward ignominiously strangled in the graund *Caire*, the very principall Cittie of *Egypt*, where we may behold the end of the *Sarazins*, not any part of them now remaining, except such few, as are in the *Turks* seruility.

The *Sarazins* last King strangled.

This short discourse giues vs to vnderstand, that *Sarazins* were not all such as are called *Mahumetists*, but they that had their beginning in the Countreies of *Idumea*, and the desert or rockie *Arabia*, and all those that (being ioined with them) commanded vnder them in diuers Countreies, rendering other Nations subiect to them by armes. Vntill such time, as they were exterminated by the people, whose Countreies they vniuersally usurped, and planted their Religion by war: as

As also (at length) by the Turkes, although they be of the same Religion. For warre is maintained among them, for desire of soueraignty and ambition, euen as well as among vs that are Christians.



A briefe Collection of the

Byshops and Popes of Rome, from the yeare 44. to this instant 1611. With the seuerall Ages of the Church, since the Ascension of our blessed Saviour Iesus Christ up into Heauen.

The years
of Grace.



44.

Our Lord Iesus Christ, the Paraclete, God and man, Messiah, Saviour of the world, Holy of holies, Soueraigne and Eternall High Priest, head of the Church.

1 Peter, called Cephas, borne in Bethsaida, the sonne of John, and first called of the Apostles, is said to hold his seat seauen yeares at Antioch, and afterward at Rome, 22. yeares, under the Empire of Claudius and Nero, who caused him to

to

to be crucified in the same place. Simon Magus, being reputed to be the first Heretique, was then condemned by him. Then was the first Council holden at Ierusalem, and then also was the first Persecution.

2 Linus, the sonne of Herculanus, born at Volterra in Tuscanie, was said to be the Disciple to S. Peter, and his Coadiutor. He held the See, eleven yeares, five Moneths, and twelue daies: And had his head smitten off vnder Nero.

57

3 Clement, the son of Romain Faustinus, first Priest of the Romain Church, was designed by S. Peter his Successour. He was banished to Pontus, and was drowned, hauing an Anchor fastened about his necke. He held the See, 29. Moneths, eleven daies. Sede vacante, 29. daies.

60

4 Cletus, son to Emilianus the Romaine, was martyred vnder Domitian. He held the See, 29. yeares, one moneth, eleven daies. Menander, Ebion and Cerinthus, were then Hereticks: And the second Persecution.

77.

The first Age.

In this first Age, liued & wrote, Philo the Jew, Dionysius Areopagita, Iosephus, and S. Ignatius. In this Age, were two seuerall Persecutions of the Church: The first vnder Nero, & the second vnder Domitian.

5 Anacletus, sonne to Aniochus the Athenian, a Priest of the Romain Church, was martyred vnder Nerva and Traian. He held the See, nine yeares, two moneths, ten daies. Vacante, thirteen daies.

84.

6 Eua-

96.

6. *Enaristus* a Greeke, Son of *Indas* the *Bethleemite* Jew: was martyzed vnder *Traiane*. He held the See, nine yeares, ten months, two daies *vacante* xij. daies. *Saturnine*, *Basilides*, and *Isidorus* Hereticks liued then: And then was the third persecution.

109

7 *Alexander*, Sonne of *Romaine Alexander*, was Martyrd vnder *Traian*. He held the See seuen yeares, ten Months, two daies, *vacante* xrb daies.

117

8 *Sixtus*, Son of *Romaine Pastor*, a Priest of the *Romaine Church*, was Martyzed vnder *Adrian*. He held the See, ten yeares, thre Moneths, and xvj. daies. *vacante* foure daies. Then liued, *Carpocrates*, *Epiphane*, and *Prodicus*, author of the *Gnosticke* Hereticks. The fourth persecution.

127.

9 *Telephorus* a Greeke, sonne to *Anachoretus*, Priest of the *Romaine Church*, was martyred vnder *Adrian*. He held the See, eleuen yeares, thre moneths, xvj. daies. *vac.* foure daies. *Aquila* of *Pontus*, the Heretick, then liued.

138.

10 *Higinus* a Greeke, son to an *Athenian* Philosopher, was Priest of the *Romain Church*, vnder the Empire of *Antoninm*. He held the see, 4. yeares, thre moneths, foure daies. *vac.* 4. daies.

243

11 *Pius* of *Aquilea*, sonne to *Ruffinus*, Priest of the *Romain church* vnder *Antoninus*: He disputed concerning the feast of *Easter*, at *Laodicia*. He held the See, nine yeares, thre Moneths, foure daies. *vacante* foure daies. Then were hereticks, *Valensinus* and his Disciples, *Marcus*, *Secundus*,

Secundus, *Bassus*, *Colarbasus* and *Heracles*.

153

12 *Anicetus* a Syrian, the sonne of *John*, martyred vnder the Emperour *Antonius verus*. He held the See, nine yeares, foure moneths, xij. daies. *vacante* xvij. daies.

13 *Sother*, sonne to *Concordius*, a Patrie of *Fundi*, vnder *Verus*. He held the See nine yeares, ij. months, two daies, *Vacante* xxi. daies. Then was *Tatian*, of whom came the *Encratites*, *Sernus* and *Ammonius* Hereticks.

171

14 *Eleutherius* of *Nicopolis*, sonne to *Habundius*, was Deacon of the *Romain Church*, vnder *Commodus*. He held the See, xv. yeares, ij. moneths, two daies, *Vacante* five daies. *Montanus* the *Phrygian*, Author of the *Cataphrises*, *Theod. Themist.* *Alexander* and *Symmachus* Heretiques then liuing.

186

15 *Victor* an *Affricane* bozne, the Sonne of *Felix*, vnder the Empero^r *Pertinax*. He helde the See ten yeares, thre months ten daies: *vacante* xxi. daies. A Synod was then at *Rome*; some Counsels in *Palestine*, concerning *Easter*. *Theodotus*, *Esclapiodotus*, *Hermopilus*, and *Apollonides*, were then Heretiques.

198

16. *Zephyrinus* a *Romaine* bozne, Sonne to *Habundius*, vnder *Antonius Caracalla*. He held the See seauen yeares, seauen months, ten daies, *vacante* five daies.

218

17. *Calixtus*, Sonne to *Domitius* a *Romayne*, was martyred vnder *Aurelius Sernus*: He helde the See six yeares, one month, tenne daies, *Vacante* vi. daies. Then was the fift persecution.

The

The second Age.

2 In this second Age, lived *Iustine* the Philosopher and Martyr: *Dionysius* Bishoppe of Corinth *S. Policarpus*, *S. Irenaeus*; *Clemens*, *Alexandrinus*, and *Tertullian*. In which Age, were three persecutions: one under *Traiane*: the second under *Marcus Antoninus*, and the thirde under *Seuerus*.

223

18 *Vrbane*, Sonne to *Pontianus* a Romaine, martyred under *Alexander*. He helde the See foure yeares, ten months, twelue dayes, vacante one month.

231

19 *Pontianus* a Romaine bozne, and sonne to *Capurnius*, dyed in exile in *Sardignia*, under *Alexander*. He helde the See nine yeares, five moneths, two daies, vacante x. daies.

236

20 *Antherus* a Greeke by birth, son to *Romulus*, martyred under *Maximinus*. He helde the See five yeares, one month, twelue daies, vacante xij. daies. Then was the first persecution.

237

21 *Fabian* a Romaine, sonne to *Fabius*, under *Maximinus*. He helde the See, fiftene yeares, eleuen dayes, vacante six daies. *Gordianus*, *Philip* and *Decius* were then martyred. The *Elcheffes*, and *Novatus* chiefe of the *Novatians*, with some *Arabian* Heretickes, were then. A Councel was holden at *Rome*, against *Novatus*: The sixteenth persecution.

251

22 *Cornelius* a Romaine, son to *Castinus* Priest of the Romaine Church, and martyred under *Decius* and *Gallus*. He helde the See two yeares, two months, three daies: vacante one moneth, and three

three daies. Then was the *Novatian* Anti-pope, and first schisme in the Church. Two Synodes were held in *Affrica*, against *Novatian*. The see being vacant, a Synode was held at *Rome*, concerning them that had denied the faith.

253.

23 *Lucius* a Romain, and sonne to *Porphyrius*, was martyred under *Gallien* and *Valerian*. He helde the See three yeares, three moneths, iij. daies, vacante one month, v. daies. Two councels were held at *Carthage*, one concerning the doubt, whether Heretiques ought to bee rebaptized: and the other about baptizing of Infantes. Two other Councels were likewise in *Asia*, upon the doubt, whether Heretiques were to be received, comming to resipiscence or knowledge of their error. Now was the eight Persecution.

255

24 *Stephen* a Romain, sonne to *Iulius*, Archdeacon of the Romain Church, martyred under *Valerian* and *Gallien*. He helde the See, 7. yeares, five moneths, and ij. daies. vacante xxij. daies. A Synode was held in *Affrica*, against *Basilides* and *Martiall*, two renegade Bishops.

257

25 *Sixtus* the second, an *Athenian* bozne, son to a Philosopher, and martyred with *S. Lawrence*, under *Valerian* and *Gallien*. He helde the See, two yeares, ten months, xxij. daies: vacante one moneth, five dayes. Then were liuing *Noëtus* and *Sabellius*, Authoꝝ of the *Sabellian* heresie, with the heretick *Paule* of *Samosata*.

260

26 *Denis* or *Dionysius*, a Monk under *Cladius* the Emperour. He helde the See, six yeares, two moneths, foure daies. vac. six daies. *Nepos* the

the Heretick then renewed the *Chilistest*, Two Synodes were at *Antioch*, against *Paule* of *Samosata*: And a Synode at *Rome*, for the cause of *Denis* of *Corinth*.

271.

27 *Felix* a *Romain*, son of *Constantius*, martyred vnder *Aurelian*: He held the see, 4. yeares, thre moneths, xv. daies. vacante. five daies. The ninth Persecution.

275

28 *Eutichianus*, sonne to *Maximus*, & borne at *Luna* in *Tuscane*, martyred vnder *Aurelian*, *Tacitus* and *Florian* Emperors: He held the See, one yeare, one Moneth, vacante eight daies. Then was *Manes*, head of the *Manichean* Heretiques.

283

29 *Caius*, the son of *Caius*, borne at *Salona*, in *Dalmatia*, martyred vnder *Carinus*, *Numerianus*, *Dioclesian* and *Maximianus* Emperors. He held the See, eleuen yeares, foure Moneths, xv. daies, vacante eleuen daies.

296

30 *Marcellinus* a *Romaine*, son to *Proiectus*, martyred vnder *Dioclesian* and *Maximianus*. He held the See, six yeares, two moneths, xvi. daies, Vacante seauen yeares, seuen moneths, and xxv. daies. Then was the tenth and bloody Persecution: And a Synode holden at *Siniessa*, for the cause of *Pope Marcellinus*.

The third Age.

3 In this third Age flourished *Origen*, *Minu-*
tius

tius *Felix*, S, *Cyprian*, S. *Gregory*, cald the worker of miracles; *Dionisius* bishop of *Alexandria*, *Victorinus*, Bishop of *Poicters*, *Arnobius*, and S. *Methodius* Bishop of *Tyre*. In this age were five persecutions. The first vnder *Maximinus*, the second vnder *Decius*, the third vnder *Valerianus* and *Gallien*, the fourth vnder *Aurelianus*, and the fifth vnder *Dioclesian*.

31. *Marcellus* a *Romaine*, the Sonne of *Bennet* or *Benedict*, Priest, Cardinall of the *Romaine* Church, vnder *Constantine*. Hee helde the See six yeares, five months, thre dayes, vacante xx. dayes.

304

32 *Eusebius* a *Greeke*, sonne to a Physician, vnder *Constantine*, He held the See four yeares, one month, thre daies, Vacante thre dayes.

310

33 *Miltiades* or *Melchiades* an *Affricane*, Cardinall Priest of the *Romaine* Church vnder *Constantine*. He held the See, foure yeares, seauen months, nine dayes, vacante xx. daies. Then was the Schisme of the *Donatists* in *Affrica*: the *Elibertine* Synod in *Spaine*; the Synod of *Rome* and of *Carthage*.

311

34. *Syluester* a *Romaine*, sonne to *Ruffinus*, Cardinall Priest vnder *Constantine*. Hee helde the See thre and twenty yeares, ten months, eleuen dayes, vacante fifteene dayes. Then were the Synodes of *Ancyra* and *Neocæsaria*: The generall Counsell of *Nice*, wherein *Arrius* was condemned, and the third Sinod holden at *Rome*.

315

35 *Marcus* a *Romaine*, the sonne of *Priscus*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Constantine*, hee helde

336

R 2

the

the *Sæ* two yeares, eight months, twenty daies, vacante twenty daies.

336

36 *Iulius* a Romaine, sonne of *Rusticius*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Constantine* and his children. Hee helde the *Sæ* fiftene yeares, two moneths, ten dayes, Vacante, two dayes. Then were the *Asterians*, *Anthropomorphites*, *Eusebians*, *Macedonians*, *Dulians*, *Luciferians*, and *Marcellian Heretiques*; with *Photinus*, *Acacius* and *Arius*: The Synodes of *Rome*, *Cullen*, *Sardis*, *Ierusalem*, and *Alexandria*.

353

37 *Liberius* a Romaine, the son of *Augustus*, a Cardinall Deacon, was sent into exile vnder *Constance*. He helde the *Sæ*, twelue yeares, three moneths, foure daies: Vacante five daies. Then was the persecution of the church by the *Arrians*, and second Schisme betwene *Liberius* and *Felix*.

355

38 *Felix* the second, a Romaine, and son of *Anastasius*, a Cardinall Deacon: was created Pope in the life time of *Liberius*, vnder *Constance* and martired by the faction of the *Arrians*. He helde the *Sæ*, one yeare, four months, two daies.

366.

39 *Damasus* a Portugize, sonne of *Antonio*, Cardinall Deacon, vnder *Valentinian*, *Valens*, *Gratian*, *Theodosius* and *Arcadius*. He helde the *Sæ* tenne yeares, three moneths, eleuen daies, Vacante xi. dayes. The third Schisme betwene *Damasus* and *Ursicinus* then happened, and Synods were held at *Rome*, in *Spaine*, and at *Valentia* in *France*. As also the *Ennomina*, *Entichian*, *Priscillianists*, *Apollonarian* and *Messalian Hereticks*.

reticks. A generall Countsell at *Constantinople*, against *Macedonius*.

384

40 *Siricius* a Romaine, son of *Tiburtius*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Arcadius* and *Honorius*. He helde the *Sæ* fiftene yeares, eleuen months, five and twenty daies, vacante xi. daies. Some Synods were then held at *Carthage*: *Heluidius*, *Dorotheus* and *Vigilantius* hereticks, were then.

The fourth age.

In this fourth Age liued *Lactantius*, *Eusebius* of *Cæsaria*, *S. Athanasius*, *Iuuenus*, *Sa. Hillarie* Bishop of *Poitiers*, *Optatus* Bishop of *Mulha*, *S. Basile*, *S. Gregory Nazianzene*, *S. Ambrose*, *S. Hierom*, *S. Iohn Chrysostome*, *S. Epiphanius*, *S. Cyrill* of *Ierusalem*, and *Martine* Archbishoppe of *Tours*.

398

41 *Anastasius* a Romaine, sonne of *Maximus* Cardinal Priest vnder *Honorius*: he helde the *Sæ* three yeares, ten daies, vacante xxi. daies. Then were the synodes of *Cyprus* and *Tollado*.

401.

42 *Innocentius* a Native of *Albania*, of *Scotland*. sonne of *Innocentius*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Honorius*: he helde the *Sæ* fifteen yeares, two months, five & twenty daies, vacante xxi. daies. The hereticks then were *Arcadius*, *Theodosius*, and *Pelagius*.

416

43 *Zosimus* of *Cappadocia*, sonne of *Abraham*, Cardinal Priest vnder *Theodosius* the younger: he helde the *Sæ* one yeare, iiij. months, vii. daies, vacante xi. daies. Then was the first synod of *Carthage*

410

44 Bonifacius a Roman, Son of Iocundus, Cardinall-Priest vnder Theodosius: he held the See thre yeares, eight months, y. dayes, vacante, nine daies. The Schisme of Eulalius Antypope.

421

45 Celestine a Romaine, Sonne of Priscus, Cardinall-Deacon: he held the See eight yeares, ten months, seauenteen daies: vacante, 21. daies. Then was the generall Councell of Ephesus, against Nestorius, vnder Theodosius.

432

46 Sixtus the third, a Romaine, and Son of Sixtus, Cardinall-Priest vnder Valentinian: hee held the See 8. yeares, eightene daies.

430

47 Leo the Great, a Romaine, sonne of Quintian, Cardinall Arch-Deacon vnder Theodosius: he held the See one yeare, one month, 13. daies vacante, 8. daies. Then was the generall Councell of Chalcedon, against Dioscorus and Eutichus.

441

48 Hillarius, borne in Sardignia, son of Crispinus, Cardinall-deacon vnder the Empire of Leo. He held the See 7. yeares, thre months ten daies, vacante ten daies.

447

49 Simplicius, a Patine of Tioli, sonne of Castinus, or Castorius, vnder Leo, he held the See fiftene yeares, one month, seauen daies, vacante 26. daies.

452

50 Felix the third and younger, a Romaine, son of Felix a Priest, Cardinall vnder Zeno. He held the See six yeares, cleauen monthes, seauenteene daies, vacante five daies.

51 Gelasius an Africane, sonne of Valerius, Bishop, vnder the Empire of Anastasius: hee held

held the See six yeares, eyght months, seauenteene daies, vacante seauen daies.

496

52 Anastasius the second, a Romaine, sonne of Peter, vnder Anastasius. He held the See 1. yeare, ten monthes, twenty foure daies, vacante foure daies.

The fift Age.

In this fift age liued Saint Augustine, Orosius, Cassianus, Eucherius of Lyons, Cyrillus Alexandrinus, Vicentius Lyrinensis, Socrates, Sozomenes, Theodoret, Prosper, Petrus Chrysologus, Saluianus Bishop of Marseillis, Sidonius Apollinaris, Gennadius, Petrus Diaconus, Boetius, and many others.

498

53 Symmachus, a Patine of Sardignia, Sonne of Fortunius, vnder Anastasius: he held the See fiftene yeares, six months, twenty two daies, vacante seauen daies. Then was the fift schisme between Symmachus and Laurentius, who afterward was Bishop of Nocera.

514

54 Hormisda, borne in Terra di Lauoro, or the Land of Labour, Sonne of Iustus, vnder Anastasius and Iustine: hee helde the See nine yeares, eightene dayes, vacante six daies. The Synods of Geronda, of Caesar-Augustus, and of Constantinople.

523

55 Iohn, a Patine of Tuscan, Sonne of Constantius, Cardinall-Priest vnder Iustine: Hee died in Prison at Rauenna, hauing then

bin taken by *Theodoric* king of the *Goths*; he held the See two yeares, eight months, eight & twenty daies, vacante one month.

526

56 *Felix* the fourth, a *Samnite* bozne, sonne of *Castorius*, Cardinall Priest of *S: Syluester*, vnder *Iustine* and *Iustinian*: he helde the See foure yeares, two months, thre daies, vacante thirteen daies. The second synod of *Tolledo*.

570

57 *Boniface* the second, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Sigultus*, Cardinall Priest of *S. Cecily*, vnder *Iustinian*: hee helde the See two yeares, two daies, vacante two months. The first schisme betweene *Boniface* and *Dioscorus*. Thre synodes holden at *Rome*.

590

58 *John* the second, sur-named *Mercurius*, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Proiectus*, Cardinall Priest of *S: Clement* vnder *Iustinian*: he held the See two yeares, foure months, vacante six daies.

594

59 *Agapetus* a *Romaine*, sonne of *Gordianus*, Cardinall Arch-Deacen of the *Romaine* Church vnder *Iustinian*: he held the See eleuen Months, ninfant daies, vacante one month, xix. daies. A synod holden at *Constantinople*.

595

60 *Siluerius*, bozne in *Terra di Lauoro*, sonne of *Doge Normisda*, sub-Deacen of the *Romaine* church vnder *Iustinian*: he held the See one year, five months, twelue daies, vacante six daies. When he was expelled and banished into the *Isle Pontia*, where he died. The second synode of *Orleans*.

597

61 *Vigilius* a *Romaine*, sonne of *John* that had bin *Coman*, Arch-Deacen of the *Roman* Church vnder

vnder *Iustinian*. He held the See eighteen yeares, six months, six and twenty daies, vacante thre months, five daies. The seauenth Schisme betweene *Siluerius* and *Vigilius*, and the fiftie Generall Counsell of *Constantinople* against the *Origenists*. Also the third Synod of *Orleans*.

553

62 *Pelagius* a *Romaine*, sonne of *John Vlearianus*, Arch-Deacon of the *Romaine* Church, vnder *Iustinian*: he held the See six yeares, ten months, eight and twentie daies, vacante, three months, and six and twentie daies. Two Synods at *Paris*.

561

63 *John* the third, *Catelline* a *Roman*, sonne of *Anastasys*, vnder *Iustinian* and *Iustine*: he held the See twelue yeares, cleuen months, six and twenty daies, vacante ten months, three daies. Then beganne the *Lombardes* to raigne in *Italy*.

575

64 *Bennet Bonosus*, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Boniface*, vnder *Iustine*, and *Tyberius Constantine*: he held the See foure yeares, one month, eight & twentie daies, vacante two months, ten daies.

579

65 *Pelagius* the second, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Vinigildus*, vnder *Tiberius* and *Mauritius*: hee held the See ten yeares, two months, ten daies, vacante ten months, x. daies. The Patriarchate of *Aquilea* was then transferred to *Grada*.

590

66 *Gregory* sur-named the Great, a *Romaine* Monk, and Doctor of the Church, son to *Gordianus* the Senator, and *Sylvia* a most holy woman, Arch-Deacon of the *Romaine* Church, Legate or Agent for the holy see, at *Constantinople* towards the Emperoz, called also the Apostle of the English,

lish, vnder *Tyberius*, *Manritius*, and *Phocas*, he held the see thirteene yeares, fire monthes, tenne daies, *vacante* five monthes, nine daies.

The sixt Age.

In this sixt Age flourished *Cassiodorus*, *Bennet* Abbat, *Fortunatus* Byshop of *Poitiers*, *Eugrius*, *Michaell Syngelus*, *Gregory of Tours*, and others.

604

67 *Sabinianus*, bozne in *Tuscanie*, son of *Bonus*, Cardinall-deacon, and Legate to the Emperour *Phocas* at *Constantinople*. He held the see, 1. year, 5 monthes, 9. daies, *vacante* 11. monthes 26. daies.

605

68 *Boniface* the third, a *Roman*, son of *Iohn*, Cardinall-priest vnder *Phocas*. He held the see nine monthes, *vacante* one month nine daies.

606

69 *Boniface* the fourth, bozne at *Marsia* in *Lombardy*, sonne of *Iohn* a *Whilition*, Cardinall-priest vnder *Phocas* and *Heraclius*. He held the see fire yeares, eyght monthes, thirteene daies, *vacante* seauen monthes, fiftene daies.

613

70 *Deus-dedit*, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Stephen* Subdeacon, cardinall-priest vnder *Heraclius*. He held the see thre yeares, thre monthes, 20 daies, *vacante* one moneth, 16. daies. The Synod of *Auxerre*.

617

71 *Boniface* the fift, bozne at *Naples*, sonne of *Iohn*, vnder *Heraclius*. He held the see five yeares, twenty daies, *vacante* thirteene daies.

621

72 *Honorius*, bozne in *Terr. di Lanoro*, son of *Petronius*, that had been Consul vnder *Heraclius*.

clius. Hee helde the see twelue yeares, eleuen monthes, sixteene daies, *vacante* one year, seauen monthes, thirteene daies. The foure and five synods of *Toledo*.

637

73 *Seuerinus* a *Romaine*, son of *Labiennus*, vnder *Heraclius*: he held the see one year, 2. monthes *vacante* foure monthes 29. daies.

639.

74 *Iohn* the fourth, bozne in *Dalmatia* son of *Venantius* the *Scholastick*, cardinall-deacon vnder *Heraclius*: hee helde the see one yeare, nine monthes, nine daies, *vacante* foure monthes 13. daies, the first synod of *Toledo*.

647

75 *Theodorus* a *Grecian*, sonne of *Theodorus* the Byshop, vnder *Constantine* and *Constans*, he held the see fire yeares, five monthes, 18. dayes, *vacante* one moneth 22. daies. A synod at *Rome*, and thre in *Affrica*.

647

76 *Martine* a *Tudertine*, sonne of *Fabritius*, vnder *Constans*, by whom he was banished (for the faith) to *Gersonna* in the Isle of *Pontus*, where he dyed: he held the see fire yeares, one month, 26. dayes, *vacante* one yeare, two monthes. A synod at *Rome*, another in *Spaine*, against the *Monotholites*.

654

77 *Eugenius* a *Roman*, sonne of *Rufinianus*, vnder *Constans*. He held the see two yeares, nine monthes, *vacante* foure monthes sixteene daies: synod eight of *Toledo*.

657

78 *Vitalian* a *Latine*, sonne of *Anastasius*, vnder *Constans* and *Constantine*: he held the see 14. yeares, six monthes, *vacante* one yeare, one month, 8. daies. A synod at *Chaalons*, & of *Toledo* 9. and 10

79 *Adeo*.

672

79 Adeodatus a Romain Monk, son of Iovinianus, Cardinall Priest vnder Constantine: hee held the See foure years, two months, v. daies, vacante foure months, twenty dayes. Synodes then at Hertford in England, Toledo the xi. and at Bracharenys the thirde.

676

80. Domnio or Domnus, a Romaine, sonne of Mauritius vnder Constantine: he helde the See, fve yeares, fve months, ten daies, vacante two months, sirteene daies.

679

81 Agatha, bozne at Palermo in Sicily, a monk, and sonne of Pannonius, Cardinall Priest vnder Constantine: he held the See two yeares, sir moneths, sifterne daies, vacante one yeare, fve monethes. Then was the sirt generall Counsell of Constantinople against the Monotholites.

682

82 Leo the second, a Sicillian, sonne of Paule, Cardinall Priest vnder Constantine: hee held the See one yeare, vacante eleuen months, xxi. daies. The xij. Synod of Toledo.

684

83 Bennet the second, a Romaine, and sonne of Iohn, Cardinal Priest vnder Constantine: he held the See ten months, twelue daies, vacante, two months, sifterne daies.

686

84 Iohn the fift, bozne at Antioch in Syria, son of Cyriacus, Cardinall Arch-Deacon vnder Constantine and Iustinian: he held the See one yeare, vacante two months, nineteen daies. The seauenth and eight Schisme betwene Iohn the fift, and two Anti-popes, Peter and Theodor.

688

85 Cino, or Conon, a Patue in Thrace, sonne of Bennet, Cardinall Priest vnder Iustinian: hee helde

held the See eleuen months, thre daies, vacante, two months, thre and twenty daies.

86 Sergius bozne at Antioch, sonne of Tyberius Cardinall Priest vnder Iustinian, Leontius, and Tyberius: he held the See thirteene yeares, eight moneths, and thre and twenty daies: vacante one moneth, xx. daies. The ninth Schisme, betwene Sergius, Theodor, and Paschall. Thre Synods at Toledo.

687

The seauenth Age.

In this seuenth Age, liued S. Isidore the bishop, Georgius Alexandrinus, Andoemus Byshop of Rouen, Iulianus Arch-Bishoppe of Toledo, and others.

87 Iohn the sirt a Greeke, sonne of Paturnus, or Patronus, or Petronius, vnder Tyberius: he helde the See thre yeares, thre months, vacante one month, nineteene daies. A Synod in England.

701.

88 Iohn the seauenth, a Greeke also, son of Plauto, Cardinall Deacon vnder Tyberius, and Iustinian: he held the See two yeares, seuen months, seuentene daies, vacante thre months.

705

89 Syfnnius, a Syrian, sonne of Iohn, vnder Iustinian. Hee helde the See xx. daies, vacante one month, eightene daies.

707.

90 Constantine a Syrian, sonne of Iohn, vnder Iustinian and Phillipicus: he held the See seauen yeares, twenty daies, vacante two moneths, ten daies. A Synod holden at London in England.

707

91 Gregory the seconde, a Romaine, sonne of Marcellus, Cardinall Deacon vnder Anastasius, Theodosius,

716.

Theodosius and *Leo* : he held the See xvi. yeares, nine months, eleuen daies, *vacante* one moneth. A Synod holden at *Rome*, about Images, & another synod at *Moguntia* or *Mentz* in *Allemaign*.

731.

92 *Gregory* the third, a *Syrian*, son of *Iohn*, *Cardinall* priest vnder *Leo* *Isauricus*. Hee helde the See, x. yeares, ix. months, xxiij. daies, *Vacante* viij. daies. A synod at *Augusta*, vnder *Bonifacio*.

741

93 *Zacharias* a *Greeke*, sonne of *Polycronius*, *Monke* and *Cardinall*, Priest vnder *Constantine* *Copronymus* : He held the see, x. yeares, iij. months, *Vacante* xij. dayes. Synods at *Rome*, & in *France*.

751.

94 *Stephen* the second, *Cardinall* Priest vnder *Constantine*. He held the See thre daies.

752

95 *Stephen* the third, a *Romaine*, sonne of *Constantine*, *Cardinal* Deacon vnder *Constantine* and *Leo*. He held the See v. yeares, one month, *vacante* one month.

757.

96 *Paule* a *Romaine*, son of *Constantine*, and brother to *Stephen* the third Pope, *Cardinal* Deacon vnder *Constantine* and *Leo*. He held the See x. yeares, x. months, *Vacante* one month. the tenth schisme betwixen *Paul* and *Theophylact*: synods in *Banaria*, and in *Allemayne*.

767

97 *Constantine* the second Duke *Nepefus* son, being a Lay-man, was created pope per force. But he was afterward shut vp in a Monastery, after y they had pluckt out his eyes. He held the See, four months, iij. daies *vacante*, ix. dayes. The eleuenth schisme was betwixene him and *Phillip*.

668

98 *Stephen* the fourth, a *Sicilian* Monke, the son of *Olibryus*, *Cardinall* Priest vnder *Constantine*, and

and *Leo*. He held the See, 4. yeares, v. months, xxiij. daies, *Vacante*, ix. daies. A synode was at *Rome*, to take order for ensuing schismes, and another synod was holden at *Wormes*.

99 *Adrian* a *Romain* of a most noble family, and son to *Theod* r, *Cardinal* Deacon vnder *Leo* the fourth, & *Constantine* his son. He held the See xxiij. yeares, x. months, xvi. daies. Then was the seventh general *Nicene* counsell, against the *Iconomaches*: and after that *Didier* was taken, then ended the raigne of the *Lombards*.

772

100 *Leo* the third, a *Romaine*, son of *Azzupim*, *cardinall* Priest vnder *Constantine*, 8. and *Nicophorus* : he held the See twenty yeares first, and reuealed xvi. yeares, v. months, xviij. daies, *vacante* xviij. daies. In this *Leos* time, was *Charles* the Great, king of *Fraunce*, created Empero^r of the West, to whom he fled for refuge.

796

The eighth Age.

In this eight age liued the learned venerable Bede, *S. Iohn Damascene*, *Germaine* Patriack of *Constantinople*, *Paulus Diaconus*, *Vsnardus*, and *Paulinus* of *Aquileia*.

101 *Stephen* the first, a *Roman*, son of *Inlinus Marinus*, *cardinall* Priest vnder *Lewes* the mecke Empero^r : he held the See six months, foure and twentie daies, *Vacante* xi. daies.

816

102 *Paschall* a *Romaine*, Monke and Abbot, son of *Maximus Bonofus*, *cardinall* Priest vnder *Lewes* and *Lotharius*. Hee held the See seauen yeares, thre moneths, seuentene daies, *vacante* foure daies.

817

824 103 *Eugenius* the second (sur-named the popes Father) a Romaine, son of *Boëmond*, Cardinall Arch-Bp̄iest vnder *Lewes* and *Lotharius*: he held the S^ee foure yeares, fire months, foure & fiftenty daies, vacante thre daies. The ry. Schisme betweene *Eugenius* and *Zinzinus*.

827 104 *Valensine* a Romaine, sonne of *Leontius*, Cardinall Arch-Bp̄iest vnder the same Emperors, he held the S^ee one month, tenne daies, vacante thre daies.

827 105 *Gregory* the fourth, a Romaine, sonne of *Iohn*, Cardinall Bp̄iest vnder *Lewes* and *Lotharius*. Hee helde the S^ee sixteene yeares, vacante fiftene daies. Two Synods in *Allemayne*.

844 106 *Sergius* the second, a Romaine, sonne of *Sergius*, Cardinall Arch-bp̄iest, vnder *Lotharius*: he held the S^ee thre yeares, vacante two months, fiftene daies.

847 107 *Leo* the fourth, a Romaine Donke, sonne of *Rodolphus*, Cardinall Bp̄iest vnder *Lotharius* and *Lewes* the younger: hee helde the S^ee, eight yeares, thre months, fire daies, vacante fiftene daies. The Synod of *Mentz* vnder *Rabanus*.

855 108 * *Bennet* the third, a Romaine, sonne of *Peter*, Cardinall Bp̄iest vnder *Lewes* the yonger, he held the S^ee two yeares, fire months, ix. daies, vacante fiftene daies. The ry. Schisme between *Bennet* and *Anastafius*.

858 109 *Nicholas* the Great, sonne of *Theodor*, Cardinall Bp̄iest vnder *Lewes*. He held the S^ee nine yeares, seauen months, thirteene daies, vacante seauen months.

110. *Adrian*

110 *Adrian* the second, a Romaine, sonne of *Talarus* the Bp̄shoppe, Cardinall Bp̄iest vnder *Lewes*. He held the S^ee five yeares, nine months, twelue daies: vacante twelue daies. The eight generall counsell at *Constantinople*, against *Pho-sius*.

111 *Iohn* the eight, a Romain. sonne of *Gundus* Cardinall Arch-Deacon vnder *Lewes* the younger, *Charles* the Balde, *Lewes* the Stammerer, and *Charles le Gros*. He helde the S^ee r. yeares, two daies, vacante two daies.

112 *Martine* the second, otherwise called *Marine*, borne in *Tuscane*, sonne of *Palumbas*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Charles le Gros*: He helde the S^ee one yeare, five months.

113 *Adrian* the third, a Romaine, other-wise called *Agapetus*, sonne of *Bennet*, vnder *Charles le Gros*: He helde the S^ee, two yeares, two monethes, vacante ry. daies.

114 *Stephen* the first, otherwise called *Basile*, son of *Adrian*, vnder *Charles le Gros* and *Arnould*: he held the S^ee fire yeares, eleuen dayes, vacante five dayes. A Synod at *Cullen*.

115 *Formosus* of *Portua*, sonne to *Leo*, Bp̄shop of *Portua*, vnder *Arnould*. He helde the S^ee, five yeares, fire months, vacante two months. This is the first man, that (of a Bp̄shoppe) was made Pope. The ryg. Schisme, betweene *Formosus* and *Sergius* the third, who afterward was Pope.

116 *Boniface* the first, a Romaine, sonne of *Adrian*, bp̄shop vnder *Arnould*, or *Arnulphus* Emperoz: He helde the S^ee, fire and twenty daies, vacante

859.

872

881.

884

885.

891

* This is the man that supplies the place for Pope Ioane.

Vacante fourteene daies.

896

117 Stephen the seventh, a Romaine, Sonne of Iohn the Priest, Byshoppe of Anagnia, vnder Arnulphus. He held the See one yeare, 3. months, vacante 3. daies. A synod at Tiburtium.

897

118 Romanus borne in Tuscany, Son of Constantine, who was Brother to Martina the second Pope, vnder Arnulphus. he held the see three daies, vacante eight daies.

897

119 Theodorus the second, a Romaine, sonne of Photius, vnder the Emperre of Arnulphus: he held the see twenty daies, vacante eleauen daies.

897.

120 Iohn the ninth, a Tiburtine Monk, son of Rempoaldus, Deacon of the Romain Church, vnder Arnulphus, and during the Schisme of Sergius. He helde the See two yeares, fiftene daies, vacante nine daies.

The ninth Age.

In this ninth Age liued Aymonius Monachus, Theophilact, Rabanus Maurus, Ansegisus, & Anastasius.

899

121 Bennet the fourth, a Romaine, sonne of Mammoles, vnder Lewes the fourth, son of Arnulphus: he held the see three yeares, four months, vacante six daies.

903

122 Leo the fift, borne at Ardea; he forsooke the Papacy, and became a Monk, vnder Lewes the fourth. He held the See one moneth, tenne daies.

123 Christo-

123 Christopher, a Romaine, sonne of Leo, Cardinall Priest vnder Lewes the fourth. Hee gaue ouer his dignity to Sergius the third, & made himselfe a Monk. He held the see, seven months. Ther v. Schisme betwene Leo the fift, Christopher and Sergius the third.

903

124 Sergius the thirde, a Romaine, Sonne of Bennet, one of the Carles of Tusculum, Cardinall Priest vnder Lewes the fourth. Hee held the see seauen yeares, foure monthes, six daies, vacante by daies. Two Synods at Rheimes.

903

125 Anastasius the thirde, a Roman, Son of Lucian, vnder the Empire of Conrade, Emperour. He held the see two yeares, vacante two daies.

911.

126 Lando, a Sabine borne, sonne of Timus, vnder Conrade. He held the See six months, xxi. daies, vacante xxi. daies.

913

127 Iohn the tenth of Ranenna, sonne of Iohn: Of Byshop of Bologna, he was made Arch Byshop of Ranenna, vnder Conrade and Henry, surnamed the Byrder, Emperours: hee helde the see, thirtene yeares, two monethes, and thirtene daies.

914

128 Leo the sixt, a Romaine, sonne of Christopher, vnder the fore-named Henry: he helde the See seauen moneths, fiftene daies, vacante one month.

928

129 Stephen the eight, a Romaine, Sonne of Tendemunde, vnder Henry: hee helde the See, two yeares, and one moneth, vacante tenne daies.

928

130 Iohn the xi. a Romaine, the natural son of
L 2
Sergius

930

Sergius, third Pope, one of the Carles of *Tusculum*, vnder *Henry*: He held the See, four years, ten monthes, fiftene daies, vacante twelue daies.

935

131 *Leo*, the seauenth, a Romaine, vnder *Otho* the Great, who was the first *Allemayne* Emperour. He held the See three yeares, six moneths, ten daies, vacante thre daies.

939

132 *Stephen* the ninth a Romaine, vnder the Empire of *Otho*: he helde the See three yeares, foure monthes, twelue daies, vacante ten daies.

942

133 *Martine* the third, whom some others doo tearme *Marine* the seconde, a Romaine, vnder *Otho*. Hee helde the See thre yeares, foure moneths, twelue daies, vacante twelue daies: A Synod at *Bonnonie*.

946

134 *Agapetus* the second, a Romain, vnder *Otho*: he held the See seauen yeares, nine monthes, ten daies, vacante twelue daies. Then was the *Ingelheimersan* Synod.

956

135 *John* the twelfth, a Romaine, called also *Ostavian*, the sonne of *Albericus* a Romaine Prince, an Carle of *Tusculum*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Otho*: hauing was depofed in a Synod at *Rome*: he held the See 11. years, thre monthes five daies, vacante one day.

963

136 *Leo*, a Romaine sonne of *John*, vnder *Otho*: hee helde the See, one yeare, foure monthes. The 11. Schisme after *John* the 12. between *Leo* the 8. and *Bennet* the 5.

964

137 *Bennet* the 5. a Romain Cardinall Deacon, was elected in the schisme after the death of *John* the twelfth: he forsooke the Papacy, by constraint.

straint, and was exiled to *Hamborough* in *Saxony*, where he died: he held the See one yeare, five monthes.

965

138 *John* the 11. a Romaine, sonne of *John* the Bpshop: he was Bpshoppe of *Narnia*, vnder *Otho*: He held the See six yeares, eleuen monthes, five daies, vacante 11. daies.

972

139 *Domnus* the second, *Donus*, or *Domnio*, a Roman vnder *Otho*: hee held the See one yeare, vacante two daies.

972

140 *Bennet* the 6. a Roman, sonne of *Hildebrand*, vnder *Otho*: he held the See eight yeares, six monthes, vacante five daies.

974

141 *Boniface* the seauenth, a Romaine, sonne of *Franco-Ferrutius*, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Otho* the second: he held the See seauen moneths, five daies, vacante twenty daies. The seauenth Schisme between *Boniface* the 7. and *Bennet* the 7.

975

142 *Bennet* the seauenth, a Romaine, sonne of *Deus-dedit* an Carle of *Tusculum*, Bpshoppe of *Sutrium*, vnder *Otho* the second: he held the See eight yeares, six monthes, vacante, five daies.

984

143 *John* the fourteenth, called also *Peter*, born in *Paia*, and Bpshop of the place where he was borne; vnder *Otho* the third: he helde the See, thre monthes.

985

144 *John* the 10. a Romaine, son of *Leo* Priest vnder *Otho* the third: hee held the See eight moneths, vacante seauen daies.

995

145 *John* 11. a Romain, sonne of *Robert*, vnder *Otho* the third: he helde the See ten yeares,

134 A brieſe Chronicle

ſix months, ten daies : vacante ſixe dayes.

097 146 Gregory the fiſt, a Saxon Alſemayne, cal-
led Bruno, the ſon of Otho, vnder Otho 3: he held
the ſee two yeares, ſiue moneths, ten daies. The
xviij. Schiſme, betwene this Gregory, and Iohn
the xviij. This is he, in whoſe time the Princes
Electors were firſt created in Alſemaign or Ger-
many.

998 147 Sylueſter the ſecond, a Frenchman born
in Aquitain, called Gerebert, Monk of S. Floure,
Abbot of Bobie, of Arch-biſhoppe of Rheimes, he
was made Arch-biſhop of Rauenna, a very great
Philosopher, vnder Otho 3. He held the ſee, foure
yeares, i. month, x. daies, vacante xviij. daies.

1003 148 Iohn the xviij. a Romaine, called Sicco, of
very meane deſcent, vnder Henry the ſecond. He
held the ſee ten months, vacante twenty daies.

The tenth Age.

In this tenth Age liued Ado of Vienna, Odo Ab-
bat of Clugnie, Suidas, Luitprandius, Regino,
and Wirichinde.

1003 149 Iohn the xviij. a Romaine, called Faſanus
or Faſſius, vnder Henry the ſecond: he held the
ſee foure monthes, twenty daies, vacante nine
teene dayes, A great ſynod holden in Alſemaign.

1009 150 Sergius the fourth. a Romain, called Pe-
ter, the ſonne of Martine: he held the ſee, two
yeares, and ſilteene daies, Sede vacante eyght
dayes.

1012 151 Bennet the eight, a Roman, ſon of Grego-

716

Of the Succeſſe of Times. 135

gory Earle of Tuſculum vnder Henry. Hee helde
the ſee, eleuen yeares, one moneth, thirteene
dayes. The nineteene Schiſme, betwene Bennet,
and one, whoſe name is not truly known.

152 Iohn the xix. a Romaine, and Earle of Tuſ-
culum, ſonne to Gregory, and Brother to Bennet
the eight. Pope, Biſhoppe of Portua: hee helde
the ſee foure yeares, foure months, vacante xix.
daies.

153 Bennet the ninth, a Roman, Earle of Tuſ-
culum, called Theophilact, Sonne of Albericus,
Brother to Bennet the 8, and Iohn the xix. Popes.
Cardinal Deacon vnder Conrado & Henry 3. He
held the ſee, xix. yeares, foure moneths, nine
dayes. The xx. Schiſme betwene him and Iohn
the 20. called Sylueſter the third.

154 Iohn 20. called Sylueſter the 3. a Romain,
ſon of Laurentius Biſhop of Sabina, vnder Henry
3. He held the ſee one month, xix. daies.

155 Gregory the ſixt, a Romain, called, Iohn
Gratian, ſonne of Peter Leo, Arch-Biſhop vnder
Henry 3. he held the ſee two yeares, vi. monthes.

156 Clement the 2. a Saxon Alſemayn or Ger-
maine, called Snidegerus, Biſhop of Bemburg,
vnder Henry 3. He helde the ſee, nine monthes.
vacante nine moneths.

157 Damasus 2. of Bauaria in Alſemaign, cal-
led Pope Baghiarius, biſhoppe of Breſcia: After
that Damasus the ſecond, and Bennet the ninth,
had bene depoſed, hee helde the ſee, ſixe mo-
neths, according as hee had helde it nine mo-
neths, and ſilteene daies, after Clement the ſecond.

L 4

he

he helde the See thre and twenty daies, vacante six months.

1049

158 Leo the ninth, an *Allemayne*, called *Bruno*, Count of *Hassburg*, otherwise termed *Egghisein*, sonne to *Hugh* byshop of *Toul*, vnder *Henrie* the third, and was created at *Frusina*: hee helde the See fve yeares, two months, six daies, vacante xi. months, xvi. daies.

1055

159 *Victor* the second of *Swethen*, called *Gebhard* Count of *Gaba*, sonne of *Arduignus*, byshop of *Eistat*, Counsellor to *Henry* the third, and his kinsman, as also to *Henry* the fourth his sonne, and was created at *Mentz*: he held the See two yeares, thre months, four daies, vacante four daies.

1057

160 *Stephen* the tenth, bozne in *Lorraine*, called *Fredericke*, sonne to *Gozzelon* Duke of *Lorrain*, Cardinal Arch-Deacon vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the See seaven moneths eighteene daies, vacante thirteene daies: The one and twentieth Schisme betwene him, and *Bennet* the tenth.

1058

161 *Bennet* the tenth, called *John Aninius*, son to *Guy* Count of *Tusculum*, Byshop of *Velitra*, vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the See nine moneths, twentie daies.

1058

162 *Nicholas* the second of *Sauoy*, called *Gerard* the *Burgundian*, Byshop of *Flouence*, vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the See thre yeares, six moneths, six and twenty daies, vacante xij. daies.

1061

163 *Alexander* the seconde, a *Milanois*, called *Anselme de Tadagio*, son of *Anselme* a Chanon Regular, Byshoppe of *Lucá* in *Tuscanie*, vnder *Henry*

Henry the fourth: he held the See eleven yeares, six months. The xij. Schisme between him and *Honorius* the second.

1073

164 *Gregory* the seauenth, a *Tuscane* of *Soana*, called *Hildebrand*, one of the *Pitilian* Countes, sonne to *Bonicus* Byshop of *Cluny*, Abbot of *S. Paule* at *Rome*, Cardinall Arch-Deacon, vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the See twelue yeares, one month, thre daies, vacante one yeare, foure months, seauen and twenty daies. The thre & twenty Schisme, between him, and *Clement* the third, who was an Antipope, in the times of *Victor* the third, *Urban* the second, and *Paschal* the second. And this Schisme continued to longe time.

1086

165 *Victor* the third of *Benenentum*, called *Dier*, sonne to the Prince of *Benenentum*, a Monk of Mount *Cassina*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Henry* the fourth: hee helde the See one yeare, foure months, vacante five months.

1088

166 *Vrbane* the second, a *Frenchman*, bozne at *Chastillon* in the Diocesse of *Rheimes*, called *Otho* the son of *Milo*, a Canon Regular of *Laterane*, Monk of *Cluny*, and Byshoppe of *Ostia*; vnder *Henry* the fourth: he held the See twelue yeares, foure moneths, nineteene daies, vacante thirteen daies.

The eleuenth age.

In this eleuenth Age liued *Burchardus Fulbertus*, Byshoppe of *Chartres*, *Petrus Damianus*, *Lanfran-*

*Lanfrancus, S. Anselme, Tmes B^yhop of Char-
res and Bruno, &c.*

1099

167 Paschall the second, a Tuscan of Bleda, called Rainerius, sonne of Crescentius, Monk of Cluny, Abbot of S. Laurence and S. Stephen without Rome, Priest Cardinall vnder Henry the 4. and Henry the fift: hee held the See xviij. yeares, six months, seuen dayes, vacante thre daies. Albert Arelkan, Theodorick a Romaine, & Syluester Anti-popes vnder Paschall 2. who caused the body of Clement 3. to be digged vp, and after burned which had bin buried at Rauenenna.

1118

168 Gelasius 2. a Caietane, called Iohn, sonne to Crescentius Monk of Mount Cassina, Cardinall Deacon vnder Henry the fift. He held the See, one yeare, vacante two dayes. The 24 Schisme betwene him and Gregory the eight, a Spaniard, called Maurick Bonodin.

1119

169 Calixtus a Burgundian, called Milo, otherwise Guy, son to William Count of Burgundie, Arch-bishop of Vienna vnder Henry the fift: he held the See five yeares, ten months, six daies. vacante eight yeares. The generall counsaile of Laterane against these Anti-popes, wherat were present (almost) a thousand Prelates.

1124

170 Honorius 2. a Bolognian, called Lambert de Fagnano, Chanon Regular of Laterane, Cardinall bishop of Ostia, vnder Henry and Lotharius, Saxons and Emperors. He held the See five yeares, two monthes, vacante, eight dayes. The 25. Schisme betwene him and Celestine the second.

171 Inno-

171 Innocentius 2. a Romaine, sonne of Iohn Guidon, Chanon Regular of Laterane, the first of the Cardinal Deacons vnder Lotharius of Saxony and Conrade. He held the See, fourteen yeares, seauen months, thirtene daies. The 26. Schisme betwene him and two Anti-Popes, Anacletus the second and Victor the fourth. The second generall counsell of Laterane, wherein assisted well neare a thousand bishops.

1130

172 Celestine the 2. a Tuscan, called Guy de Castello, cardinall-deacon, and afterward Cardinall priest vnder Conrade. He held the See, five months, and thirtene daies, vacante thirtene daies.

1141

173 Lucius the second, a Bolognian, called Gerard, Cecianimicus, sonne of Albert, Chanon Regular, Cardinall Priest, and Chancellour to the Apostolique See vnder Conrade: he held the See eleven months, and four dayes, vacante two daies.

1144

174 Eugenius the third, of Pisa, called Peter Bernard, a Cisteaux Monk, Scholler to S. Bernard, Abbot of S. Vincent, and S. Anastasius at Rome, vnder Conrade and Fredericke Barbarossa Emperors. He held the See, eight yeares, four months, xx. dayes, vacante two dayes.

1145

175 Anastasius the fourth, a Romain, called Conrade of Subura, sonne of Benner, Canon Regular, Abbot and Cardinall, bishoppe of Sabina, vnder Fredericke Barbarossa: he helde the See, one yeare, four months, four and twenty daies, vacante one day.

1153

176 Adrian

1154

176 *Adrian* the fourth, an Englishman, called *Nicholas Break-spere*, sonne of *Robert a Monk*, Chanon Regular and Abbot, Cardinall Bysshop of *Alba*, vnder *Barbarossa*: he helde the See iij. yeares, ten months, vacante thre daies.

1159.

177 *Alexander* the thirde, bozne at *Sienna* in *Tuscanie*, called *Rowland Bondinelli*, son of *Ranutius*, Cardinall Deacon, and afterwarde Cardinall Priest, and Chancellour of the *Romaine* church, vnder *Barbarossa*: hec helde the See xxi. yeares, nineteene daies, vacante, foureteene daies. The thirde generall counsell of *Laterane*. The seauen and twenty Schisme, beeing most great, during which tyme, against *Alexander* was created *Victor* the fourth, nexte *Paschall* the thirde, then *Calixtus* the thirde, and *Innocentius* the thirde, who (by constraint) renounced the Papacie.

1181

178 *Lucius* the thirde, a *Tuscane* of *Luca*, called *Ubaldu* *Allucingolus*, sonne of *Bonagiunta*, Cardinal Priest, and afterwarde Bishop of *Ostia*, and of *Velitra*, vnder *Barbarossa*: he helde the See foure yeares, two months, eighteene daies, vacante twelue daies.

1185

179 *Vrbane* the thirde, bozne in *Milaine*, called *Lambert Cribell*, sonne of *Iohn*, Cardinall Priest and Arch-Bysshop of *Millaine*, vnder *Barbarossa*: hec helde the See one yeare, ten months, fifteene daies, vacante eleuen daies.

1187

180 *Gregory* the eight, of *Beneuentum*, called, *Albert Spanachio*, otherwise of *Mora* Cardinall Deacon, and afterwarde Cardinall Priest, and Chancellour

Chancellor to the holy See, vnder *Barbarossa*: hec helde the See one month, seauen and twenty daies, vacante xi. daies.

181 *Clement* the thirde, a *Romain*, called *Paul* the Scholler, sonne of *Iohn*, Cardinall of *Palastrina*, vnder *Barbarossa*: he helde the See thre yeares, five months, vacante eight months.

1188

182 *Celestine* the thirde, a *Romaine*, called *Hai-cinthus Bobo*, sonne of *Peter*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Henry* the sixt: he helde the See six yeares, seauen months, eleuen daies.

1191

The twelfth Age.

In this twelfth Age lined *Sigebert*, *Zonarus*, *Cedrenus*, *Rupertus*, *St. Bernard*, *Hugo de Victor*, *Peter Lombard*, *Peter Comestor*, *Euthimius*, *Nicetas Coniates*, and diuers others.

183 *Innocentius* the thirde, of *Anagnia*, called *Lotharius*, one of the Counts of *Signia*, sonne of *Transimund*, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Henry* the sixt, *Otho* the fourth, and *Fredericke* the seconde Emperors: he helde the See eighteen yeares, viij. months, sixteene daies, vacante one day: The 4. generall counsell of *Laterane*, for reformation of the church, where a thousand Prelates were present.

1198

184 *Honorius* the thirde, a *Romaine*, called *Cenarius Sabellus*, sonne of *Amerie*, Cardinal Deacon, Chamberlaine of the church, and afterwarde Cardinall Priest vnder *Fredericke* the second: he helde the See ten yeares, seauen moneths, thirtene daies.

1216

daies, vacante one day.

1227.

185 Gregory the ninth of *Anagnia*, called *Hugolin*, one of the Counts of *Signia*: of a Cardinal Deacon: he was made Cardinal Bishop of *Ostia* vnder *Fredericke* the second: he held the see foure teene yeares, thre months, vacante one month, one day.

1247.

186 *Celestino* the fourth, a *Milanois*, cald *Gaulfridus Castellio*, of *Cardinall* Priest, was made Bishop of *Sabina* vnder *Frederick* 2. He held the see eighteene daies, vacante one yeare, nine moneths.

1243

187 *Innocentius* the fourth, borne in *Genewaie*, called *Sinibaldus de Fiesca*, a Count of *Laninum*, sonne of *Otho*, *Nice* chancelloz, was made Cardinal Priest vnder *Fredericke* the seconde, *Conrade* the fourth, *Henry* the fourth, & *William* Emperors. He held the see xi. yeares, six months, xii. daies, vacante thre daies. The generall counsell of *Lyons*, vnder *Frederick* the second.

1254

188 *Alexander* the fourth of *Anagnia*, called *Rainald*, one of the Counts of *Signia*, sonne of *Girard Retraent*, otherwile called *Phillip*, of Cardinal Deacon was made bishop of *Ostia*, & Deane of the Cardinal Bishops vnder *William*, *Richard* and *Alphonfus*. He held the see six yeares, five monthes, five daies, vacante thre months, four daies.

1261

189 *Vrbane* the fourth, a French man of *Troy* in *Champaigne*, called *Iacques Pantaleon*, Patriarke of *Ierusalem*, vnder *Richard* and *Alphonfus*: he held the see thre yeares, one month, 4 daies,

daies, vacante five monthes.

190 *Frances*, by some called *Clement*, of *Narbona*, called also *Guy* the *Grosse*, sonne of *Eulcardius*, Arch-bishop of *Narbona*, and cardinal Bishop of *Sabina*, vnder *Richard* and *Alphonfus*: he held the see five yeares, xxi. daies, vacante, two yeares, nine monthes.

1269.

191 Gregory the tenth of *Placentia*, called *Theobald* *Nicomint*, Arch-bishoppe of *Leige* vnder *Rodolphus*: He held the see foure yeares, two monthes, ten daies, vacante nine daies. The second general Counsel of *Lyons*, for recovery of the *Holy Land*.

1271

192 *Innocentius* the fifth, a *Burgundian*, called *F. Peter* of *Tarentaise*, of the Order of the preaching *freres*, of Arch-bishoppe of *Lyons*, he was made Bishop Cardinal of *Ostia*, and great *Penitentiare*, vnder *Rodolphus*. He held the see six months, two daies, vacante, nine daies.

1276.

193 *Adrian* the fifth of *Genes*, called *Othobon*, one of the Counts of *Laninum*, sonne of *Theodisius*. Brother to Pope *Innocent* the fourth, Cardinal Deacon vnder *Rodolphus*: He held the see one month, nine daies, vacante eight and twenty daies.

1276

194 *John* the one and twentieth, a *Portugais* of *Lisbone*, called *M. John Peter Iuliani*, bishop Cardinal of *Tusculanum*, vnder *Rodolphus*. He held the see eight months, vacante six monthes, seauen daies.

1276

195 *Nicholas* the third, a *Roman*, called *John*

1277

Caic-

Caietane de Vrsini, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Rodolphus*: he held the See thre yeares, eight moneths, fiftene daies, *vacante* fve moneths, xx. daies.

1281

196 *Martine* the fourth, bozne in *Tours*, called *Simon de Brie*. Cardinall Priest vnder *Rodolphus*: hee helde the See, foure yeares, one month, *vacante* thre daies.

197 *Honorius* the fourth, a *Romaine*, called, *Giacomo Sabella*, sonne of *Luke*, first, Cardinall Deacon vnder *Rodolphus*. He held the See two yeares, one day *vacante* ten months.

1288

198 *Nicholas* the fourth, a *Patue* of *Asculum*, called *F. Hieron*; a generall Minister of the *Friars* *Minor*s: he was made Cardinall Priest, afterward the *Pranestine* Bishop, vnder *Rodolphus*, and *Adolphus*. He held the See foure yeares, one month, eight daies: *vacante* two yeares, 3. moneths, two daies.

1294

199 *Celestine* the fift, bozne in *Isernia*, called *F. Peter de Morone*, sonne of *Anglerius*, vnder *Adolphus*: he voluntarily forsooke the Popedom, and was the beginner of the *Celestines* order: he held the See fve months, seauen daies, *vacante* ten daies.

1294

200 *Boniface* the eight, of *Anagnia*, called *Bennet Caietane*, sonne of *Luitfroy*, who was bozne in *Spaine*, Cardinall Deacon, afterward Cardinall Priest, vnder *Adolphus* and *Albertus*. Hee instituted the *Jubila* of an hundred yeares, and did first celebrate it, in the yeare 1300. He held the See viii. yeares, nine months, seuenteen daies,

*vacante**vacante* ten daies.

The thirteenth Age.

In this thirteenth Age lived *S. Frances*, *S. Dominicke*, *Albertus Magnus*, *Mathew Paris*, *Thomas Aquinas*, *S. Bonauenture*, *Cassilas*, *Henry of Segusium*, Cardinall of *Ostia*, *Nicholas de Lyra*, *accursius* and others.

201 *Bennet* the eleuenth, a *Treuisane*, called *F. Nicholas Bocasino*: of Generall Minister of the *Preachers* Order, was made Cardinall Priest, and afterward Bishop of *Ostia*, vnder the Emperour *Albertus*. He held the See, eight moneths, seauenteene daies, *vacante* one yeare, one month.

1303

202 *Clement* the fift, a Frenchman in *Gatcoigne* of *Burdeaux*, called *Raymond Goth*, son of *Bertrand*: of Bishop of *Cominges*, he became Arch-Bishop of *Burdeaux*, vnder *Albertus* and *Henry* the seauenth: he held the See eight yeares, ten months, fiftene daies, *vacante* two yeares, thre months, seauenteene daies. The generall Counsell of *Vienna* in *France*, for reformation of the Church.

1304

203 *John* the xxi. a Frenchman of *Gahors*, called *Iacques d'Olla*, sonne of *Amaldeo*, Cardinall Bishop of *Portua*, vnder *Lewes* the fourth of *Bauaria*: he held the See nineteene yeares, four months, *vacante* sixtene daies. The schisme betwene him and *Nicholas* the fift.

1316

204 *Bennet* the xxi. a Frenchman of *Islofa*, called

1334

called F. Jacques Forneen de Sauardun, a Cister-
aux Monk, a Divine, Byshoppe of Mirepoix,
and Cardinall Priest under Lewes the fourth.
He helde the See seauen yeares, thye monethes,
seuenteene dayes, *vacante* fifteen dayes.

1342

205 Clement the first, a French-man, borne in
Lymosine, called F. Peter Monstrie, son of Ro-
ger, Monk of Maumont, a Divine, Abbot of
Fescamp, Arch-Bishop of Arles, afterwarde of
Sens, and lastly of Rouen, Cardinall Priest under
Lewes the fourth. He celebrated the second Ju-
bilee, in the fiftieth year, 1350. And helde the See,
eightene yeares, six moneths, eightene daies.
vacante ten daies.

1353

206 Innocent the first, a French-man of Ly-
mosine, called Stephen d'Albert, Bishoppe of
Clermont, Cardinall Priest, after made byshop of
Ostia, and great Penetentiary under Charles the
fourth: he helde the See nine yeares, eight mo-
neths, and six daies, *vacante* one yeare, five mo-
neths.

1362

207 Urbane the first, a French-man of Lymo-
sine, the first, called F. Guillaume de Grisac, son
of Grimauld, Monk and Abbot of S. Victor de
Marceillis, under Charles the fourth: hee helde
the See eleuen yeares, eight months, *vacante*
seuenteene dayes.

1370

208 Gregory the eleuenth, a French-man of
Lymosine, called Peter, Earle of Beau-fort. He
was made Cardinall Deacon by Clement the
first, Pope and his Uncle. He returned to Rome
and brought the See thither agayne, which had
bin

bin at Auignon for the space of seauenty yeares.
And because the Romaines stode in some doubt,
least the See might againe bee transferred out of
Rome, after the decease of this Gregory, the ele-
uenth, they toke especiall order, that not anie
French Cardinall shoulde afterwards bee elected
Pope: which procured the most pernicious schisme
that euer had bin in the Church, and continued
for the space of fifti yeares, beginning with Cle-
ment, called the seauenth: he helde the See seauen
yeares, two months, seauen & twenty daies, *va-
cante* eleuen daies.

209 Urbane the first, a Neapolitane, called
Bartholomew Prignano, Arch-bishop of Ache-
ronia, and afterwarde of Carre, under Wence-
slaus. Hee helde the See, eleuen yeares, eyght
months, *vacante* seauenteene dayes. The nine
and twentieth Schisme, betweene him and Cle-
ment, called the seauenth, who was a French-
man of Geneva, named Robert, one of the Counts
of Geneva, Bishop of Cambray. This Urbane
the first, instituted the Jubilee of sixe and thirtie
yeares.

1378

210 Boniface the ninth, a Neapolitane, called
Peter, of Perin Tomacelli, of Cardinall deacon,
became Cardinall Priest, under Wenceslaus,
and Robert Emperors. In the yeare 1390. He
celebrated the third Jubilee instituted by his pre-
decessor: and in the yeare 1400. the fourth Jubi-
lee, after the ancient manner. In his time were
two Popes, at Auignon, Clement, called the
eleuenth, and Benne: the thirteenth: he helde the See
eleauen

1389

1407

eleauen yeares, eight months, vacante fifteene daies.

The fourteenth age.

In this foureteenth age, liued William de Nanigis, Nicephorus, Bartolus Palanudes, Iohannes Andreas, Petrarche, Franciscus Maronis, deuifer of the Sorbonne, William of Auxere, and others.

1404.

211 Innocentius 7. of Sulmona, called Cosmatus Melioratus; of Arch-bishop of Rauenna, and of Bishop of Bologna, he became Cardinal Priest, and Chamberlaine of the Church, vnder Robert Emperour: He held the see two yeares, twenty two daies, vacante twenty three daies. Bennet the thirtieth was (in his time) Pope at Auignon.

1406.

212 Gregory the twelfth, a Venetian boine, called Angelo Corrario, Patriarch of Constantinople, and Cardinall priest vnder Robert and Sigismond: He helde the see two yeares, seauen months, five daies, vacante ten daies. When was the Councell of Pisa, for auoiding of Schismes, where Gregory the twelfth, and Bennet the thirtieth, were both deposed.

1409.

213 Alexander the first, of Crete or Candie, called Peter Philargo, of the fryers-minors order, a Diuine, Arch-bishop of Millaine, and Cardinall Priest vnder Robert: hee was created in the Councell at Pisa (Bennet the thirtieth being

ing then Pope at Auignon.) And helde the see tenne monthes, eyght daies, vacante twelue daies.

214 Iohn the twenty three, a Neapolitane, called Balthazar Cossa, Cardinall Deacon, vnder Sigismond. He held the see five yeares, fifteen daies, vacante two yeares. The generall Councell was then at Constance, to take away all Schismes: where were deposed Iohn the 23. and Bennet the thirtieth again. Bennet would not obey the Councell, but with-drew himselfe into Spaine, to Paniscola: and in the same generall Councell, Gregory the twelfth (by his Atturney) renounced the Papacy. 1410.

215 Martine the first, a Romaine, called Otho Colonna, Sonne of Agapetus, Cardinall Deacon: he was elected Pope in the Councell of Constance, vnder Sigismond: he held the see foureteene yeares, three monthes, vacante two daies. In his time, after the decease of Bennet the thirtieth, Clement, called the eyght, was created as Anty-pope at Paniscola: But he forsooke the Papacy, in the yeare 1428. and (by that meanes) the twenty nine schisme ceased, which had continued fifty yeares, or thereabout. This Martine the first, in the year 1425. celebrated the first Iubilie. 1417.

216 Eugenius the fourth, a Venetian, called Gabriell Condelmere, Sonne of Angelus, a Celestine Chanon, Wyshoppe of Sienna, Cardinall Priest vnder Sigismond, Albert, and Fredericke the third. This manne helde the 1431.

the See fiftene yeares, eleuen months, one and twenty daies, *vacante* twelue daies. The counsell of Basile was then, where Eugenius was deposed: but he unwilling to obey, caused the generall Counsell of Ferrara to be assembled, wherby Counsell ended at Florence, for reduction of the Greeke Church. The 30. Schisme between Eugenius 4: and Felix the fift, called Amadeus, sometime Duke of Sauoy, who was elected in the Counsell of Basile, 1437. and was Pope ix. yeares, five months. In the end, for good of the Church, he forsooke the Papacy, and continued Cardinal byshop of Sabina, and Legate in Germany.

1447

217 Nicholas a Patrie of Luna, called Thomas de Sarzana, or Lucana, sonne of Bartholomew a Physitian, Doctor in the Arts and Divinity, of Bysh of Bologna, was made Cardinal Priest under Frederick the thirde: hee helde the See eight yeares, ninetye daies, *vacante* four daies. In the yeare 1450. he celebrated the sixte Iubilee, and the Schisme ceased by Felix the 5. renouncing the Papacy.

1455

218 Calixtus 3. a Spaniard of Valentia, called Alphonso Borgia, sonne of John: of byshoppe of Valentia, became Cardinal Priest. under Frederick the thirde: hee helde the See thre yeares 3. months, and sixteene daies, *vacante* seauenteene daies.

1458

219 Pius the seconde, borne in Sienna, called Eneas Syluius Picolomini, sonne of Syluius: of byshop of Sienna, was Cardinal Deacon, afterward Cardinal Priest under Frederick the thirde: he

he helde the See five yeares, eleuen months, xvi. daies, *vacante* xvi. daies.

1464

220 Paule the second, a Venetian, called Peter Barba, sonne of Nicholas, elect byshoppe of Vincentia, Cardinal Deacon, and afterward Cardinal Priest, under Frederick the 3. He helde the See six yeares, ten months, *vacante* eleuen daies.

1471.

221 Sixtus the fourth of Sauona, called F. Frances de Rouero, sonne of Leonard, of Minister generall of the Foyers Minors, was made Cardinal Priest, under Fredericke the thirde. He celebrated the seauenth Iubilee, in the yeare 1475. and helde the See thirtene yeares, five daies: *vacante* xii. daies.

1484

222 Innocentius the eight, borne in Geneva, called Iohn Baptista Cibo, sonne of Aaron: of Bishop of Melphes, was made Almoner. and Cardinal Priest, under Fredericke: he helde the See eight yeares, six and twentie daies, *vacante* two daies.

1490

223 Alexander the first, a Spaniard of Valencia, called Rodericke Borgia, sonne of Geffrey, Byshop of Valencia, Cardinal Deacon, after Priest, and lastly byshop of Alba, Vice-Chancellor, and Deane of the Church, under Maximilian. He celebrated the eight Iubilee, in the year 1500, and helde the See eleuen yeares, 8. daies, *vacante* four daies.

The fiftenth Age.

In this fiftenth Age liued Iohn Gerson, Eneas Syluius, Froissard, Baldus, Angelus, B. &c.

tion; Chalcondilus, Platina, Nauclerus. And not long after, Martine Luther, Iohn Eckius, More, Hofius, Iohn Caluine, &c.

1502.

224 Pius the third, a Siennois, called Fraunces Todescin Picolhomini, Sonne to the sister of Pope Pius the second, who married with Nannes: hee was Arch-bishop of Sienna, and Cardinall Deacon, vnder Maximilian: and held the See fiftene dayes, vacante twenty foure daies.

1503.

225 Iulius the second, of Sauona, called Iuliano de Rouero, sonne of Raphaell, Brother to Pope Sixtus the fourth, of Cardinall Priest, became Bishoppe of Alba, afterward Bishop of Ostia, and great Penitentiary, vnder Maximilian. Hee held the See nine yeares, three moneths, twelue dayes, vacante seauenteen dayes. The generall Councell of Laterane was then.

1503.

226 Leo the tenth, a Florentine, called Iohn de Medicis, sonne of Laurence, Cardinall Deacon, vnder Maximilian, and Charles the first: He held the see eyght yeares, eight moneths, twenty one dayes, vacante one month, seauen daies.

1522.

227 Adrian the first, a native of Vtreicht in Galia-belgica, sonne of Florent; of Bishop of Ertusa, was made Cardinall Priest, vnder Charles the first, to whom hee was Schole-maister: he held the see one yeare, eight moneths, sixe daies, vacante two moneths, foure daies.

1523.

228 Clement the seauenth, a Florentine, called Iulius de Medicis, a knight of Hierusalem, nephew

phew to Pope Leo the tenth, elected Arch-Bishoppe of Florence, Cardinall Deacon, afterward Priest & Chancellour of the Church, vnder Charles the first: he celebrated the ninth Iubilie, in the yeare 1525. And helde the see ten yeares, tenne moneths, eyght dayes, vacante fiftene daies.

229 Paule the third, called Alexander Farnese, sonne of Peter Lewes, Cardinall Deacon, was afterward Bishoppe cardinall of Tusculanum, Palastrina, Sabina, Portua, and Ostia, and Deane of the cardinals, vnder Charles the first and Ferdinand. Hee held the see fiftene yeares, nineteene daies, vacante two moneths, 29. daies. The generall councell of Trent beganne Anno. 1525.

1534

230 Iulius the third, borne at Arezza, called Iohn Maria de Monte, sonne of Vincent Arch-Bishop of Sipontum. cardinall priest, and afterward Bishop of Palastrina, vnder Charles and Ferdinand. Hee celebrated the tenth Iubilie, in the yeare 1550. and held the see thre yeares, one moneth, fiftene dayes, vacante seauenteene daies.

1550

231 Marcellus the second, a Tuscan, called Marcellus Ceruinus, sonne of Richard; of Bishoppe of Castello Nouo, hee was made cardinall priest vnder Charles the first, and Ferdinand. He held the See twenty two daies, vacante seauenteene daies.

1555

232 Paule the fourth, a Neapolitane, called Iohn Peter Caraffa, sonne of Iohn Alphonso, Count

1555

Count of Maraluma, of Archbishop of Naples, he became Cardinall Priest of Alba, Sabina, Tufculanum and Ostia, and Deane of the cardinals, vnder Charles the first, and Ferdinand: he held the See, foure yeares, two Moneths, seauen and twentie daies *vacante*; foure monethes, sixe daies.

1559

233 Pius the fourth, a Milainois, called Iohn Angelo de Medicis, sonne of Bernardino, Cardinall Priest vnder Ferdinand and Maximilian the second: he helde the See fve yeares, eleauen moneths, eight daies. *vacante* nine and twentie daies. In his time the council of Trent was concluded, an. 1563.

1566

234 Pius the fifth, an Alexandrine Lombard, of the preaching Fryers order, called F. Michael Giller, of bishop of Surrina, and Nepesina, became cardinall Priest, Graund Inquisitor, and bishop of Montreall, vnder Maximilian. He held the See six yeares, three moneths, fteene daies.

1572

235 Gregory the thirteenth, a Bolonois, called Hugo Bon-compagnio, son of Christopher, Cardinall Priest, vnder Maximilian the second, and Rodolphus the second. He celebrated the eleauenth Iubilee, in anno 1575. and helde the See fivalue yeares, xi. months, xii. daies, *vacante* eleauen daies.

1585

236 Sixtus the first, De la Marche d'Ancona, cardinall de Montalto, called F. Foeix Perer, of the Friars Minor's order, cardinall Priest vnder Rodolphus the second: He helde the See, fve yeares,

yeares, foure months, xxi. daies, *vacante* foure tene daies.

237 Vrbane the seauenth, a Romaine, called Iohn Baptista Castagna, sonne of Cosimo, cardinall of S. Marcellus, vnder Rodolphus the second: He helde the See fteene daies, *vacante* two months.

1590

238 Gregory the fourteenth, a Milanois, called Nicholas Sfondratus, cardinall of S. Cecilia vnder Rodolphus the second: He helde the See ten monethes, tenne daies, *vacante* fteene daies.

1590

239 Innocentius the ninth, a Bolognois, called Iohn Baptista Pachini, cardinall of S. quatuor, vnder Rodolphus the second, he helde the See two months, *vacante* two months.

1590

240 Clement the eight, a Florentine, called Hyppolito Aldobrandino, sonne of Syluester, Auditor of Rora, and Datary or Almoner to the Pope: was made cardinall Priest of S. Pancratia, and great Penitentiary. He was sent Legat into Poland, by Pope Sixtus the first, in the yeare 1592. He was elected Pope vnder Rodolphus the second, and held the See thirtene yeares, one moneth, fve daies, vntill the thirde of March, 1605. and then died. During his Pontificacie, which deserueth to bee noted, hee procured peace betweene the two Kings most Christian and catholicke, and the Duke of Sauoy: hee reduced Ferrara vnder obedience to the S. See: and celebrated the twelfth Iubilee, in the yeare 1600.

1592

241 Leo the xi. a Florentine likewise, called Alexan-

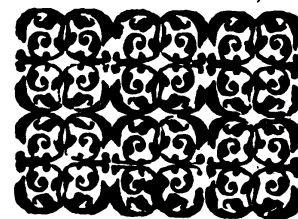
1605

Alexander de Medicis, Sonne unto Octavian, of the most famous house of the Medici, of Byschoppe of Pistoya, became Byschoppe of Florence, and Ambassadour of Fraunces de Medicis, great Duke of Tuscany, unto Pope Gregorie the thirteenth. Hee was made Cardinall, beeing entituled with Saint Quirice and Saint Iulita, after, of Saint Iohn, and Saynt Paule; and in the end, of Saint Praxedes. Beeing sent Legate into Fraunce, by Pope Clement the eyght: Hee mediated the peace with the Spanyarde: and returning to Rome, hee was made chiefe of the Congregation of Byschoppes. And the second of Aprill, 1605. hee was created Pope: But his Pontificate, was of small continuance, because he helde the See but seauen and twenty dayes onely, and dyed the seauen and twenty day of the sayde moneth; vnder the same Rodolphus the second.

1605

242 Paule the fiste, a Romaine, Original-ly descended from Sienna, called Camillo Borghese, who had beene Referendary unto eyther Signature: Vicar of the Patriarchall Church of Saint Maria Maior, Vice-Legate to Bologna, Generall Auditour of the Apostolique Chamber: and Nuntio from the See into Spayne. Hee was made Cardinall Priest of Saynt Eusebius, in the yeare of our Loide, 1596. by Pope Clement the eight, and afterward Byschoppe of Esino, in the Marchia d'Ancona. After the decease of Pope Leo the

the cleauenth. Hee was elected in his place, the sixteenth daye of May, 1605. As yet to this present yeare 1611. Hee remaineth living, and hath held the Papacie, the space of five yeares, and somewhat more.



To

¶ A briefe Collection of the Originall and
Progressse, of the Knights of the worthy Or-
der of *S. Iohn of Ierusalem*, who were after-
ward called Knights of *Rhodes*, and Knights
of *Malta*: Likewise their exploits in warre,
vnder the conduct of their Great Maysters,
from the yeare 1099. vntill this present.
With some, as briefe report also, of the
Knights Templers, and all other Orders of
knight hood thorough the world.

The Militarie Order of S. Iohn of
Ierusalem, had her byrth and firste
Originall in the holy Citty of Ie-
rusalem, and passed there her first
yeares of Infancie, with a great
part of her adolescentie. When as the Sarazins
were Masters of the holy Citty, and of the coun-
trie

try all about the sacred Sepulchre of our Lord, which was ruines about the yeare of saluation, 1012. by the commandment of Equin Califfe of the Sarrazins, and continued so ruined, untill the time of Constantine Monomachus, Emperoz of Constantinople, who at the intreaties of the christians which then dwelte in Ierusalem (with the consent of Bomenfor Elmonius Stensabua, Califfe of Soldane of Egypt) built it againe at his owne charges, in the yeare, 1048. About which time, certain Gentlemen and Italian Merchants of the Citty of Melphes, frequenting the Portes and Maritane Citties of Syria and Egypt, and bringing good Marchandizes into those Countreies, won themselves much loue and liking, not onelie of the citties Gouvernours, but also of the Califfe of Egypt: and being wel disposed christians, they would oftentimes goe to Ierusalem, to visit the holy memorabile places: and having no place of retirement in the citty, they obtained fauour and permission of the Califfe, to builde there a Church and a Hallace, for their owne vse and habitation, as also for others of their Nation, in that quarter of the citty, where the christians might dwell neere to the holy Sepulchre. There they erected two Monasteries, one in hono^r of the blessed Virgin Mary, called S. Maria de la Latina (differing from the Greeke churches which were in Ierusalem, and placed there an Abbot of Mont-Cassina) and was builde to lodge christian Pilgrims therein. The other was dedicated to S. Mary Magdalen, as a place of entertainment
of

of all such women, as should aduenture thither in pilgrimage, they being both Religiously gouerned. Not long after, they builded an Hospital, wherein to lodge as well all sickly trayailleurs, as any other Pilgrimes of honest disposition, with a Church also thereto belonging, beeing both dedicated to S. Iohn Baptist. These Monasteries, Churches, and Hospitals, were long time maintained by the care and cost of the Amalphitanes, who founded them: and untill such time as the Citty was conquered by the Christians from the Infidels, and that Godfrey of Bullen was there elected King, which was in the yeare 1099.

1. The Citty being thus wonne, F. Gerard was the first Rector or Gouvernor of the hospital of S. Iohn, who, when the Citty was besieged by the Christians, was very ill dealt with by the Infidels, & was long time (by them) kept a captiue prisoner, because they distrusted, that he had some secret intelligence with the Christians, which beleagured the Citty. But after that the Christians were maysters thereof, he was deliuered out of prison and gouerned both wisely and charitably the Hospitall of S. Iohn, perswading and inducing Christian Kinges and Princes, to enrich and endow it with their liberality, which (indeed) they did in bountifull manner, so that in France, Italy, Spaine, and other Prouinces of christendome, the Hospitall of S. Iohn, founde good Benefactors, and attained (in short time) to great reuennues and possessions. In the yeare 1113, Pope Paschall the second, receiued F. Gerard

1099

1113.

rard, and the knights of S. Iohn vnder protection of the Apostolique Seate, and graunted them great priuiledges, ordaining, that after the decease of F. Gerard, they shold proceed canonically to the election of another Rector or Gouverneur: who was afterward called Great Maister of the Order of military hospitall, of S. Iohn of Ierusalem, a name which continueth yet to this present after five hundred yeares from the beginning thereof.

1118.

The beginning of the
Knights
Templers.

2 In the yeare 1118, F. Gerard departed out of this life, in the Papacie of Gelasius the second, and when as the order of the knights Templers began. After his decease, there succeeded him by election, F. Raymond de Puy, who was a professed knight of the Order: Albeit, some holde opinion that F. Roger succeeded deceased Gerard, and gouerned the hospitall of S. Iohn, from the yeare, 1118, vntill the death of Baldwine, second of that name, King of Ierusalem, who died in the yeare, 1131. F. Raymond (in a generall Chapter, assembled in Ierusalem, with aduise of the other knights) made Statutes for the Order, formed and instituted a rule of life, which all the following knights were to obserue. Hee was called Great Maister of the Order, and yet he qualified that Title, by calling himselfe Seruant vnto the poore of Christ Iesus, and Guardian of the hospitall of Ierusalem. This Great Maister, perceiving that the reuennues of the Hospitall did daily encrease, and that hee could not better employ such wealth, then against the Infidels by making

making war vpon them: he made offer to the K. of Ierusalem, of himselfe, his strength, and all his knightly Brethren, who bare in their streamers & Ensignes, a Crosse Argent, in a fielde Gules. And thence forward, these religious brethren were distinguished into three degrees: for one company were knights, another Captains, & the third Seruants, not hauing (from the beginning) any other difference among them, but that some were Ecclesiastical persons, & the other Layicks. And from that time forward, there was not any enterprize in Palestine against the Infidels, but the Great Maister was present thereat in person, with his religious knights: who were first called knights Hospitallers, of the hospital of S. Iohn of Ierusalem, afterward, knights of the Rhodes, & lastly, knights of Malta. They grew into so great credit and reputation, that they were employed in the managing & guiding all affaires of chiefest importance. Among others, Gerard Gebert, knight of this Order, was sent by Foulkes K. of Aniou into England, to treat on the marriage of Constance (Princesse of Antioch, Sister to the D. Melisenda, & daughter to Prince Boemond) with Raymond son to the Earle of Poitiers, who was then in the Court of Henry King of England. In like manner (this marriage being thus concluded, by the ingenuity of this knight) at the same time, Raymond Berengarius, earl of Barcelona, & Prince of Cathalonia (who had conquered the isles of Maiorica & Minorica from the Moors, & in single combat) defended the chastity & hono^r of Mahauld, wife

Knights
Hospitallers
of the Hos-
pitall of
S. Iohn in
Ierusalem:
became at-
terward to
be Knights
of the
Rhodes, &
lastly
Knights of
Malta.

to the Emperour Henry the first, against two Al-
maigne knights, that had falsely accused her of
Idolatry) to shut up the conclusion of his dayes,
resolved to take the habite of this famous Bro-
therhood, and in that sacred profession, he perse-
uered al his life time after, which was in the year

1131.

1131. Not much differing from this time, it is re-
ported, that thre knights of this Order, being
natiue Frenchmen of Picardie, & detained then
by the Soldan of Egypt in captiuitie, were admi-
rably deliuered, and transported out of Egypte,
with Ismeria, daughter to the saide Soldane, to
the place where (at this instant) is the church of
Nostre Dame de Liesse, and this hapned in the
yeare, 1139. In the yeare 1153. Raymond the

1139.

Great Master, caused the siege to be continued
before the citie of Ascalon, which the Infidelles
had defended against the christians more then fiftie
yeares: and at length, it was yeilded to the
saide Master, the 12. day of August, 1154 which
was in the tenth yeare of King Baldwine the 3.
In acknowledgement of a prize so signale, and
beneficiall to all christendome, Pope Anastasius
the fourth, gaue and granted verie great priuiled-
ges, to the Order of these knights of S. Iohn of
Ierusalem, the first day of Nouember in the same
yeare, exempting them from the iurisdiction and
controule of the East Ecclesiasticall Prelates,
which was the cause of great troubles, betwene
the Bishops of the country there, and the knights
of this order: albeit the Pope and his Cardinals
maintained them still stoutly. Some haue held,
that

that this Great Master Raymond was a Florentine,
but the most credible opinion is, that hee was a
Frenchman, a Native of Daulphine, issued of
a verie Noble house, called du Puy: whereof,
namelie, Iacques Bosius the Italian (who hath
amplie written the historie of this order) is an in-
genuous witness. Hee died in the yeare, 1160.
with this reputation; that hee had bin a man of
god and vertuous life, fearing god, valiant, wise,
and aduised in the affaires of the world, and one
wel approued in warlike exercises.

3 After that Raymond was deceased, there
succeeded in the Mastership and government of
the Order, F. Auger de Balben, of whome there
is found nothing deseruing memorie: but that (in
his time) died King Baldwin the third, who was
not onlie much bemoaned of the christians, but
likewise of the Infidelles, who saide: That the
Christians had iust cause to lament for the death
of Baldwine, because they had lost a Prince, that
had not his equall in the world. This Great
Master Auger, after he had gouerned his charge
in peace and repose about thre yeares, died in the
yeare, 1162.

1160

4 Arnold de Comps, was next elected Mas-
ter in his place, who was a man of great spirit,
valour, and counsell. And in short time after his
election, he entered into Egypt, with Amauric,
the new King of Hierusalem, who made warre
upon the Califfe of Egypt; because he refused to
continue and pay the annuall tribute, wherein hee
had bound himselfe to King Baldwine the third,

1163

for a perpetuall payment to the Kinges of Hierusalem. Arnold after he had (with great wisdom and courage) gouerned the Hospitall of S. Iohn about foure yeares, died in the yeare 1167. and then succeeded him

1167.

5 Gilbert d'Assaly, or de Saily, who was of stout mind, and so liberall; that hee flowed in bounty, especially to his Souldiers, so that he fell into great expences, and wasted the whole treasure of the house. Insomuch, that hee was enforced to borrow Money at interest, with condition; that if he took from the Infidels the City of Belbeis (anciently called Pelusium) he should stand acquitted to his Brother-hood, as indeed he did, and victoriously performed his promise, the third day of Nouember, 1168. In which yeare he held a Chapter generall in Hierusalem, where perceiuing that he was greatly indebted, and had charged the Hospitall, with more than an hundred thousand Crownes of more debts; being also much grieved, that his attempts found not equall Issue to his high desires: hee determined to renounce his great Mastership, which he did in the yeare 1169.

1169

6 By his resignation, or renunciation rather, another knight was chosen Great Master, named F. Gastus, or Castus; of whom there is nothing found, that makes to any purpose of this our briefe History. And the breuity of his time of gouernment was the cause, by reason he was not a full yeare in the charge, but dyed in the very same yeare of his election, and had

F. Iou-

7 F. Ioubert, a very religious man, for his success, who in the yeare 1176. ioynded himselfe with Phillip Earle of Flanders, that was then come into Syria, to assist King Baldwine the fourth against Saladine, who had a very powerfull Army, miraculously vanquished by the Christians, that were but few in number, in the month of Nouember 1177. at which time the Emperour Frederick Barbarossa, and Pope Alexander the third were reconciled together. At length, Saladine withdrew himselfe from the Countrey of Damas, in the yeare 1179. And then dyed Ioubert Master of the Hospitallers, a man very charitable to the poore, and sickly. It is saide, that more conceite of griefe, to behold (so manifestly) the ruine of christian affaires in Syria, with the shamefull and damageable truce, made betwene the King of Ierusalem, and the Earle of Tripoli (by his example) with Saladine; was the onely cause of abridging his dayes, having gouerned the Order of Saint Iohn, about tenne yeares.

1169.

8 In his stead was elected Roger de Molins, a man of high discretion and courage. In his time happened a great dissention betwene the Prince of Antioche, and the Patriarch of the said place: and this Roger was chosen to be mediator of peace and agreement betwene them, which followed in the yeare 1181. This Roger (with Heraclius Patriarch of Ierusalem, and Arnald de Trogo, Master of the Knights Templers) was sent by the King of Hierusalem (in

1179.

B 4

quality

quality of an Ambaſſadoꝝ) into the Weſt, to require ayde of the Chriſtian Princes. Theſe Ambaſſadours were kindly entertained by the Emperour, King Phillip Auguſtus, Gods gift, ſurnamed the Conquerour, the Kings of Sicily, England, and Hungary: they returned back againe into Syria, all but the Maſter of the Templers, who dyed by the way. In the yeare 1187. the Earle of Tripoli, being leagued and confederated with Saladine; graunted him paſſage, and releued his Army with victuals. And Saladine hauing beſiedged the citty of Ptolomais, the knights of Saint Iohn and the Templers (ioyning together) diſordered the whole Army, and Roger the great Mayſter, fighting valiantlie, there dyed, with the fall of his Horſe vpon him, and ſmothered in his Armour, as alſo being much troden on with the enemies Horſes. His body being afterward found among the dead, was buried with great ioe and ſorrow. And notwithstanding this loſſe of the great Maſter; yet the knights of Saint Iohn and the Templers, won the day of battaile againſt the Turkes and Sarrazins; of whom died then in the field about fifteen thouſand, the firſt day of May, in the yeare 1187 After whom

1187

9 F. Garnier of Naples in Syria (which was the ancient citie of Sichem in Canaan) was elected great Maſter. In his time was a bloody battaile fought betwene the Chriſtians and Infidels, wherein the King of Hieruſalem (named Guy de Luſignan) was taken Priſoner, with the

the very chiefe Lordes of his Kingdome. It is ſaid alſo, that the Chriſtians had then the true Crolle in the battell, but it was taken from them by the Infidels: and almoſt all the knights of Hieruſalem, and the Templers, were one part ſlaine in the battaile, and the reſt beheaded in cold blood. F. Garnier, after he had fought verie manfully, yet being mortally wounded in many places of his body; by the goodneſſe and ſwiftneſſe of his Horſe, eſcaped into the Citty of Aſcalon: where ten daies after, hee departed into a better life, the fourteenth of July, hauing bene great Maſter but two months and ſixe daies.

10 The twenty day of the ſaide moneth of July 1187. the knights that were in Ieruſalem, choſe F. Ermingard d' Aps, to bee their Maſter. The ſecond day of October, in the ſame yeare, the Citty of Hieruſalem was ſubmitted to the power of Saladine: 88. yeares, two months and ſeauentene daies, after that it was deliuered (by Godfrey of Bullen) from the handes of the Infidels: Frederick the firſt, ſurnamed Barbaroſſa, then holding the Empire of the Weſt, and Isaac the Angell, that of the Eaſt, at Conſtantinople, Vrbane the third beeing Pope of Rome, and Phillip the ſecond, called Auguſtus, Gods Gift and Conquerour, raigning in Fraunce. Then were expelled out of Hieruſalem, the knights Hoſpitallers, Templers, and al the Latine Chriſtians, of which Chriſtians, the Hoſpitallers redeemed from captiuitie of the barbarous, to the number of two thouſand with their Honee. All the

1187

the Churches of the cittie were then polluted and prophaned, except the Temple of the Resurrection; which was bought with a great summe of Money, by the Christians of the East. After the losse of Hierusalem, the knights Hospitallers were continually in Aynes, faithfully assisting the Christian Princes, that had put on Crosses, for the recouery of the holy Land, and did actions (of high desert) at the siege of Ptolomais: which, after a long siege of three yeares, was regained from the Infidels by the Christians, the twelfth day of July, 1191. And in that Cittie, the knights of Saint Iohn kept then their ordinary aboad and residence. And in the verie same yeare, the Christians wonne a notable victorie against the Barbarians, and Saladine theyr chiefe: wherein they were worthily assisted by the knightes Hospitallers and Templers. The yeare following, beeing 1192. in Winter, dyed

1191

1192

Ermingard d'Als the great maister, in the cittie of Ptolomais, and then was chosen in his place

11 Geoffrey de Duissou. In his time there was truce taken for five yeares, betwene the Christians that were in the holy Land, and Saladine, by which meanes, many Lords and Gentlemen of diuers Nations, who had woyn the Crosse, and gotten great store of goodes and possessions: returned home to their Countreies, and gaue their goods to the Brotherhod of saint Iohn, which greatly did augment their renennewes. And after the death of Henry Carle of Champagne; the Hospitallers and Templers remay-

ned

ned governours, and administrators of the kingdome of Hierusalem: howbeit, that (by the fewer number of Christians there abiding) election was made of Amaury de Lusignan, who had succeeded the king of Ierusalem in the kingdome of Cyprus, with consent of the Patriarch, the Prelats and Barons of the Realme, in the yeare 1194. When some after died Duissou the Great Maister, and then succeeded him, by election

12 F. Alphonso of Portugall, a knight of the Order of Saint Iohn, and of the Royall house of Portugall, though it dooth not appeare certainly, to what king he was Sonne. He made very worthy and commendable statutes, whereof (to this day) there are some inviolably kept. But because he was of too stiffe nature, ouer-rough, surely and seuer: hee incurred the hatred of the greater part of the knights Hospitallers. Which was the cause that hee renounced his Maistershippe, and shipt himselfe for returne home to Portugall, in the same yeare of his election: But he dyed the first day of March, in the yeare 1207.

1194

13 The same yeare that Alphonso renounced the Great Maistershippe, to wit, in the yeare 1194. Geoffrey le Rat, who was Graund Mayor of Fraunce, was chosen Maister: And Saladine then dying, his Sonne Noradine (Lord of Alepo) succeeded him. About this time, Simon, Earle of Montfort, was sent by King Phillip Augustus, with an Army into Syria; where finding much disorder, he took truce

1194

for

1198

for tenne yeares with the Infidels, in the yeare 1198. In the tyme of this tranquile estate, there chanced a great difference, betwene the Knights Hospitallers and Templers, grounded on this occasion. The Hospitallers complayned, that the Templers had enterprised too farre vppon their iurisdiction, with much contempt and violation thereof. Which quarrell (after manie rough encounters and skirmishes) was appeased & accorded, by the interposition of king Amaury, the Patriarches of Antioch and Hierusalem, and other Princes and Christian Prelats, who compromitted this difference, in the name of Innocentius the third, which fell out very successfully. For, after that God (the onely Staffe and Stay of all affaires in the holy Land) had permitted this friendly vnyty, betwene these two military Orders of Knight-hood, king Amaury of Lusignan so preuailed, that the Great Payster and Knights of Saint Iohn, might liue with him in the Isle of Cyprus, where hee graunted the gouernment of the Kingdome to them. In the yeare 1205. King Amaury dyed, so did Quene Isabell, who appointed her Daughter Mary (which she had by Conrade of Monferrat) to be her heire, and he left her to be tutored and guided by the Knights Hospitallers and Templers. In the yeare 1260. Geoffrey le Rat, the Great Payster dyed, and then succeeded him

1205

1260

14 Guerin de Montagu, of the language of Auvergne, who (with the Knights of his order

der) ayded Lyuon, King of Armenia, against the Turkes and Barbarians, that had intruded into his Kingdome. In recompence whereof, he gaue them the citty of Salef, with the castles of Camard and new castle, and their dependances. Hee likewise recommended his heire and Kingdome, to the Knights of the Hospitall of Saint Iohn; which gift was confirmed by the Pope, the first of August 1209. Then were Iohn de Brienna, and Mary his Wife (Heire to the Kingdome) crowned King and Quene of Hierusalem. At length, in the yeare 1230. Guerin the great Payster died in the citty of Ptolomais, and during his tyme, all the Christians affaires in the holy Land, depended (very much) vppon the Knights Hospitallers and Templers: who albeit they had many contentions betwene them, yet did they still agree together (in all matters) against the Infidels. After him succeeded

1230

15 One F. Gerin, of whom no other name is found remembred. Richard Duke of Cornewal, and Brother to Henric (then King of England) arriued soone after in Palestine, with an Army of forty thousand men, and did many worthy actions there. The great Payster also, and his knights with him (bearing him company) fought valiantly against the Corasme Infidels. Where the saide Payster was taken, and sent as a Prisoner to the Soldane of Egypt, where he died, and in his place, the Knights of S. Iohn elected (in the citty of Ptolomais) for their great Payster

1240

This is mistaken, for this was K. Richard the first him-
self.

1345

19 Bertrand de Comps, in the time of Pope Innocent the fourth, and when the Generall Counsell was called at Lyons, 1245. This great Maister was present in a furious battaile, fought against the Turcomans, that wasted all the coun- try about Antioch, in the month of August, 1248 where, having receiued sundry deadly wounds, he ended his daies: And in the City of Ptolomais, on the 24. of Aug. was elected as Great maister

1248

17. Peter de Villebride. In his time, Lewes K. of France, called S. Lewes, took on him the crosse against the Infidels, with many Princes & Prelates of France, who went and besieged Damietta where they were ayded by the knightes hospitalers & Templers, and the City was soon after surrendered to K. Lewes in the yeare 1250. When did the Soldan of Egypt give battel to the christians, wherein King Lewes with his brethren, Charles and Alphonfus, the King of Cyprus, as also the Great maister, & many knights of the hospitalers & Templers, were all taken prisoners. Which surprizall, caused an attonement betwene King Lewes and the Soldane, & the hospitall knights lent mony to King Lewes, to pay his ransom. In the year 1251. Villebride the great maister dyed in the City of Ptolomais, & succeeded by election

1251

18 Guillaum de Chasteau-neuf, or de Castelnou, of the speech of Auvergne. He was a great observer of Justice, & pope Alexander 4. gave to the knights hospitallers, y castle & lands of Bethania, in the yeare, 1256. In his time, the Christians lost their vtmost hope, of any succour from the Princes

Princes of Europe: and in the yeare 1280. the Great Maister of Castelnou died, when as the Hospitall knights of S. Iohn, elected in his sted

1260

19 Hugues Reuelle, or Reuel, in the tyme of Pope Urban the fourth, who gave to the knights of S. Iohn, Mont-Tabor, 1261. and in Anno, 1262. they bought the Castle of Assur, but in the following two yeares, they took from the Sarazins a Castle named Lilion, whereupon, the Soldan of Egypt concluded, to worke the ruin of the knights Hospitallers, and (as an instance) he forcibly took from the saide knights (in the year 1265.) the Castle of Assur, at the surprizal where

1265

of, there were slaine to the number of 90. knights of S. Iohn, which greatly abated their power and repute. And in the yeare 1267. the knights hospitallers and Templers were assailed, and much confused in battaile by the Sarazins, nere to the City of Ptolomais, for they wasted and spoiled all the countrey thereabout. In the yeare also 1270 the knights of S. Iohn lost the Castle of Cracquo, which was assaulted by the Soldane, and all the knights within it, were put to the sword. It is likewise saide, that this Great Maister Reuel, assisted King Lewes in the boyage to Tunis, where the said King died of the plague, and that in the ende, about the yeare, 1278. the Great Maister Reuel ended his daies, having helde five Chapters, or assemblies of the Brother-hode of S. Iohn, wherein manie notable Statutes were made, for gouernement and reformation of the Order.

1278

20 After his decease, Nicholas Lorgus, was chosen Great Maister, who, not to swerue a lot from his predecessoꝝ (wel knowing, that nothing sooner procureth the ruine of Common-weales & Comminalties, then discorde and dissention) toke such paines, to reconcile the knights hospitallers with the Templers, that he drew them to accord, and made them good friends. In the yeare, 1282 the knights of S. Iohn, won a famous victorie against the Sarazins, who proudly came to besiege the Castle of Margate, their very principal ffortresse: which was very manfully defended by the Hospitallers, and in the ende, quitted (at composition) by the knights, who returned (with their Ensignes displayed) to the Citty of Ptolomais: And in the yeare, 1288, Lorgus the Great Maister died, with very grieve, because hee sawe the Christian affaires in the Holy land, daile to fall from il, to worse, without any means oꝝ hope of remedy.

1288

21 In the same yeare, Iohn de Villiers, a Frenchman borne, was created Great Maister of the Order. In his time, the Citty of Tripoly was taken from the Christians, by the Infidels, as (in like manner) were the citties of Sidonia & Baruth, in the yeare, 1289. all which were ransacked, ruined and burned, and the citty of Tyre brought vnder the Soldanes subiection, whereon the christians of Ptolomais were gladd to seeke their owne peace. During which time, the Great Maister went to Brundisium, with the Great Maister of the Templers, to sollicite the christian Princes

Princes of the Croisade, and the Soldane came to assaile the citty of Ptolomais, which was ver-
tuously defended, by the knights of the Hospitall and Temple, with many braue sallies forth vpon the besiegers. Especially the Great Maister Villiers, who was sore wounded, with long sustaining the whol charges of the Barbarian Infidels, the knights barricadoing themselves in a quarter of the Citty, which yet was afterward taken on Friday the 18. of May, the same yeare 1292. With this great losse, the Christians were driuen out of y^e holy land, 191. yeares ten months, & thre daies, after it had bin Conquered by Godfrey of Bullen. The Great M. with the rest of his knightes, fled (for safety) to the Isle of Cyprus, where they were very kindly entertained by the k. of the Island, who assigned to the & the Templers, the Citty of Limoson, which was a Port Towne oꝝ Hauen on the Sea. There did they inhabite, and there did the Great Maister assemble two generall Chapters, one in December, 1292. and the other in October 1293. making therein dyuers good Statutes for the Order: and in the yeare 1294. he dyed at Limoson, & then succeeded him

22 E. Odo des Pins, borne in Prouence, in the time of Pope Boniface the eyght. He incurred the hatred and disgrace of the knightes of his Order, by reason of his negligence and couetousnesse. And there was a purposed determination, to depriue him of his Great maisterhippe; but it was impeached by the Pope, to auoide scandal, and

1294

and at length he was cited to appeare at Rome in person to answer to the complaintes of the Hospitallers, and thitherward he trauailed. But before he could see Italy, he dyed by the way, in the year 1296. hauing (in the precedent yeares) held two generall Chapters at Limosson. Hee caried also along with him a manuscript Chronicle, wherein hee had appealed certaine letters of the Popes, containing excommunication, whereby he pursued and releued his owne appeale.

1296

23 The knights hearing the death of the Great Maister des Pins, elected (at Limosson) the twenty foure day of March 1296. F. Guillaume de Villaret to succeed him; who was of the same Countrey of Prouence, and Prior of S. Gilles, where he was at the time of his election. But hauing intelligence thereof, he trauailed immediately to the Kingdome of Cyprus, and governed in his charge very prudently. In his time Vsau Cassanus, King of the Tartares, became a Christian, and recouered the City of Ierusalem, where hee placed the knightes Hospitallers and Templers in Garrison, in the yeare 1300. He tooke the City of Damas likewise, but it was quickly regained by the Infidels, and the Hospitallers and Templers returned then to Cyprus againe, where the Great Maister departed out of this life, in the yeare 1308. hauing helde five generall Chapters at Limosson, and scene the utter ruine of the knights Templers.

1308

24 The great Maister being dead, Folquet de Villaret, of the same Nation of Prouence, was elected in his roome. He was a man of lue-

ly spirit and great courage, and seeing that he had attained to this Soueraigne dignity; he resolved to put in execution a matter, which (in his predecessors daies) had often bene intended, but could not any way be effected (viz.) to depart from the Isle of Cyprus, and to get a dwelling some where else, which hee very happily performed. For in Anno. 1308. the very yeare of his election, hee made a voyage to Constantinople, and afterward into France, where the Pope gaue him the Isle of Rhodes, (if he could get it) which with his knights he conquered, in the yeare 1309. and seauen other Islands nere adioyning. So that thither was the residence of saint Iohns knights transferred, and then they were afterward called, The beginning of the knights of the Rhodes knights of the Rhodes, yet keeping the same of Saint Iohn of Hierusalem still. Not long after, Otthoman, first Emperour of the Turkes, who helde their first name of S. came and besiedged Rhodes with a potent Army: but it was releued by Amadis the fourth, Johns Earle of Sauoy. and Otthoman was compelled Knights stil to raise his siege. After which time the Charles of Sauoy wore on their Armours, a Crosse Argent, in a fielde Gules, in memory of the helpe they had giuen to the knightes of the Rhodes. The order of the Templers (hauing bene utterly suppressed, in a generall Councell holden at Vienna in Dolphine) the greater part of the goods was giuen to the Order of the Rhodes, and confirmed by Pope Clement the first, 1312. In the yeare 1314. the knightes of the Rhodes conquered the Isle of Lango, with other Isles in

the Archipelagus: And in the yeare 1317. Folquet the Great Maister (pleasing his owne humour ouer much in his victories and conquestes) beganne to grow haughty, proud, and insolent, which brought him into contempt of his companions: whereupon, the knights reuolted from him, and if he had not saued himselfe in a Castel, they had seized his person. But, in regard they could not get him, they deposed him from the dignity of Great Maister, & in his place, elected

1317

25 Maurice de Pagnac, wherof Pope Iohn the twenty two, beeing aduertised, hee was greatly offended thereat, and sent two Bishops to the Rhodes, to informe themselves of the fact, with commaund, to cite the Great Maister de Villaret and de Pagnac, to appear at Auignon in person, Gerard des Pins beeing appointed Lieutenant Generall in the meane while. At this instant time, Orchanes Emperour of the Turkes, came boldly and besieged the Isle of Rhodes: but the knights had an admirable victory against him, for there were then tenne thousand Turkes betwen in pieces. In this Interim, Maurice de Pagnac, died at Montpellier, Anno. 1322. and Folquet de Villaret was re-established in the dignity of Great Maister. But hee perceiuing that it was against the liking of his fellowe knights, renounced his Great Maistership, in y^e yeare 1323. and liued as a priuate knight, untill the first day of September, 1327. when he dyed, and was buried at Montpellier.

1327.

26 The same yeare that he gaue ouer his dignity

nity, the knights of the Rhodes chose Elion de Villeneuve, borne also in Prouence, and Maieur of Saint Gilles. In the yeare 1343. a league was made betwene the Seignury of Venice, the Is. of Cyprus, and knights of the Rhodes. And the Great Maister hauing won the name of an happy gouernor, died the 27. of May at Rhodes. In his life time, he had enclosed the great Maisters Palace with wals & towers, and deuised the languages, Bayliwicks and other dignities of the Order.

1346

27 After the decease of Villeneuve, Deodon, o^r Gods-gift (a Patrie of Prouence) was elected Great Maister. About foure yeares befoze hee was promoted to this Dignity, hee had fought with an horrible and monstrous Dragon, that greatly afflicted the Isle of Rhodes. And hauing kild the Monster, he was therefore so highly honored and esteemed, that his memory yet remaineth renowned to posterity. In the yeare 1347. he ayded the King of Armenia against the Soldane of Egypt. Pope Clement the first helde the knights of Rhodes in such esteeme, that almost all the Fortes in Italy (belonging to the See) were gouerned seuerally by one of them. In the yeare 1351. Constance King of Armenia, became a Brother knight of Rhodes. And in the yeare 1353. the Sonne to Iohn Cantacuzen, Emperour of Constantinople, came and required ayde of the Great Maister of Rhodes: who, after he had gouerned this Order of Saint Iohn seauen yeares, sixe months, and ten daies, dyed the seauenth of September, in the saide yeare

D 3

1353

1353. and was buried in the Church of S. Iohn of Rhodes. Hee builded Gilles in the Citty of Rhodes, and engirt the Subburbs with walles, making them very strong on the Sea side.

1353

28 Peter succeeded him by election (as Great Maister) Peter de Cornilian, Priour of S. Gilles, borne also in Prouence. Hee was Maister, but one yeare, eight months and seauenteene dayes: for, falling into a grieuous sicknesse, hee died in the Citty of Rhodes, the 24. of August, 1355. He was a man of very exemplarie life, and so seuer, that hee was sur-named the Corrector of Customs. He held a generall Chapter at Rhodes, 1354. wherein many good Statutes were made.

1355

29 After the great Maister was deceased, according to accustomed form, Roger des Pins, borne likewise in Prouence, did next succede him. In his time, the Pope perswaded the Knightes of Rhodes, to buy the Principality of Achaia, of Iacques de Sauoy, Prince of Piedmont, and the Knightes of Rhodes made a generall assembly in the Citty of Auignon, to effect the treaty of buying the sayd principality of Achaia, and to reform some abuses, crept into the Order. For their Statutes were now tradured into the Latine tongue, and to all Princes were sent authentick Copies of Volumes of them, by appointment of the great Maister: And in the yeare, 1359. the great Commander, & the Marshall of the Order, were sent into France (in quality of Ambassadors) to be visitors and reformers. There was an assembly of the Knightes, called at the Citty of Carpentras, but

but it could not hold, in regard of the great Masters death, who dyed the 28. of May, 1365. and was much lamented, but by the poore especially, to whom hee was a great and charitable Almoner.

1365

30 Raymond Berengarius, of Prouence also, was next chosen great Maister, who had bin before Commander of Castle Sarrazin. In his time the King of Cyprus, and the Knightes of Rhodes made a league together, and took (perforce) the Citty of Alexandria in Egypt, which they ransackt, spoyle, and burnt. The Armenians being expelled by the Sarazins out of their dwellings, were charitably entertained by S. Iohns knightes, in the Isle of Lango: and at the same time, the Citty of Tripoli in Syria, was taken and sacked by the King of Cyprus, and the Knightes of the Rhodes. In the yeare, 1371. the Great Maister was (by the Pope) elected Nuntio from the Apostolique seat, to appease the rumors and diuisions, which were then in the Kingdome of Cyprus: whether he went in person, and both by his Authority and wisdom, he soone ceased all the troubles and molestations. The Great Maister hauing gouerned his Order about eightene yeares and an halfe, departed this life in the yeare, 1373.

1373.

31 In the same yeare, Robert de Iuliac, of Gulich, great Priour of Fraunce, was chosen Great Maister, who (at the time of his election) had the charge of his Priory: but vnderstanding the newes, he went forthwith to Auignon, where he was receiued with great honor, an assemblee

D 4

generall

general of this knightly Order being then there held, and the Great Maister had the gouernment of Smyrna imposed vpon him, vnder paine of excommunication. At his comming to Rhodes, he qualifed all the contentions, which had hapned in the time of his absence. At this time went the Pope, to hold his seat at Rome againe, which he and his predecessors had kept at Auignon, for the space of seauenty one yeares 1376. In which yeare, the 29. of June, dyed the Great Maister, and then

1376

32 In his place came Iohn Fernandes d'Heredia, a Natue of Arragon, in the Citty of Valentia, who was Prior of Cathalognia, and Castillian d'Emposta. Twice he had bin married, and (chancing to be a Widower) he was made a Knight of Rhodes, in the time of Villeneuve, who was then Great Maister. Being then but a simple Knight, hee went to visite the holy Sepulchre, and other memorabile places in the holic Land. He was also Ambassado: from Pope Clement the first, to the Kings Phillip 6. of France, and Edward the third of England, and did verie good seruice to King Phillip, in the yeare 1346. For he being dismounted from his horse, on a day of battaile against the English, he gaue him his owne horse, whereby the King escaped to a place of safety. In like manner he fortified the Bastions and new wals of Auignon, whercof hee was made Gouvernor by the Pope. Being great Maister, hee tooke his way to Rhodes, in the yeare, 1377. and being acquired by the Generall of the Vene-

Venetians Army, to vnite their forces together: they went to Morca, in the yeare, 1378. where they besieged the Citty of Patras, and tooke both it and the Castle. The great Maister (fighting man to man with the Gouvernor of Patras) slewe him manfully. Afterwarde, in an ambuscado of Turkes, hee was taken prisoner, by reason hee was too well knowne to them: Whereuppon, to worke his liberty, Patras and other places (which had bin won from them) were re-delivered to the Turkes. And yet notwithstanding, they would needs carrie him with them into Albania, where they kept him as a slaue thre yeares. In the year, 1381. the great Maisters freedome was bought with money, and hee returning to Rhodes, the Ambassadors of Smyrna came to desire succour of him. In the yeare, 1391. Baiazeth, Emperour of the Turkes made some preparation to besiege Rhodes, whereuppon, Phillebert de Naillac, Prior of Aquitaine, was sent by his fellow knights to Auignon, with Letters to the great Maister, to require aide against Baiazeth. Naillac returning to Rhodes, in the yeare, 1396. Heredia the great Maister died, and was buried at Caspa.

33 Helwes beeing brought to Rhodes, that Heredia the great Maister was dead: Phillebert de Naillac, grand Prior of Aquitaine, & bozne in France, succeeded in his roome. At the Spring time, he was inuited by Sigismond King of Hungaria, to come and assist him with his knights against Baiazeth, which hee did in person, in the yeare, 1397. And then was a battaile fought at Nicopo-

1395.

Nicopolis, where Baiazeth had the victorie, the k. of Hungary, being glad to saue himselfe (and with the Great Maister) retyred to Rhodes. Whither also did the Emperour of Constantinople, send all his precious Jewelles, to be kept by the Great Maister, fearing least Baiazeth shoulde surprize Constantinople. But hee was disappointed by Tamberlain, who ouercame Baiazeth, and kepte him captiue in a Cage of yron, so long as he liued, and the siege of Constantinople being raised, the great Maister sent home again the Emperours Jewels. After the foyle of Baiazeth, the great Maister de Naillac sailed with an army into Caria, & there builded an inerpugnable fortresse, which he named S. Peters Castle, in the year 1399. vnder the raigne of Charles the first king of France. In the yeare, 1403. there happened wars betwene the k. of Cyprus and the Genewayes; which was pacified and ordered by the wisdom and authority of the great Maister: to whom the Soldan of Egypt sent an Ambassado, for request of peace. In the yeare 1409. the Great Maister gaue his personall assistance in the Counsell of Pisa, assembled to quench the Schismes, which were then crept into the Church, and the guard of the Conclau was committed to the great Maister, when Alexander the fift was elected Pope. The sayde Maister was likewise at the generall Counsell of Constance, where thre Popes were deposed, and Martine 5. elected, an. 1414. the guard of the Conclau being then againe giuen to the great Maister. Trauelling into France, he held a general assembly

sembly of his knights at Auignon, afterward at Florence, and last at Ancona: whence returning to Rhodes, an. 1420. he held there a general chapter, and in the beginning of June, 1421. he dyed.

1321.

34 And then in the deads place, Anthony de Fluuiano, of de Riuers, reported to be a native of Arragon (but more say of England) was created Great Maister. In his time began the generall Counsell of Basile, 1430. And not long after, the Soldan of Egypt (pufft vp with the victory which he wonne at Cyprus) brake the Truce, and prepared a great Armye, with intent to besiege Rhodes. But when hee heard, that the Great Maister was provided of sufficient strength to withstand him: he left off his determination, and so the Order that way remained in quiet. This Great Maister founded, and endowd a Chappel in the City of Rhodes, which (afterwarde) hee made a Church for his knights. And the 29. of October hee died, after hee had gouerned (in his place) with much wisdom, 16. years & an halfe.

This Anthony de Riuers was sent for to Rhodes, he being then chief Commander of the Brother hood, at S. Johns of Ierusalem, in Saint Johns street.

35 The first of Nouemb. in the same year 1437 John de Lastic, borne in Auvergne was elected Great Maister, albeit he was absent at his election, & remained in Auvergne, whereof he was prior. Before he wold go to Rhodes, he made a general assembly of his knightes at Valentia, in the month of Decem. 1438. when he cam to Rhodes, he began to build the new hospital for sick people, which the precedent great M. (by his wil) had appointed to be done at his expences. In his time, Pope Eugenius 4. was deposed by the Counsell of

1437.

of Basile, and Feelix the fist, created in his place, who was held at Rome to be an Antipope. In the yeare, 1440. the Soldane of Egypt, beeing come neer to the port of the isle of Cast-Lerouge (which appertained to the knights) and from thence turning towards Rhodes, he was put to flight by an army of the knights, who had but eight Gallies, and in the Soldanes army there were eightene, and there were slaine about seauen hundred Sarazins, beside a great number that were wounded. This foile did so highly offend the Soldan, that he leagued himselfe with Amurath, Emperour of the Turkes, with intention to make himselfe Maister of the Isle of Rhodes, and to kill, or expell thence that famous Order of knight-hood. Whereupon, in the yeare, 1444. he came and besieged Rhodes, which was vertuously defended by the Rhodian knights: and in the moneth of September the same yeare, a generall assembly was held at Rhodes, to helpe the ensuing necessities of the Order. So the yeare following, the Great Maister (by aduise of the Pope and the King of Cyprus) made peace with Amurath, and helde a generall Chapter at Rhodes. At whiche time, the Duke of Cleues passed by Rhodes, in his returne from Ierusalem, where he had visited the holy places. In the yeare 1451. a general assembly was made at Rhodes, wherein, the administration and government of the Treasure, and whole fraternitie, was giuen to the Great Maister: who in anno 1452. after the death of Amurath, renewed the peace with Mahomet the

the second his sonne. And yet the yeare following, Mahomet became Maister of the Cittie of Constantinople, the 29. of May: when (beeing not a little proude of this fortunate successe) hee sent to the great Maister of Rhodes, that he shold pay him (yearly) two thousand Ducats, in name of tribute, otherwise, he purposed not to hold (any longer) the peace between them. Whereunto the great Maister made a couragious answer, to wit: That neither his Religion, the Isle of Rhodes, nor himselfe were subiectes to any, but God and his Church, and that he would neuer pay Turke any tribute, being rather resolved to dye (both he and all his Knights) then to endure Christian liberty (which euer had bin free) to come now (by his meanes) into thraldome. Whereupon, he sent Ambassadors to the Pope and Christian Princes, to entreat supplie from them, against the periured Mahomet. And in the yeare, 1454. the 19. day of May, he died, hauing valiantly gouerned his Order sixtene years, sixe months, and thirtene daies.

36 Jacques de Milly, borne in Auvergne, whereof he was Prior, succeeded as Great Maister the first day of June 1454. being in his Priory when he was elected, & his Nephew George de Boisfrond, brought him first tydings thereof. Whereupon hee immediatly went to Rhodes, and helde a generall Chapter the same yeare, in the month of Nouember. In the yeare 1456. the Isle of Rhodes was greatly afflicted with Pestilence and Famine, whereby it became halfe desert

sert, and to re-people it againe, many generall citations were sent abroad to all the knights, to meete there at a certaine time. The yeare 1457. Mahomet besieged the Isle of Lango, and the Castle of the Isle des Singes: but he was courageously repulsed, the knights hauing a very happy and signat victorie against him; which caused Charles the seauenth King of France, to send the knights (as a gift) sixtene thousand Crownes; The Bailiffes, Commaunders, and other Officers of the Order, being then enioyned (by a generall Chapter) to come to Rhodes, for more secure and strong defence thereof. The seuenteenth of August 1461. the Great Maister dyed, hauing (with much prouidence) gouerned his charge in hard and troublesome times, seauen yeares, two months, and sixtene daies. He was greatly lamented, because he was very benigne, affable, and humane, desirous to preserue peace and vniety among his worthy Bretheren.

1461.

37 Peter Raymond Zacoſta, boyn in Arragon, and Castileon d'Emposta, was created Great M. next; he being then absent in Spaine; but at his comming to Rhodes, by a generall Chapter there holden, the eight language of Castile and Portugall, was then admitted into the Order. For till that instant, there were but seauen languages there before; to wit, thre of Fraunce, Auuergne, and Prouence; one of Italy, one of Arragon, one of England, and one of Allemagne or Germany. The yeare 1464. the Venetians Army besieged the Citty of Rhodes: but

but the siege was soone raised, and the Venetians returned home to their Countrey, the warre being appeased by the wisdom of the Great Maister, who caused the Tower of Saint Nicholas to be built, at the mouth of Rhodes Port, in the very same place, where (in elder times) the great Colossus of the Sunne (numbred among the seauen wonders of the world) had stood. As a helpe to this building, Phillip Duke of Burgundy gaue tenne thousand Crownes of Gold. The yeare 1465. the great Turke sent Ambassadors to Rhodes, to mediate a peace between him and the knights Hospitallers: but they worthily refused it, and in presence of the Ambassadors, denounced Warre against the Turke. The generall Chapter being then transferred from Rhodes to Rome, and the Great Maister being present in person thereat: he died there the twenty one of February 1467. and was buried in the Church of Saint Peter.

38 Baptista Orfino, Prior of Rome, an Italian by Nation and tongue, succeeded the Great Maister Zacoſta. So sooner was hee come to Rhodes, but hee receiued intelligence, that the great Turke prepared a puissant Army, purposing to besiege either Rhodes or Negropont. Wherefore he sent for a great number of the knights, that were then absent, to come forth with for defence of the Island. Moreover, hee leagued himselfe with the Seigneury of Venice against the Turke. Nevertheless, in the yeare 1470. Mahomet forcibly tooke the Citty of Negropont, the last

1467.

last day of July, committing very great and horrible cruelties, killing (in cold blood) all the Latines there to be found, and (by sound of Trumpet) he proclaimed open war against the knights of Rhodes, which enforced them to seek all meanes for their best defence, providing euery way to withstand the Turkish Army. But in this time of preparation, the eight day of June, the Great Maister died of a long lingering disease, which had afflicted him a whole yeare together: and after him succeeded

1476

39 Peter d'Aubusson, borne in Auvergne, Prior there, & Captaine of the Citty of Rhodes. He being chosen Great Maister, solemnely took his oath (according to custom) to keep the statutes of the Order. He visited y^e whole Isle of Rhodes, and made very great provision, to defend it against the Turkes Army: sending for all knights and Commanders appertaining to the Order, to repaire thither for defence of the Isle, and renewing peace with the Soldane of Egypt. The same yeare, King Lewes preuailed to haue a Iubilie in Fraunce, in fauour of the Knightes of Rhodes, taking order, that the Ponies thereby arising, should soly be imployed for their defence: And by this Iubily came great store of Money, wherewith Castles and fortifications were builded in the Isle. Truce also was taken, betwene the Knightes and the King of Tunis, for thirtie yeares, and the Knightes of the Sepulcher at Ierusalem, were ioyned with the Rhodians of S. Iohn. In the yeare 1479. Mahomet the second Emperour

Emperour of the Turkes, held a solemnne Council, that Rhodes should be besieged with a powerfull Army, as indeede soone after it was: in which siege, many sallies forth were made, and the Turkes daily repulled and chased, albeit they were an hundred thousand fighting men, and the Army consisted of 160. Saile. The Great maister was much succoured by Messire Antoine d'Aubusson his Brother, Vicount of Montelis, who was a great Warriour, and a most skilfull Captaine, he was elected Captaine Generall for the besieged. In fewe daies, the Turkes gaue three thousand and seauen hundred shot with the Cannon, against the Citty Walls, and a maruailous assault was made of forty thousand Turkes: who neuerthelesse were valiantly resisted, albeit the Great Maister received (in this fight) five great woundes, one whercof was thought to be deadly. In the end, so worthily were the assaillants withstood, that they were enforced to raise their siege, hauing lost a great number of theyr Souldiers, and the Army of Turkes returned, (with mighty shame and disgrace) to Constantinople, after they had besieged the Citty for the space of 89. dayes. After this siege, Mahomet the second, concluded to com in person to Rhodes, wherupon, a generall assembly of the Knightes was made: But the death of Mahomet hindered this designe, and his Sonnes Baiazeth and Zizime performed the Warre, after the decease of their father, which gaue some breathing time of rest to the Knightes of Rhodes. And yet Zizime

(in person) came to assist the Great Master, with drawing himselfe to Rhodes, in the yeare 1482. where he was receiued with great honour, and from thence conducted into France. In the time of this Great Master d'Aubusson, the statutes of the Order were reformed, and brought into one volume; peace being concluded between the knights and the Great Turk Bajazeth. The Great Master was made a Cardinall by Pope Innocent the eight, and Legate also into Asia, with honour of Legate and Generall of the leagued Army against the Turke. Finally, he dyed at Rhodes, An. 1503. the third day of July, full of honour and reputation, and was interred with great funerall pompe. He had liued 80. yeares, three moneths and foure daies, and gouerned the Order twenty seauen yeares, and sixtene daies.

1503.

40 There were 387. knights assembled at Rhodes, when the Great Master d'Aubusson dyed, who elected for his successor, Emery d'Amboise, Brother to George d'Amboise, Cardinall and Legate in France, Arch-Bishop of Rouen. He was a French-man by birth, and great Maior of France at the time of his election, Guy de Blanchefort comming into France, to accompany him in his voyage to Rhodes: where he was receiued with much applause and reioycing, because the Kinges of France and Spaine hadde written very fauourable Letters on his behalfe, to the knights of the order. Hee was no sooner there arrived, but hee helde a generall Chapter, wherein

wherein was concluded, that a sumptuous tomb of Marble should be made, for the deceased Cardinall Great Master. In the yeare following, they obtained a very famous and nauall victory, against the Soldane of Egypt, vnder the conduct of Phillip de Villiers, of the Isle Adam, a French knight of the order, and afterward he was great Master. But this Master Emerie d'Amboise dyed at Rhodes, An. 1512.

41 And the same yeare, 410. of the knights were assembled at Rhodes, where they chose Guy de Blanchefort (borne in Auvergne, and nephew to the deceased Master d'Aubusson) to be Great Master. In his time the generall Laterane Council was holden at Rome, where Fabricio Carretto, Admiral and Procurator for the Order of Rhodes, was Captaine of the Guard to the saide Councell. This great Master de Blanchefort, embarking himselfe at Nicea in Prouence, to make for Rhodes; was surprized, (by the way) with a dangerous sicknesse, wherof hee dyed the 24. of Nouember, a yeare and two daies after his election.

1512

42 In his stead, Fabricio de Carretto, borne in Geneway, and an Italian by language, was created Great Master, in an assembly helde at Rhodes, the sixteenth of December 1513. where were then present 550. knights of the Order, the said Carretto hauing formerly been Admiral of Rhodes. In the yeare 1516. peace was made betwene the knights of Saint Iohn, and Tömömbéus Soldane of Egypt, successor to Camp-
son

1513.

son Gaury, who (but a short while before was slain in a battaile, wherein Selim (Emperour of the Turkes) had the victorie against him. And Tomombeus was as unfortunate, for in the yeare 1517. he was taken, and strangled at one of the Portes of the great Cayre, by the appointment of Selim. And this was the cause, that the great Payster fortified the Isle of Rhodes, to his uttermost power, sending Ambassadors to the Christian Princes, to let them understand the great victories of Selim, the sooner to take order for sending succour. But Selim dying, his son Sultan Soliman succeeded him: and in January, 1521. the Great Payster Carretto finished his daies at Rhodes, leaving great provision and Munition for warre, which soon after did service to his successor.

1521

43 Phillip de Villiers, of the Isle Adam, great Mour of France, and there borne; where because hee also was at the time of his election, Gabriell de Pomereux great Commander, was chosen Lieutenant to the great Payster till he came. The very same yeare of his election, the twenty two day of January, 1521. Sultan Soliman resolved to besiege the Isle of Rhodes, executing the last will of his Father Selim: whereof the Great Payster being advertised, hee made his preparation (by all possible meanes) to withstand the Turkes enterprize. Diligently did hee strengthen the Citty of Rhodes, sending for supply into Christendome; which as then hee could not haue, by reason of the warre happening be-

twene

twene Frances the first, King of France, and the Emperour Charles the first. In the month of June 1522. began the memorable siege of the Citty of Rhodes, which was besieged with an Army of two hundred thousand Turkes, and afterward the army increased to three hundred thousand men. The besieged defended themselves most courageously, and very worthy exploits of warre were there performed: especially by the Great Payster, who (during the siege) did neuer put off his Armour. The assaillants were in many attemptes repulsed, and in one of them, twenty thousand Turkes remained dead in the place: Soliman having then a purpose to raise his siege, but that there were some close Traytors, who hindered him from so doing, and yet they did not escape unpunished. At length, the Great Payster (receiving no succour) was enforced to surrender the Citty, upon composition, the twenty four day of December 1522. the Turkes having lost more then an hundred thousand men. Soliman would needs see the Great Payster, and when he beheld him, tears issued from his eyes, in more compassion of him. So, the first day of January, 1523. the Great Payster (with 50. sayle) departed from Rhodes, and took his way towards Candie: after that the Isle of Rhodes had beene in the power of the Knights Hospitallers, for the space of 213. yeares, to wit, from the yeare, 1309. to the ende of the yeare, 1522. After this losse of Rhodes, the great Payster and his valiant Religious Knights, had

The losse
of Rhodes,
to the great
griefe of al
Christen-
dome.

not any assured place of abiding: untill the Isle of Malta was given the by the Empero; Charles the first. For they departed first into Candie: from thence they went into Sicilie and Italy, where the Pope lent them the City of Viterbo, and where they held a generall Chapter. Afterward they sojourned for some small time, at Cornetto, then at Villefranche, and at Nicea. While they remained at Nicea, the great Maister made a voyage into England, and from thence to France, where being at Lyons, a great sicknesse took him: but after his recovery, he went to Cambraye, to hold the Baptisme Font for Phillebert Emmanuell, sonne to Charles Duke of Sauoy. Afterwarde, comming with his Brethren-knights to Malta, on Wednesday morning the first of Octob. 1530. he caused a Pallace to be there created, for the abiding of him and his successors, calling it Castell Angelo, building another pallace also in the old City of Malta. When he had governed his Order thirtene yeares, and seauen months (being aged seauenty yeares) the 21. of Aug. 1534. he died at Malta, and was buried in a Chappell, which he had builded nere to Castell Angelo, and then succeeded him by election

The knights of Saint Iohn became Knights of Malta.

1534

44 Pierrin du Pont, a Native of Ast, and an Italian by language. Before y taking of Rhodes, he was Gouernor of the Isle of Lango, and after the loss thereof, he departed (with al the knights vnder his gouernment) and toynd his power in Candie, with the armye of the Order. In his time, Charles the first Empero, attempted to go in

in person to the kingdome of Tunis in Affrica; where he was assisted by the Gallies belonging to the Order, and the knights also, who performed those great exploits of Armes: especially, in the surprizing of Goletta, which was helde to be a fort unconquerable. This war being ended, the great Maister (aged seuentie and thre yeares) dyed, hauing gouerned onely fourtene months, and 22. daies, and was buried by his predecessor Villiers.

45 Desiré, or Didier de S. Iaille de Tolon, borne in Prouence, and Priour of Tholossa, was next made great Maister: when lifting vppe his eyes to heauen, he vsed these words! O my God, if thou thinkest me fit for this great charge, I wil not refuse the paine and labour. In his traauelling towards Malta, being very aged, so soone as he arrived at Mont-pellier, he fel into an extream sicknesse, whereof he died the 26. of September, 1536. and was buried with much solemnitie, in the church of the Commandery of S. Gilles, without the gates of Mont-pellier: when the knights were aduertised of his decease, the eighteenth of October in the same yeare, they proceeded to the election of

1535

46 Iohn d'Homedes, a native of Arragon, who being then in Spaine, made hast to Malta, where he was ioyfully receiued. Albeit, he was discontented, that they had not sent some of the gallies, nor the great Carrack of the Order, for his conduct thither: wherefore he disarmed and destroyed the great Carrack, which caused manie complaints

1536.

plaints against him. Very often would hee discourse of the siege at Rhodes. because hee gave generall notice thereby, that there he had lost one of his eyes. He made a goodly Parke of Deer, and a very beautiful Garden in the Isle of S. Michael, & there would he spend the greater part of the day: which raised occasion of murmuring against him, that he was slacke in his publicke gouernment, and no way carefull to provide the Isle of Malta, of needfull supplies against the Turks forces, for he trusted too much in the strength of Castell Angello. In his time, the Cittie of Tripoli in Barbary, was lost by the knights of the Order, & taken by the Turkes, which droue him to no little feare and amazement. In the year, 1552. Leo Strozzi, an especiall Commander of the Order, made an attempt vpon the Isle of Zoara, which had very hard successe, because many knightes were then slaine there of all Nations, especiallly many French, Auvergnacs and Prouenceals. It being declared to the Great Maister, he grieved extraordinarily thereat, and sayde: That a greater losse had not happened to the Order, since the surprizall of Rhodes. Hee builded the Castles of Saint Elme, and Saint Michael, and being eighty yeares old, died the first of September, 1558. hauing gouerned sixtene yeares, ten months, and xv. daies, and was buried in the Great Maisters Chappell.

1558

46 Claudius de la Single, boine in Fraunce, was next created Great Maister, and at his election

tion, there were then present at Malta, about 400 knights of the Order. Hee gouerned verie discretely, by Counsell of five worthy knights his Officers, and attendaunts, (to witte:) by his Steward, Maister of the Household, Maister of the Horse, the Treasurer, and Secretary. So that the Order was in great happynesse, during the time of his Maister-ship, hauing obtained the priuiledge of Neutralitie, of King Henry the second, and Charles the fift Emperour, who made warre against him. Hee was verie valiant, Religious, and a most profitable Administrator of the Orders reuenewes, in whose Treasurie he left abundant store: dying of a Catarre, which had much suffocated him, after he had attained to the Climacteriall yeare 63. of his age.

47 F. Iohn de Valette, boine in Prouence, succeeded next as great Maister, and his election was very pleasing to all the Order of S. Iohn, because he was generally beloued of all the Nations, and vniuersally desired, as most worthy of that charge and dignity. In lesse space then two yeares, hee was Generall of the Gallies, Bayliffe of Lango, Great Commander, Vizour of S. Gilles, and Lieutenant to the great Maister, and now at length great Maister also. Hee did so affect his knights & Order, that, after the day he first entred in it, he wold neuer more return into his country. So that, by making continuall residence therewith them, he passed thorow all the degrees & offices of hono^r in the profession: appearing still

1561.

A new Cit-
ty builde at
Malta on S.
Elmes
Mount.

still (in all his actions), to bee of rare indgement, perfect integrity, and incomparable valour. So soone as he was advanced to this soueraigne dignity, he resolved to bulde a new Cittie at Malta, upon the Mountaine of S. Elme, knowing that al the other Forts were not sufficiently mounted, to endure the battery of a potent enemy: yet this desseigne was deferred till a further time. Hee fortified the Castle of the Isle of Goza, and (for saking his abiding at the Castle of S. Angello) came and dwelt within the Towne of Malta, which he defended most valiantly, agaynst the siege of the Empero; Sultan Soliman, when he was greuously wounded in his leg, in the yeare 1565. But the siege being raised, to the shame and confusion of the Turkes, hee greatly strengthened the Isle of Malta, and began to bulde the new Cittie, which was called Valette, according to his sur-name, and whereof himselfe solemnely laide the first stone, on Monday, the eight and twenty of March, 1566. And by the sollicitude of the Great Maister, the building thereof continued on still, eight thousand persons being daylye employed therein, and five hundred thousande Crownes monthly paid to the worke-men. At length, the one and twenty of August, 1568. the Great Maister died, on the like day as hee was promoted to his place, hauing gouerned eleauen yeares, fully compleat.

1568

48 After the obsequies of Valette, the Great Maister, they proceeded to elect a new successor, which was Pedro de Mente, an Italian boyne, & Prior

Prior of Capua. Immediately after his promotion to the Maister-ship, hee caused his predecessor's body to be carried into the new Cittie, and to be honorably buried in the Chappell of our Ladie of Victory, for he worthily deserved to be surnamed the Father of Souldiours, the Shielde and defender of the Catholicke faith, and the great persecutor, or queller of proude Infidelles. This newe Great Maister, before hee attained to so high degree, had made good proofe of his Wisedome and valour, in sundry other honorable and worthy offices. For he was first, Patron of the Gally, which was Captaine or Commaunder of the band: Next, Lieutenant General of the galleies, Castillion or gouerno; of the Castell S. Angello at Rome; he was then Admiral. next General of the whole flect, and Ambassado; for the Order to the Popes Pius the fourth, and Pius the fifth. Hee came from Rome to Malta, when he was chosen great Maister, and folloved his charge so effectually, that the new Cittie was finished, and thither he purposed to transserre the dwelling of the Order. For the good Olde-man thought it as great honour, to dwell in the newe Cittie and make it habitable, as it was for his predecessor Valette to bulde it. In his time, the memorable Seauall battaile of Lepanto was fought, and victorie obtained agaynst the Turkes, wherein the Knights of the Order did many worthy actions of armes. The great Maister deceased at Malta

49 Iohn, Bishop of Cassiera, boyne in Auvergn, did

1572

did next succed him, in the yeare, 1572. Before his election to this office, his vertue had appeared in diuers waighly charges. For, at the enterprize of Zozra, he was Ensigne-bearer to the Order, & defended the Standard very woorthily, bringing it backe with him to Malta, when both it & himselfe were smitten into the sea: yet both of them saued by a Gally belonging to the order, after he had a long time fought vndauntedly against the Infidels. Some after, hee was chosen Captaine general of the horsemen: Commissary of the fortifications, then, Marshall of the Order, and now last great Maister, wherein he liued very virtuously, not letting any day passe him, without some especial pece of seruice, and feeding (with his owne hands) thirtene poore men. With his owne money, he builded the great Church dedicated to S. Iohn Baptist, in the new City of Valette, endowing it with a thousand Crownes of annuall Reuenues: erecting also a goodly Sepulchre, for interring therein the bodies of the great Maisters his predecessors. Where happened some discontentment betwene the knights and him, which shortning his daies, he died.

1582

50 And the twelfth of January, 1582. Hugues de Loubenx Verdale, bozne in Prouence, was elected great Maister. He was but a yong knight, yet both learning and military knowledge shined clearly in him: For he was in the attempt at Zozra, where he declared himselfe to be truly valiant, and had many honorable Offices imposed upon him. He dying,

51 Martin

51 Martin Garzes, a native of Arragon, succeeded him next as great Maister. Hee qualifed the discontentmentes amongst his Brethren, knights, and tooke away those Taxes, which had bin imposed, and interdicted (for a time) the officers of the order, to giue a new forme to his owne gouernement, and to the good liking of all the knights. He did expressely prohibit, that not any knight (nor the Great Maister himselfe) might particularly haue any shippe on the sea to vse any ppracies for his owne profit. He died also at Malta, and lieth buried in the Sepulchre of the great Maisters.

1595.

52 The knights assembling for a new election, the tenth of February, 1601. Aloph de Vignacourt, bozn in France, was created great maister. In the yeare 1566. hee comming to Malta, with great store of other French Gentlemen, upon a flying rumour, that the Isle was likely to be besieged againe by the Turkes Armie, entered into the order, vnder the Great Maister Valette, receiuing (afterwarde) sundrie great charges, wherein his wise dome and man-hood was evidently discerned: hauing bin Captain of the citie of Valette, and not long after, great hospitaller of the Order. He yet continueth in the office of great Maister, a great comfort (wee hope) to Christendom, & a terror to the Othomans Empire, whensoever they shall attempt the hurte of the Isle of Malta, where the famous memorie, of that ancient Order of knight-hood of S. Iohn of Ierusalem, is still kept and maintained.

1601

Knights



¶ The severall Orders of Knight-hood, both Ecclesiastick and Secular; as they have beene, and are yet honoured in this Christian World.

Ecclesiastick
call orders.

1070

Knights of Saint Iames of Compostella.

In the yeare 1070. this Order of Knight-hood began in Spaine, after that Ramirus had won the most famous victory, in the Province of Compostella, against the Moores.

At first, their number consisted but of thirteen, and it was lawfull for them to take Wives. There was a chiefe man chosen of this Order, by the name of Great Maister; who (together with the other thirteene) had power to elect other Knights.

The badge or note of honor of this knight-hood, was a red Crosse, carrying the forme of a downe pointed Sword. At the Feast of All-Saints. was their meeting appointed, that they might conferre about their affaires. Many yeares have they continued, with many priviledges, and scarcely any but they (called Augustines) holde any such lawes.

Knights

¶ Knights of Saint Johns of Ierusalem, who were afterward Knights of the Rhodes, and at this day are called Knights of Malta.

In the yeare 1099. the City of Hierusalem being recovered against the impulsions of the Infidels, by Godfrey of Bullen, Duke of Lorraine: About that very time, a certaine Hospital was erected by the Christians in Hierusalem, consecrated by the name of Saint Iohn Baptist, for the entertainement of Pilgrims. Soone after, was this Order of Knight-hood instituted, and the first Rector or Ruler was called Gerard, and the next after him Raimond. These knights wore a blacke Garment, with a Crosse Argent, in a field Gules upon their breasts.

In the yeare 1308. being enforced from their former abiding by the Turks, & the Isle Rhodes graunted them by Pope Clement the first, they were (in that regard) called Knights of Rhodes.

In the yeare 1523. Rhodes being wonne from them, Malta was affoorded them; whereon to this day they are called Knights of Malta.

The duty of this knight-hoods order, was, to fight for the Christian Faith, to relieue the oppressed, to defend Widowes and Orphanes, &c. Nor was any one to bee admitted into this Order, that was descended of a Moore, Iew, Mahometist, or any such ignoble race.

Knights

¶ Knights Templers, or Knights of the Temple.

1117.

ANno Domi. 1117. Godfredus Aldemarus Alexandrinus, and Hugo de Planco de Paganis (Godfrey Duke of Lorraine, and King of Hierusalem beeing dead, and Baldwine then reigning) this order of knight-hood first began; And a seat was graunted them in the Temple of Hierusalem, whereupon, they were cald knights Templers, or knights of the Temple.

By entreaty of Stephen, Patriarch of Ierusalem, Pope Honorius brought in this order, and confirmed their Society; giving them a white garment, whereunto Eugenius the third added a red Crosse on the breast.

The charge of these knightes, was, to guide trauailers on the way of Ierusalem, and to entertaine strangers.

1310

Anno Domini 1310. Clement the first (who then helde his See in Fraunce) by perswasion of Phillip King of Fraunce, gaue order for the utter subuersion of this knight-hoods Society, and all their Colledges, thorough-out our Christian world, wheresoever they were builded: in regard of a most abhominable treachery, by them intended and ratified.

Knights Teutons, or Knights of Allemaigne.

SDone after that Hierusalem was regained from the Christians, one Teuto a noble man,

man, and abounding in riches; instituted this Society of knight-hood, building an house; (for their entertainment) at Ierusalem, called *Hospitium virgini Mariae*.

Among this Order of knight-hood, neyther knight of Malta, nor any other, except a German (and he likewise to be noble by birth) could be receiued into their degree. Their garment was white, and a blacke Crosse figured vpon their breasts.

In the yeare 1184. these knightes (the Cittie of Hierusalem being surprised by the Sarrazins) Ptolomais was graunted them: but beeing likewise driuen thence, they came into their Country of Germany.

In the yeare 1220. they entreated Frederick the second, Emperour, that he would suffer them to take Armes against certaine fugitiue Idolaters in Prussia: who beeing by them subdued, they obtained there a newe seating, and their Dition or Lordship of Liuania was then added to them.

¶ Calatranian Knights, or Knights of Calatrana.

In the yeare 1130. this Order of knight-hood was instituted by Santio King of Toledo, in imitation of the Order of Saint Iames.

1130

These knightes tooke the name of Calatrana, which was a place granted vnto them, where (in former times) had stood a Church, that belonged to

to the knights Templers: And when the Sarazins were ouerpowerful for them, those knights were constrained to surrender this place vnto them.

These knights did weare a blacke Garment, with a red crosse vpon their breast; and were said to be of the Cistercian Order, holding in Spayne very large possessions.

¶ Knights of Alcantara.

1150

These knights held their name of a Cittie in Castile, called Alcantara, and were of the Cistercian Order.

They had a goodly Temple nere to the Ruer Tagus, where they held very ample possessions. Their Ensigne or Badge was a greene Crosse.

¶ Knights of the Redemption.

1212

In Anno Dom. 1212. this Order was instituted by James King of Arragon, who conquered the Islands called Baleares, or Maiorque and Minorque in the Spanish Sea.

It was the Office of these knights, to redeme Captiues, whereuppon, the Tytle of Redemption was giuen them: they were also called knights of Marie.

These knights Order was confirmed by Gregory the ninth, Bishoppe of Rome: And they wore a white Garment with a blacke Crosse vpon it.

Knights

¶ Knights of Montefia.

This order was instituted, much about that very same time, as the knights of Calatrana were. 1150.

They deriued their name from Montefia in Valentia, where was their place of abiding.

The Ensigne of these knights was a red crosse.

¶ Knights of the holy Sepulcher.

These knightes (who deriued their name of Christs Sepulcher) did wear two red crosses. 1219

This order (at this day) is quite extinct, or (as some do imagine) the Order of the knightes of Malta is said to be somewhat nere it.

¶ Knights of Christ.

In Anno Dom. 1320. this order was instituted by Iohn the twentieth, Bishop of Rome. 1320
The place of these knights abiding, was in Portugall.

A blacke garment, and a double Crosse, were the Ensignes of this knight-hoods order.

¶ Knights of Saint Marie, the Mother of Christ.

Certaine noble men of Bologna and Modena in Italy, being much troubled and molested 1204
D 2 lessed

lested by perturbations among the Princes, desired of Urbane the fourth, Bishop of Rome, that they might be suffered to begin some kind of Society. Whereupon this order was graunted them, to holde in free and peacefull manner.

A little red Crosse. reflected with Golde, they inoze upon their breasts.

These Knights did weare costly Garmentes, and fared delicately: whereupon they were vulgarly called by the Italians, Frati Gaudenti.

They might not weare any gilt Spurs, or vse any Gold on their Horses furniture.

¶ Knights of Saint Lazarus of Hierusalem.

1048

This Order was confirmed, or (as some will haue it) restored by Pius Quartus. And yet the knightes of this Order, (are saide to bee) in the times of Basilus, and Pope Damasus, when Iulian the Apostata raigned, and then they flourished, as some do as firme.

The Ensigne or Inprrese of this Order, was a green Crosse, worn on the left side of the breast.

A man twice married might not bee admitted into this order.

¶ Knights of the round Table.

The Secu-
lar Orders.

In Anno Domini 516. Arthur, a worthy and warlike King, rainging in the Isle of Brit-taine,

raigne, the Countrey beeing infested and troubled with Armies of Saxons, &c. was yet (by him) very valiantly supported, and his fame out-stretched to the remotest Regions. Afterward, when peare was established; that other knightly mindes might be inflamed with the like glory: this Order hee instituted, which continued (with others) in long and honourable obseruation.

The Order of these knightes was (especially) in the City of Winchester, as some haue recorded; and they yearly meeting was there, at the Feast of Pentecost or Whitson-tide.

¶ Knights of the Garter.

In the yeare 1349. Edward the third, King of England, hauing hadde verie great victories against the French, and other neighbouring Nations, did institute this Order, and consecrated it to S. George.

1349

The King appointed a Garter to be the Ensign of this Order, wrought richly with Golde and precious stones, which should circle the Leg beneath the knee, and on it to haue these words apparently discerned:

HONI. SOIT. QVI. MAL. Y. PENSE.

The number of these knightes are 26. whereof the King himselfe is the chiefe.

The time of this Societies meeting, is the feast

feast of Saint George, and celebrated at Windsor.

These Knights doe weare the Ensigne of S. George, (fighting with a Draggon) fastened to a rich Chaîne or Collar, which weigheth or valueth, neither more or lesse then eighty poundes of English Honey, as hath bene saide in former times. Their garments is Purple, with a redde Crosse.

¶ Knights of the Starre.

1350

ANno Dom. 1350 John King of Fraunce, being much moued with the glory of Edward the third, King of England; did institute this order of knight-hood, entitling it by those 3 *Magi*, who (going from the East to honour Christ) were guided by a Starre.

The Ensigne of this Order was a Starre, set eminently in the Hat: and the wordes were *Monstrant Regibus Astra Viam*.

The founder of this order, being much molested with the difficulties happening in warre; could not perfect what hee had instituted. And therefore (within a short while after) this Order ceased.

¶ Knightes of the Band.

1367

In the yeare 1367. this Order was instituted by Alphonsus King of Spaine, the Sonne of Ferdinand and Constance.

These

These Knights did weare a certaine red scarffe or Band, of three fingers breadth, which (like a scole) was fastned on the left Shoulder, and so come vnderneath the right Arme, thwart the body.

Into this Order, younger borne Bretheren onely (of Noble descent and family) and none of the elder, might be admitted.

Many Articles (belonging to this order, and to be obserued by these Knights) are at large set downe by Sanlouino.

¶ Knights of the Annunciation.

1409

ANno Dom. 1409. Amades or Amadeus, as some write, the first, surnamed The greene Earle of Sauoy, deuised this Order, who were termed Knights of the virgin Mary, and for this reason instituted: because Amades the first Earle of Sauoy, (with wonderfull fortitude) defended Rhodes against the Turkish powers, in his memory it was thus celebrated.

A Chaîne or Collar (such as Knightes vse to weare, made of Gold and Siluer plates, and fastened together with little linkes) each man had about his necke, with these Letters engrauen thereon, F. E. R. T. that is, *Fortitudo eius Rhodum tenuit*. Thereat hung also (by another small Chaîne) the Picture of the Virgine Mary, with the Angels salutation.

¶ 4

Knights

¶ Knights of the golden Fleece.

1429.

In the yeare 1429. Phillip, fir-named the good Duke of Burgundie, instituted this Order, and dedicated it vnto Saint Iames.

The number these knights were twenty foure, wheresof the Duke of Burgundy was the chiefe.

They vsed to weare the Picture of a Golden Shepe, affixed to a Chaine, inter-wouen like flames of fire.

Charles the warrelike Duke of Burgundy (who also is sayde by euery one, to bee the first Founder of this Order) added thereunto these words: *Ante ferit, quam flamma micet.*

But now at this day, the knights haue these words: *PRETIUM NON VILE LABORVM.*

¶ Knights of Saint Michaell.

1469

In the yeare 1469. Lewes, the eleauenth King of Fraunce, instituted this Order at Amiens, and dedicated it to S. Michaell.

The beginning of this Society. consisted of a Band of Men, to the number of thirty sixe, the very chiefeft and nobleft Peeres of the kingdome, beeing knights cleare from all detection; and the very chiefe of them was the King himselfe.

At this day, there are a great number of these knights

Knights, and the kingdome of Fraunce is not now so respectiue in their election, as at the first.

These knights weare a Chaine of gold daily, wouen like little shelles, balewing two hundred Crownes: And thereat hangeth the picture of Saint Michaell, fighting with the Deuill, the Wordes beeing these, *Immensi tremor Oceani.*

These knights did vse to meet euerie yeare, at the Feast of S. Michaell, in the Church of S. Michaell on the Mount.

Their garments by Henry the second, king of France, were appointed in very honorable maner.

Knights of S. Stephen.

In the yeare, 1561. this Order was instituted by Cosmo de Medices, Duke of Florence, and the same confirmed by Pius Quartus.

1561.

The Ensigns of these knights, was a redde Crosse, woene on a blacke garment.

The Statutes of this Order, do not much differ from them of Malta knights: and they were allowed to haue wiues.

The Duke of Florence, is alwayes the chiefe of this Order, and it is not to be censured by anie of the religious degrees, but properly it doth hold a freedome in liberty.

Knights of the Holy-Ghost.

In the yeare, 1578. Henry the third, king of France,

1578

France, instituted this Order, and named it of the Holy Ghost: the memo^y whereof, was to be celebrated in the time of Pentecost: upon which day, the King was borne, and succeeded also in the Kingdome. These knights are an hundred in number, and the King himself is the President.

This feast is celebrated yearly the first day of January, in the Augustines Church in Paris, by the Parisians.

The Ensigne of these knights, is a Dove (in which forme the Holy Ghost appeared) in midst of a Crosse.

The last or lowest degree of knight-hood, is theirs, who (as reward of their Vertues) haue golden Spurres put on their heeles, and vulgarly are called knights.

Concerning knights Bannerets, who hadde that Title giuen them by the Kings of England in Warre: And knights of the Bath, they being also created by the Kings of that kingdome: because they are of another nature, I passe them ouer, without vsing any further speech of them.

¶ Of the Emperor of Ethyopia, called Prete-Ian, or Preter-Iohn: Of his Originall, and customes of his people.

*Sabellie. lib.
8. de Suplem.
Chron.*

The great Emperour of Ethyopia, to whom wee (corruptly) giue the name Preter. or Presbiter Iohn, is neither Priest or Sacrificer, though

though he be (by some) called Prete-Ian, and (by his owne people) named Beldugian, that is to say, Ioy of incomparable excellency, or of most great value, and by others of them, he is also called Ian, which (in their language) signifyeth Mighty. He commandeth ouer seuentie and two Kinges, who are all of different languages, hauing their diuersity of customes, and the colour of their faces or complexion are much disagreeing. He is able to leue in preparation for war, a million of fighting men: five hundred Elephants, with their armour and munition for encounter, with an infinit number of Horses and Canelles. His souldiers. His knights or warlike souldiers, enter armed to the battell each wearing a long coat of Maille, stretching downe closely to their thighs a Sal- His Armour for defence.
let or head-piece on the head, a round Target or Pavois, a crooked Fauchion by his side, and a Launce with two Steele points or Pikes. Such as haue no Sallets or head-pieces, do wear thick red quilted Cappes on their heades, plated after the manner of the Mameluke Souldiers. The younger sort carried Darts, Arrows and Slings, obseruing the same discipline, and be as obedient or well gouerned, in ranging their battails as we are. They vse Drummes of Brass, and Trumpets also, to incourage their souldiers to the fight, which is performed with great hardiment, appointing likewise sundry honours and respectiue rewards, to such as declare them selues to bee of highest merit. They do daily pay the families of their warriors, and marke the children that are borne

bozne of them, with a Crosse, which they imprint suddenly in the flesh with an hot yron, so that the signe remayneth, as if it were naturall vnto them.

The exercise of the King Prete-Ian.

The King himselfe most commonly called Prete-Ian, after he hath bestowed some houres about State affayres, when he perceiueth that he is indifferently eased of them: he imployeth almost all the remainder of his time, in the study of holye Readings and Histories, which being doone, he useth a little exercise of the body, and then entering into his Bath, afterward hee takes his refection, alone by himselfe (as most of our Kings vse to do) vpon a little Table of Golde, without any Cloth or Napkin, and it is set in such a place as there are diuers Steppes or degrées in ascending to it. He is serued by sundry Pages, who are of noble birth, and they bring him his meat (ready cut and prepared) in little Baskets or Banniers. He drinketh wine in a cup of gold, but hee hath another kinde of drink, made of sower Apples, and mingled with Sugar, which he receiueth in a cuppe of Christall. While he feedeth, three hundred lusty young men (chosen out of the severall kingdomes vnder his Dominion, hauing the place of Archers, and of his Guard) do stand round about the Tent-Royall: For, by an ancient custome it hath bene kept, that the King continually liueth out of any Citty, wherein he neuer abyedeth but two dayes onely, and those Tents are erected in such manner, that the backe part is euermore placed to the East, and the doore or opening is opposite

His dyet & manner of life.

site to the West.

The vsuall Armes or weapons of those guards, are Swords, Daggers, and Hauelinges, they neckes and shoulders being gorgetted with thick skinnes of Beasts. Foure Kings, who (by commandement) do attend the Court, followe (each after the other) the Table seruire, accompanied with many Barons and meaner Officers, euen from the Kitchin, to the Tent of Prete-Ian, all cloathed in silke, Seudal and Scarlet: And there they deliuer it to the Pages, who come forth to receiue it. The King and all his Court fare deliciously, with Fowle, Fish, and all kinds of Meseison. So soon as he hath dined (for he neuer sups but on Festiuall daies) his Eunuches go to fetch diuers Quenes (according to their seueral quarters, being the Wiues of the fore-named Kings, to waite on the Quene and Wife to Prete-Ian, conducting her vnto his Tent, to giue him pleasure and contentment, and there they sing and Daunce in his presence. Hee hath four wiues, who are the daughters of his Neighbour-Kings, but he lodgeth but with one of them, to whom he is solemnly married with many Ceremonies: but if it chance, that he haue no children by her, then he calls to his bed one of the other.

The attendance and service of the Emperor.

The wiues of the Emperor.

When hee purposeth to shew himselfe in publique, his face is couered with a Mayle of Tassata, which hee lifteth vpe and pulleth doone, that hardlie can his face bee wholly discerned: but if it be, it is very quickly couered againe. He useth to shewe himselfe vnto the people, three times

The Originall of the Ceremony

times in the yeare, that is to say, on the dayes of Chyristmasse, Easter, and the holy Crosse in September, and (for this purpose) is a gowly high seas, sold only prepared. The cause of this ceremony, receiued Originall from Dauid Prete-Ian, Surnamed Alexander, whose death was thre whole yeares concealed by his chiefe Seruants, that gouerned the kingdome in his time. Wherefore, to auoide all the like succeeding inconueniences, the father of Dauid Prete-Ian, at the earnest intreaties of his people, began first to shew himselfe on these ordained daies, which hath continually euer since been obserued, euen to Panusius Prete-Ian, which is now raigning in Ethiopia: onely excepted, when hee marcheth in warre, for then he goeth daily discovered. He is crowned with a precious Diadem, the one part whereof is Gold, and the other Silver, and carrieth (insteade of a Scepter) a Crosse of Silver in his hand: All his Seruants are marked with a Crosse, in the verie flesh on the right shoulder. Hee is cloathed with rich garments of frizled Cloath of Golde, wearing a shirte of silke, with very large and wide sleeves, as Dukes in elder times were wont to do: And from the Girdle downward he weareth a wide kirtle of silke and cloath of golde, with a Linnen couerture after a Bysshoppes manner. On either side of him goe two Pages, richly appareld, each holding a Crosse of Silver in the one hand, and a naked sword in the other.

The Emperors Crown Scepter, and habit.

His Lords, who are as Kings, and carrie that Title, do pay him tribute of Gold and other met-

tals

tals, of horses and great Cattle of seuerall kinds: likewise of cloath of Gold, and of wooll, according to the quality and best nature, of those countries that are vnder their gouernment: which rightes and Tributes they haue from their Subiects, although they bee vassalles (indeede) to none but Prete-Ian, himselfe and to whom they yelde the greater part of their substance. Some do pay him large quantities of Corne, and of Salte, for the maintaining of his Armies: Others doo bring him Pepper, which is a rare commodity in that Country, and some do pay him slaues. The Kusticks or countrey Bomes, who liue in the wilde and wilde-frequented Forrests, do bring vnto the Court, great store of Lyons, Tygres, and other liuing sauage beasts, which are afterwarde shut vp into apt appointed places, to yeld pleasure and delight to him and his Princes. As for such as dwell further off from the Court, it is sufficient for them to bring the skinner of such beasts only wherewith the Abyssines do (in a brauery cloth) themselves, when they go to warre.

The Emperors tribute by his Kings.

Tributes in generall of his people.

This Great Emperour Prete-Ian, gouerneth many Countries, and boundlesse Seas, whereof, because this place alloweth me not to make any large discourse, as also of the maine matters of State concerning his kingdoms: I referre ye to the Generall History of the Worlde, where, whatsoeuer I am compelled in this Chronicle to abreviate (not onely of this Emperour, but of all other kingdomes whatsoeuer) shall bee at large described. Let it suffice then, that I close vp this report,

The onely
glories of
Prete-Ian
his Ethyo-
pians.

report, with the onely glories of Prete-Ian, and his Ethyopians, which are, that they doo repute themselves to be the very ancientest nation, among men, because they haue alwaies liued in their innated liberty, and were neuer conquered, either by Semyramis, nor Hercules, nor Dyonisi-
sius, nor the Romaines: but that they themselves vanquished King Cambyfes, and ouerthrew his potent army. Hereto they adde a more true and eminent glory indeede, which is, that they were one of the first nations, in receipt of the Christi-
an faith, wel nere from the very beginning thereof. By meanes of the Cunningh to the famous Queene Candace, who was baptized by S. Philip: And that since their conuersion, they haue constantly kept the same Religion, for so mane hundreds of yeares. Albeit that during this time they haue bene generally (euen as yet they are at this day) mollested, assaulted, and enuyroned with Moores, Sarrazins, and the Idolatrous Worshippers of Mahomet, yet notwithstanding all those cruell Tempests (which heretofore destroyed the Romaine Empire, and the very greatest part of Christendome) Ethiopia could neuer hitherto bee spoyled, either of their Dominion or Religion, albeit som Idolatrous mixture hath crept thereinto. Which is the lesse to be maruailed at, if we may credit their owne saying, in al-
ledging their constancy and antiquity, because they deriue this their noble Originall and continuance, from the Royall Kinges Dauid and Salomon, of whom the most blessed Virgin Marie

Whence
the Ethyo-
pians de-
riue their
antiquity.

Pro

(Mother to our Saviour) descended, and he himselfe according to the flesh: Of whom they keepe a very solemnne memory, and (aboue any other of the Apostles) thinke reuerently of S. Thomas the Apostle.

Of the Kingdome of Persia.

Persia hath carried the same name, from the beginning to this day, containing in it these Regions, Lar and Requelmall. The principall City thereof is called Siras, in elder times termed Persipolis, which is gouerned by the Sophy, Great Lord of all Persia, and Azimia, called by our elders Assiria; and the Kingdom of Dearbech, sometime named Mesopotamia; And Scroan; that was Media; and Parthia, now called Iex; with Hirca, now termed Coraxan; Sarmania, now Dulcendano; and Asia, now at this instant called Heti. All these seuerall Regions, with the greater Armenia, which is a part also of them, are gouerned by the great Sophy, and their greatest or chiefest Cittie is named Tauris, being built in the midst of the Mountain Taurus, soure daies iourney off from the Caspian Sea. Pert vnto Tauris, there are other Cittyes, as of Soltauia, Concastan, Spahan, Corazan, Lera, Mora, Sarmachand, Gesti, Far, Siras, and Ormuz, a Cittie in the Persick Sea, which at this day is called Mare Misindia. In this Cittie is great commerce of Merchandize, made with the Portugales, and there they fish for great aboundance of Pearles.

The chiefe
Citty of
Persia.

The go-
uernment
of the great
Sophy.

Fishing for
Pearles.

R

dance

dance of Pearles. There are other Citties also, Curch, Iex, Calmine, Coy, with infinite Castles. On the West side of Tauris are the Caspian Mountaines, which are now called the Mountains of Arach; And on the Bacchan Sea, aunciently named the Caspian Sea, are these Citties, Sumacchia, Derbent, Bacchan, and Mamutaga. All these Provinces and their Regions, are very barren, because they haue small store of Riuers, the greatest whereof is called Bindarin, but in former times they entituled it Bragada. Concerning the gouernment obserued among the Persians, it differs farre from all the other Mahumetists; because they hate Nobility, and relying on the seruile fidelity of slaues, eyther murder their Friends and kindred, or put out their eyes. But among the Persians, the Sophy is highly respected, Nobility had in Honour, and many wealthy Lordes are liuing amongst them, whereof not one is to bee found in the Turkish Dominions. The people also are the very ciuillest in all Asia, men of vndaunted courage, and speciall good Warriours, both on Horse-backe and foote: affecting Musique, Learning and Poesie, wherein some attaine to no meane excellency, and they are much addicted to the study of Astrology. So much in brasse concerning the Persians, the rest remaineth to our Generall History of the World.

Of the Persian gouernment, and nature of the people.

¶ Of

¶ Of the Kingdome of Thunis.

THE Cittie of Thunis or Tunis being very great, was by the Latines called Tuncetum, and of the Arabians Tunus: but they holde that name to be a very corrupt vocable, because (in their Language) Tunus dooth not signifie any thing. This Cittie was aunciently called Tharsus, as that other in Asia, and was at first but a very little Cittie, builded by the Affricanes, vpon the Lake which was formed from the Goleta, distant from the Mediterranean Sea, about twelue miles. But after that Carthage was destroyed, then did those Citties beginne to encrease, both in number of habitations and dwellers: in regard that the Armies which surprized Carthage, being vnwilling to tarry there (for feare of fresh supplies from Europe) came to abide at Tunis, and there they builded many Houses. Not long after, there came thither a Captaine, named Hucha di Vtmen, who gaue them to vnderstand, that an Army ought not to shut vpp it selfe, in any Cittie that shoulde touch or bee nere vnto the Sea: And therefore they made a Cittie, which they named Cairoan, about the distaunce of thirty sixe miles from the Sea, and accounted to be an hundred miles from Tunis. Then did the Armies forsake Tunis, and inhabited this newe Cittie; other people gouerning those houses in Tunis, that had bin abandoned by the Armies.

The ancient name of Tunis.

Cairoan, a new City builded.

R 2

After

After this, about thre hundred and fiftie
Cairo and yeares, the Citty of Cairoan was destroyed by
destroyed by the Arabians, so that the Rector or Ruler thereof
the Arabes. fled thence into the West, and raigned in Bug-

gia, as also ouer all the neighbouring partes: but
there remained still in Tunis, a family or kind-
red of the said Rector or Gouvernour, fledde from
Cairoan, who still possessed the same, as Soue-
raigne Lordes thereof. About ten yeares after,
they of Buggia were expelled by Ioseph, the son
of Tessino: but beholding the humility and kind-
nesse of the saide Lord, they left the State vnto
him, which continued in tranquillity, so long as
the family of Ioseph raigned. But Abdull Mu-
men, King of Marocco, hauing regained Mab-
dia, which had bene taken by the Chyistians;
passed homeward in his returne by Tunis, where
he tooke the gouernment vpon him: And all the
time that Abdull Mumen liued, and Ioseph his
Sonne, with their Successours, Iacob & Man-
sor, Tunis continued in peace vnder the rule of
the Kinges of Marocco. After the death of Man-
sor, his Sonne Muhamet Ennasir, moued
warre against the King of Spaine, but was o-
uercome and forced to flight, escaping backe to
Marrocco, where (after this soile) hee liued but
few yeares. When was his Brother Ioseph
lected King, who was slaine by certaine Soul-
diers to the King of Tebesin. Now in the Inte-
rim, betwene the ouerthrow of Muhamet, his
death, as also the murthering of his Brother
Ioseph, the Arabians returned backe on Tunis,
and

Tunis go-
uermed by
the Kinges
of Marocco

and besieged it: But the Gouvernour of Tunis, Tunis be-
gaue notice thereof to the King of Marocco, sieged by
that if he sent him not some immediate succour, the Arabes.
he should be constrained to deliuer the Citty to
the Arabes. The King well considering on a case
of such importance, did as became a man of his
high spirit and experience, electing (aboue all o-
ther in his Court) one bozne in Ciuill, a Citty of
Granado, named Habdulnaihidi, whom hee
forthwith sent thither, with the same authori-
ty, as if he had gone himselfe in person. Wering
accompanied with twenty goodly great Shippes,
he arrived at Tunis, which was then even halfe
vanquished by the Arabes: But by his wise-
dome, prouidence, and flowing eloquence, hee
soyled the Enemy, pacified the State, set all
thinges in good order, and made the Countries
entrance sure against all Intruders. After him
his Sonne succeeded, named Abu Zaccheria, who
in learning and wisdom excelled his father.
He caused to be builded in Tunis, on the West
side of the Cittyes very highest part, a mightie
great Rocke, and many goodly Wallaces in the
Citty, with a beautifull Temple, that had an
high Tower on the top thereof, round engirt with
strong wals.

This Abu Zaccheria went likewise to Tri-
poli, where his valour won him such renowne,
and his wisdom made so good benefite of the
Countrey; that (at his death) hee left an infi-
nite Masse of Treasure behinde him. He be-
ing dead, his Sonne succeeded him, who was

Tunis de-
liuered fro
the Arabes.

The declin-
ing of the
kingdome
of Maroc-
co, & rising
of that of
Fez.

an ambitious proude young man, and would no longer suffer himselfe vnder command of Marocco; because he perceiued the declining and down-fall of those Lords, and that the family of Marino began to get swelling, reigning ouer the Regions of Fez, as Beni Zeiren did in Telenis, and in Granado. These two great Potentates beganne to warre vppon each other, and to contend for priority of State; But by this their discord; the power of the Lordes of Tunis encreased, so that they went with an Army against Telenis, and compelled them to pay them tribute. Whereupon the King that new arose from the House of Marino, and had bene at surprisall of Marocco, sent many rich presents to the Gouernour of Tunis, recommending both himselfe and his whole State vnto his fauour. The Gouernour accepted him as a friende, alwaies prouided, that he should be inferiour to him: And so he returned in triumph to Tunis, causing himselfe to be called King of Affrica, which Title was thought very desertfull for him, because (as then) there was not a more powerfull Prince in all Affrica, then he. He began then to ordaine his Court Royall, with Secretarie, Councillers, and a Capitaine Generall, vsing all those Ceremonies, that the Kinges of Marocco formerly had done. And from the time of this Prince, euen to our dayes, Tunis held on the same encreasing Dignity, as well in habitations as ciuility, so that it became the onely and singular Cittie of Affrica. Where now wee leaue her to our larger History, as also
the

The King
of Tunis
King of
Affrica.

the Kingdome of Fez, because the Originall of the one came from the other, and therefore they are the more capable of an intire discourse, which ariseth to a very spacious and large quantitie: There also will we relate the condition and originall of sundry other remote Kingdomes, which (for the reason before alleadged) are in this brieft Chronicle purposely omitted.

¶ Of the great Prouince of Moscouia; As also the Manners, Religion, and power of the Prince their ruling.

Moscouia is a very great northerly Region, containing more then five hundred leagues in length: The principall Cittie thereof being called Mosca, or Moscuua, greater then the Cittie Paris in Fraunce, and seated on the Riuer Mosqua. There is a large Stone squared, in the midst of the Cittie, whereon whosoever can mount himselfe (without beating down) in the vacancy of the Crowne; he is held as Prince of the Countrey, and obtayneth the principality: For very great sightes and combates, the Inhabitants haue had one against another, about the mounting on that Stone. He that comes to be Prince of the Countrey, dooth not call himselfe King, but Duke, being contented with that popular name, and differeth not in Garments from the other Noble-men of the land, saue only, that he weareth a higher bonnet.

A strange
election of
the duke of
Moscouia.

Concerning the
Country.

It is a Countrey rich in Silver, and so strongly guarded thowout, that not onely straungers, but their owne native people likewise, can passe no way without the Princes Letters. The countrey is flat and plaine, without any Mountains: therefore, that which is saide of the Ryphean Mountaines, and that they are in this Countrey is merely fabulous, for there is not any such hill at all. There are great store of Forrests, abounding with wilde Beasts, which are daily chased: and great profite is made (by Trafficke) for the skinnes of those Beasts, as of Harts, Volues, Ermines, Martines, Zubelines, Fouoyes, and diuers others. This Province confineth Liouonia on the one side, Tartaria, on the other, and on the third quarter it hath the Euxine Sea: containing many other Provinces to it, so that the Prince can (in very few daies) leuie foure hundred thousand men on foot, to begin warre with all. They drinke nothing but a kinde of Beere, and yet none but the rich may drinke thereof, for they haue no Wine, but what is brought from other countries. They be subiect to drunkennes, as all other Northerly people are, and Winter is there so sharpe, long and extream, that if any Water be hurled vp into the Ayre, it freezeth before it can fall to the earth. Their Corne neuer perfectly ripens, but when they haue reaped it, they dry it in their stoues or hot-houses, and then grinde it. The Spring time is very colde with them and their Summer, which lasteth but two months onely, is extreamly hot. They haue not

Men for the
Warre.

Their drink
and Corne.

any vse of money, but instead thereof, they haue Their money. Plates of Gold or silver squared, without any marke or stampe thereon, which is taken for as much as it weigheth in merchandize. As for their Garments, they go cloathed like Turks, in long Gownes or Robes, hauing narrow sleeves, and girded about their middle: Their buildings and manner of life, differeth very little from them of Poland and Bohemia. They are Christians like Their Religion. vnto the Greekes, receiuing order of Priest-hood from the Patriarche of Constantinople, saying Service in their Temples in their bulgar toong, which is the Sclauonian Language, and they Characters are Greeke.

The abiding of the Prince, is in a goodly great The Princely Pallace, in the City of Moscuna, built after the Italian manner, being so strong and spacious, as ces Court. (in our times) the like is not to be found. There are in the fore-named City, as also in diuers other places, men very learned and wise, that did make their aboad whereas the Scholes be. The Muscouite is Tributary to the King of Tartaria, Learned men among them. who ouercame them in the yeare of the World, 6745. according as their Annales doo deliuer: their Chronologies are not according to our Observation, in accounting after the yeares of Iesus Christ. When the Tartarian Ambassadors doo come before the Muscouite Prince, hee standeth bare headed before them, and they sit couered. He His daily hath (wel-nere) daily Warres against the Po-warres. lonois and Scythian, who albeit they are subiects to other Kings, yet doth he much enlarge his dominions.

The K. of
Muscovias
Titles.

He is tribu-
tary to the
King of the
Tartars.

minions ouer them. Now, although (as we said at the first) these Princes contented them-selues with the name of Duke, untill the time of his Father now raigning: yet would he needs usurp the name of King, giving himselfe these ensuing Titles, as his Son also doth the same. The great Lord Basilius, by the grace of God, King & Prince of Russia; Great Duke of Volodimeria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, Plescouia, Sureluchia, Tuueria Iugaria, Permia, Vraquia, Bulgaria; Great Lord and Duke of the Lands in Nouagadia the lower: of Cyeruigouia, Rezauia, Riscouia, Belloya, Iaroslauia, Bierosolia, Vdoria, Obdoria, Condidia, &c. By which large plurality of Titles, it appeareth, that he is farre more potent then some haue imagined him to be. But concerning his vassallage to the King of Tartars, he holdes it no dishonour to him, for he doth it to this end: That, while hee keepeth peace with him, hee bringeth (much more easily) vnder his obedience, all the nere neighboring people, and with the power of the great Tartare, he is ten times stronger then of himselfe: For the saide Tartare bringes (ordinarily) a Million of men with him to the field, all well appointed for warre, with two or three hundred peeces of Cannon, and three hundred thousand horse, &c.

Of the Kingdome of Poland.

POlonia, in elder times called Sarmatia, is said to receiue that name of the woode Pole, which

which in that Language is as much to say, as plaine, smooth, or euen: and so much the rather is it to bee credited, because all the Countrey is plaine, spacious, full of thicke wodes, and verie few hilles or mountaines in it. The Earth is colde and freezing, whereby it produceth little store of Wine or Dyle: but contrarywise, it yeldeth much Graine, and diuers other kindes of Pulse, &c.

Zechus and Lechus, or Leschus, were the first that euer governed in Polonia, or there builded any City & Castle. They both governed for some time, but after the whole race of Lechus was extirpated, the Barons of the kingdome assembling to giue succession to Leschus, concluded to liue at liberty, and without any farther checke or controule. Neuerthelesse, that Justice might be administered to the people, and they governed as necessity required: they ordained twelue Vaiuodes or Paladines, which order hath continued in that kingdome, euen to our daies, but not without great hurt to the whole land. For there was no change of these Officers, but the dignitie lasted their life time, although they carried them-selues badly in their authority, despising their betters, and euill entreating their Inferiours. Such as among these Vaiuodes, were Castillians, Commanders of Castelles, Captaines, Judges, and such like great Magistrates, did what themselves pleased, whereby ensued, that this kingdome could neuer haue any great progression in armes, being oppressed by such petty, and no mightie or potent

Of the manner and situation of Polonia.

The first Rulers of Poland.

Vaiuodes, called Paladines.

Gracchus
the firste
Prince of
Poland.

potent Lords. But in no long while after, the faction of Lechus (growing in hatred of the Vaiuodes or Paladines gouernment) would needs haue one peculiar Prince: and therefore, they made choise of a worthy and valiant man, named Gracchus, who dwelt at the fote of the Sarmatian Mountaines, nere vnto the River Vistula. He builded a Citty, calling it Graccouia (which is now corruptly named Cracouia) a Citty greatly blessed, both in beautie and Situation, as also infinite Marchandizes, which is there Trafficked from all Nations of the worlde, it being the Metropolis of the whole kingdome.

Paladines
chosen a-
gaine.

The race of Gracchus sayling, it returned againe to the gouernement of twelue Paladines, but with much infelicity: because, in contending for Competitors, diuers factions grewe amongst them, and (consequently) insurrections in armes to withstand one another, whereby great damage happened to the whole lande. Among these turbulent spirits, there was a Polander named Prarislaus, a man expert in armes, of quicke apprehension, and one that could well fish in such troubled Waters. The people reuolted all to his faction, they made him their King, and he was the first Gouernour of that Province, after the first Lechus or Leschus. After his death, another gallant young man succeeded him, tearmed by the Polacks, Leschus the second, who pursued to be a man of singular prudence: but made olde with time, and dying, he left it to his Sonne Leschus the third. This man made his Sonne Pompi-

A King
created a-
gaine.

lius

lius Legittimate, but deuised the Kingdome among twenty other, that were his Bastards, to the great detriment of the Country. But Pompilius being legittimate, entred into the gouernment, and (leaving Cracouia) appointed his seate in another Citty, called Gneza: but finding it too mollestuous, he transferred the State to another Citty, named Crusiucz. In this Citty he died of the Stone, according as himselfe had continually foretold: And the chiefe Lords being assembled in Counsell, they determined, that no more of Pompilius his successours shoulde raigne ouer them: but (with one consent) made choise of a Countreyman, named Piastus, one of no great stature, but strong and well sinnewed. This was the first branch of those Kings, that continued to the time of Casimirus the second, & of Lodwick: of which selfesame race, were also descended the moderne Princes of Slesia.

This Piastus accepting the Gouernement, took upon him the Title of Duke onely, whose succession coming at length to Boleslaus, in the yeare, D. CCCC. XC. IX. hee was then made King by Otho the third, Emperour. But the Kingdome coming to another Boleslaus, successor to the former: hee was expelled thence, and dyed: Whereupon, the Polonians aduanced in his place, his Brother Vladislaus, in the yeare, MLXXXII. by the Title of Duke. But in the yeare, MCCXCV. the Title of King was taken againe, by Primislaus the second, who at first was Duke of the greater Poland, and of Po-

merania

Cracouia
forsaken by
the King.

Piastus re-
fused the
name of K
calling him
selfe Duke
of Poland.

The descent
of the kings
of Poland.

merauia of Pomerland, and so continued the succession euen to Ladislaus, the first begotten sonne of Cassimirus, who (while his father liued) was designed to bee King of Hungaria, and of Bohemia. He tooke in Marriage Anne, Daughter to the King of Fraunce, by whom hee had Lodwick and Anne. Lodwicke succeeded his father in both his Kingdomes, and tooke to Wife Marie, Sister to Charles the Emperour. But in the yeare of Christ, 1492. the Barons of Polonia (at a dyet) elected, after the Death of Cassimirus, his Sonne Iohn Albertus. His continuance was but a while, therefore by the greater part of the Barons, Alexander Great Duke of Lithuania, was elected: who going in Armes agaynst the Tartares, dyed in Vilua, aged fine & forty yeares. Sigismond, his younger Brother, succeeded him, Anno 1500. who hadde the Title of King, Anno 1506. and made great Warre vpon the neighbouring Nations, especially on the Moscouites, of whom he slew thirty thousand, in the yeare, 1514. He deceasing, Augustus Sigismond tooke his place: and after him, Henry the thirde, Brother to Charles the ninth, King of Fraunce, was chosen and made King. But his Brother dying, and he affecting his paternall kingdom, (more then the other) forsooke Poland, and went into France to his rightfull Inheritance. The Polanders being thus forsaken, they made choise of Maximilian the second, being Emperour, to be their King: But he not resoluing to accept it, and the Kingdom standing on some doubtful tearms,

Stepha-

Henry heire
of France,
King of Po-
land.

Stephanus Battori, Prince of Transiluania, being a man of great valor, came into Poland with a slender power, where he was created King, and so continueth.

A brieue Suruay of sundry other kingdomes, as they were (by commaund of the Emperour Iustinian) set downe in the Romaine Bookes de *Iuris-prudentia*.



The Romaine Emperours, in their Imperiall Titles of honour and renowne, did not onely obserue & giue to themselves, the names of those Provinces wonne by them, or reduced vnder the yoke of their Empire: but likewise of such Nations and people, as lest they owne Countreyes (in abounding multitudes) and entered vpon the possessions of others, to expell and chase thence the naturall Inhabitauntes, to plant there their owne abyding, by bidding them many Bat-
tailes: in some surmounting, and in others spee-
ding according to the Fortune of Warre. Of those Nations, I intend to speake in some measure, of their Originall, and howe they succeeded, because (at length) they ruined the great Romaine Emperors: whereto I am the rather induced, to trust such as are little skilled in Histories (not onely Cosmographicall, but likewise Geographicall) and to shewe them
appa-

Strange na-
tions weak-
ned the Ro-
man Em-
pire.

apparently, howe much they haue iniured the greater part of our Hemisphere.

The originall of the Gothes.

More people then the Countrey can feede.

Wee will first beginne with the Gothes, because they were the first that forsooke their owne native Countrey, which was called Gothia, or Gothland, signifying a good Land, it being a Northerne Province of Germanie. This Land abounded in Graine, Fruites, Cattle, Woodes, Rivers, Metals; but especially, in Copper, and Skinnes seruing for furs. At all times, and as yet (at this day) is to be discerned, the Kingdom of Swessia or Sweuia, hath bin comprized vnder the Dominion of the Gothes. As the Countrey was fertile in fruites, euen so were the Women thereof likewise in Children, for, as they were strong and of great stature; so had they usually two Children at a birth, which was the cause then, and so it yet continueth, that they had and haue more people, then can well liue together, the Country not being sufficient to find sustentance for so many. In like manner, they are very great feeders, much more then they that liue in the Easterne or Peridionall partes. The Gothes perceiuing, and aduisedly pondering on this brgent case, they leued the more part, of the youngest and strongest men of their Countrey, to the number of three hundred thousand; and married such as were not, to ridde themselves of the charge of Daughters, as well as of Sonnes, for the Countrey ordinarily abounded in the feminine, more then in the masculine Sexe. So, being well prouided of all necessities for warre,

and

and leauing a chiefe commander at home, of the Royal linage; they wandered abroad through the fields, to win by power, or compasse by loue, some new habitation wherein to liue.

The Goths wander to seeke a new dwelling.

Many Authors, and among the rest Trebelius sayth, that the first tidings of this their straying, was vnder the raigne of the Emperour Flauius Claudius, about the yeare of Iesus Christ 172. And that they passed thorough Allemaign, Hungary, Thrace, Greece, Gaule, and into Italy. They lost many battailes, and wonne likewise as many against the Romaines, and other people, maintaining themselves so well; that they raigned in Italie (euen in despite of the Italians and Emperours) the space of seauentie one yeares, as Procopius auoucheth. At length they went into Spaine, whence afterward they would not remoue: for the Catholique Kinges of Spaine, that then raigned by succession, and raigne yet to this present, were issued from the race and line of their Kinges, who were (indeed) very generous people. Now it is not to be imagined, that in regard of such a mightie leuy of men, the Countrey of Gothia or Gothland, or the neighbouring borders remained without Inhabitants, or the rule of Kinges: for there were then left behinde, so many as the Land was able to nourish, who had their Kinges in authorityouer them, and strength sufficient, to withstand any inuasion of the Countrey. As for the conquering Armes abroad, they continued in honour for a very long time, albeit they lost great

The Goths raigne in Italy and Spaine.

The reason of the Gothes continuance.

those of men in battailes, encounters, surprisals, and passages of Rivers: yet were these disadvantages still supplied, by the daily birth of Children among them, because they had their wives in all places with them. Perhaps some Strangers mingled among the, who wealing their habits, & learning their language, help still to supply the sup of this people. Such as haue bin named *Ostrogoths*, were people issued of the same country of Gothia, or Gotteland, as a place which is yet cald Ostrogothia: the principall Citties whereof are Sche-ning and Lincoe. They used to warre alone by themselves, being separate from the Goths, yet changing the world according as they did.

The Westrogthes in like manner, came out of a Country cald Westrogthia, among whom the chiefest Citties, to this day, are Scaris, and Verren. Also the *Bisgoths*, or *Bisgoths*, came south of a Country named Visbi, the principall Cittie whereof is yet called Visbi. I was the more willing to make this description; because I haue heard of others (who are but slenderly experienced in Cosmography) that do teame those Ostrogths, to bee Gothes. Orientall, or of the East; and the Westrogths, Occidentall Gothes, or dwelling in the West, and so contrary wise of the other. Albeit they were all descended and came out of the Kingdome of Gothia, or Gotteland, as Munster hath very well observed.

The Vandales, in the externall judgement of Procopius, a Graike Anthour, are said to be of the same nation; and that all the people of Gothes,

Goths, Vandales, Alains, Hunnes, and others, (whom I am hereafter to describe) were deriued out of one and the same Land, and were comprehended all vnder the name of Sauromates, or Sarmates, and haue no other difference, but by the names of their Captaines or Kinges. But I must maintaine against him, that the land of the Vandales is distant from Gotheland, aboue the space of two hundred leagues, and therefore they cannot bee one people with the Gothes. True it is, that this Nation is Septentrionall, or in the North, as the others are, and is a certaine Countrey, named yet to this day Vandalia: but, as I haue already saide, very farre off the one from the other. This people did (almost) as much hurt to the Romaine Empire, as the Gothes did, for, ioyning diuers other people with them, as the Alains, Suabes, & Franconians, they trauesed the Rheine, Gauderichus being then their King, and passing among the Gaules, wasted and spoyled them very greatlie. Then went they into Spaine, and tooke possession (in despite of the Gothes) of the Countrey adioyning to the Kingdome of Granado, which (to this day) is called Vandalia, or (by corrupting the word) Vandelusia, albeit the Spanyards mince it more nicely, and nick-name it to be Andalusia. But to bee brieve, they were thrust south of Spayne (wholly) in the yeare 431. vnder another of their Kinges, named Gensericus, and passed thence into Asia, where they reigned 76. yeares. From thence they were compelled, in

The error of Procopius.

The trauels of the Vandales into diuers countries.

seauenty yeare of the Emperoꝝ Iustinian, Anno Dom. 528. by the valour of one of his Captaines, named Belisarius.

The Huns
of Scythia,
and theyr
trauailes.

The Hunnes departed also out of their Countrey, for the selfe same cause as the Gothes did, about the yeare one hundred sixty eyght, onely to seeke some Land, where they might liue after the Scythians Religion, making first choyce of Pannonia : where they alwayes so strongly kept and guarded it, till (after their owne name) it was called Hungaria. This people came from that part of Scythia, which is tearmed Hunos, no long distance from the Riner Tanais : but it is a miserable estate at this day, and vnder subiection of the Moscouite. Having vsurped Pannonia, they kept it manfully against the Romaines, and two hundred yeares after, Attila theyr King, accompanied with some people of Allemaigne, as Bohemians, Gepides, or Gipedes, Schlesites, Werlies, Thuringians, Goths, Ostrogothes, and others, making (in all) about the number of sixe hundred thousand men : passed through Allemaigne, which they much endamaged. Then went he into France, where hee lost a battaile, in which perished a great number of his men : this battel was giuen him by the Romans, Gaules, and certaine Goths, allied together, and he lost (as some Authoꝝ doe affirme) aboue two hundred thousand men. At length he iourneyed into Italy, which he (well-nere) vtterly ruined : and retiring afterwarde into his owne Countrey of Hungary, he died within fewe following moneths,

Attila, his
losse in
France.

neths, and on the day of his nuptials, which was in the yeare of Iesus Christ 443.

The Lombards were a Northerne people, descended out of Denmarke, as Eusebius maintaineth : and no other reason had they to leaue their Countrey, but onely a desire to win some other. There happened in the time of Senoꝝ Sweno, as some call him, King of Denmark, a very great dearth or scarcity (in the Land) of victuals, and because the people endured it very impatiently : it was concluded by the King and his Countell, (to ease the Countrey of so many men as were ready to famish) that all such persons as were unable, either for war, or labour of the ground, should be slaine, whether they were old or young. But this severe Edict being reuoked, they then resolved, to make a levy of all sorts of people, that (by the help of armes) might trauaile to find out some other dwelling, so to disburthen the charge of the Countrey. This being put in execution, they trauailed so far, and carried themselves so courageously in traueling diuers lands : that they came at last into Italy, and there conquered the Countrey which was called Istria, making themselves absolute Maisters thereof. Now, because these people were long and tall of stature the Italians and Istrians called them long Barbarians, which by corruption of the word, and succession of times made them tearmed Longbards, or Lombardes. Some are of opinion, that vnder the reign of Valentinian the Emperoꝝ, they began to make themselves first knowne, which was about the yeare

Of the Lombards, and whence they descended.

A very severe Edict.

Istria in Italy conquered, and new named Lombardy.

of Christ 385. and that they became commaunders in Istria, in the yeare 570. Likewise, according to Diaconus, the Emperours made peace with them, in the yeare 730. and ever since they haue held that Country, which at this day is named Lombardy. Let it here be further noted, that where (in any History) mention is made of people tearmed Daces, or Danians; the Nation of Denmark is thereby understood: out of which country, many great Armies haue traiailed at sundry times, and haue mightily troubled diuers kingdomes: among which, they continued long time in England, but were thence expelled, about the yeare 860.

The Normanes
manifested
from Norduegia.

The Normanes were people of Norduegia, or otherwise called Normania, or Norway, a Country in the North, being much addicted to cruelty and inhumanitie, because they vsed many great Piracies on the Sea. An hundred and fifty thousand men of this Nation, bestowed themselves in vessels on the Sea, and took possession of that part of Gaule or Fraunce, which was then tearmed Neustria, now Normandie, which was doone in the yeare of Iesus Christ, 600. others saie 884. and in the time of Charles le Gros. But be it howsoeuer, they haue (since then) kept it against all encounters of the Emperours, Kings of France and England, preserving it still by the Name of Normandy, and themselves reckoned to be people of vndaunted courage. There are diuers others, that doe saueur of this their first originall, and doe yet proule vpon the Seas,

Seas, committing many cruell Robberies.

The Nation which we call Swesses, Zuitzers, ^{Suesses came out of Swecania.} or Sweues, who (at this daie) are auxiliarie to the French, came out of Swenia or Sweueland, a Northerly Region, like vnto the other. They likewise (by the dearth of food among them) departed forth of their Countrey, about the yeare of, Grace 800. and went so farre as the Rhine, which they would haue passed, but were hindered therein by the Franconians. Thence went they to the Land of the Heluetians, who despising the Sueffians (because they were poorely and wretchedly apparelled, rude in their feeding, and not looking like souldiers) suffered them to wander about their Countrey. At length, perceiuing the kinde sufferance of the Heluetians, they sought to abide in a certaine Canton of their Land. Which when the Heluetians noted, they demanded of them, to what ende they thus wandered about the World. They answered, that they were poore people, and sought but to weare out their liues in traiaile, by deluing or labouring in the Earth. And saing that there was wast Ground in those partes, unlaboured, or any vse made of (it being Hilles and Vallies, enuironed with Lakes) they desired the Heluetians, to permit them to wooke in those rough fieldes, as yet not cultiue, and they should receiue the benefit thereof, onely allowing them but nourishment for their pains. This was all that they seemed to pretend, iustifying their requests with solemne oathes and protestations.

They goe
among the
Heluetians.

Their po-
uertrie a-
mong the
Heluetians.

Theyr desire was graunted, and not long after, the Countrey wherein they liued, was not onely called Suecia, in regarde of the Swedians there dwelling: but likewise the ancient Inhabitants had the same name giuen then, and yet the countrey is very hilly, and vnapt for Ryding. Whose afterward it came to be called the Lande of Cantons or Leagues, shall at large be shewne in our Generall history.

Of the Al-
lemaignes,
& whence
they were
deriued.

The true
Allemaignes
of Suaba.

Iustinian, and other Emperours (both before & after him) entitled themselves Lordes of the Allemaignes, for hauing receiued some victories ouer the Allemaignes. But this may not be said, (as some doo) that those victories were obtayned against the Germanes: for euen at this daye, when we speake or write, of Allemaigne, therein is comprehended all the Nations, which are contained throughout Germany, and that do speake the Language of the Tentones. But as for Allemaigne, or Almaines, the Romans neuer vnderstood, or meant any other people, then those of Suaba. And to speake vprightly, they haue euer bin the true and ancient Allemaines, as Cornelius Tacitus plainly confirmeth. Drusus Nero, was the first that stiled himselfe Germanicus, for hauing rather angered the Germanes, then soyled them, as diuers other Emperours afterward did. Whereouer, by Germany is to be vnderstood, nine and forty great Provinces, as well of the lower part, as the higher part of the sayde Germany, comprizing the Countrey of the Suisses and Heluctians.

Now

Now, concerning the Alaines, or Alans, many Alaines, haue supposed them to be a people of Germanie: what people they were, and are deceiued, for Pto-
lomy knew them, whom he placeth in a parte of Scythia. Capitolinus bestowes them in Dacia: Martelinus, Plinie, & Dionisius the Poet, giues them a being in Sarmatia of Europe. Iosephus in his last Booke, affirmes their aboade to bee betwene the River Tanais, and the Palus Meotides: And saith moreover, that, in his time, the Alaines or Alanes, accompanied with the Hyrcanians, both robbed and spoyled all the Region of the Medes. As for my selfe, by that which I haue gathered, from such as haue written on the actions of the Gothes: I am perswaded, that those Alaines were theyr companions, and that oftentimes (in their warres) for their owne aduantage they sundered themselves from them, as one while they did with the Vandales. But questionlesse, their descent was from Scythia, according to Ptolomies affirmation.

If we shall speake of the Gepides, Girpedes, Of the Gepides or
or Iupedes, what people they were, there are opinions enow concerning them. Some say, that they were at first of Scythia, and came thence as the Lombards did into Italy. But hauing made a more curious and diligent search, I finde, that they were a people of Germany, and called then Gepudij or Sepusij, and (according to Ptolomeus Matauastus) now at this day, Siebemburgs, that followed the Gothes, the Vandals, and the Normands also: being erring and vagabonde people,

people, till at length they ventured on the Seas, and went to inhabite the Isles of the Orchades, whereof Thylle is the latest inhabited, as Volateranus auoucheth, and they are now subiectes to the King of Scotland.

The Originall of the Picts, and their coming into the Isle of Orkeney.

In speaking of so many Nations, who are all said to be deriued from the Scythians, we may not forget the Picts, who (by most Writers opinion) are said to be a people of Germany, that had their Originall out of Scythia, descending of the Agathyrsi in Sarmatia, who vsed to paint and colour their faces, & thereupon were named Picts. Before they entred into Britaine, they inhabited the Isle of Orkeney for a long time together, ferrying ouer into Cathness daily, & so multiplying both in power & number, that (getting by further into the land) they possessed Rosse, Murrey-land, Merne & Angusse, whence passing into Fife and Louchian, they drue thence the Brittain Inhabitantes, who were onely poore people, that liued by nourishing & breeding Cattle. This their entrance into Albion (for so was it then called) was in the year of the world's creation, 3633. Cruthneus Camelonus is said to be the first king of the Picts, & that he builded a famous Citty on the bank of the Riuer called Caron, appointing it to be the chief Citty of all the Pictish kingdom. He builded also the town of Agneda, afterward called Edenbrough, of Ethus king of the Picts, and the Castle, named The Castle of Maydens, because 5 Pictish kings kept their daughters there vnder strict custody, in all good exercises, till their yeares of marriage. Concerning

The first k. of the Picts;

cerning the warres, strifes, and bloody contentions, betwene the Albion Scots and Picts, thorough all their Kings raings, till their vtter overthrow, and quite desolation of Pict-land, by Kenneth the victorious King of Scots: I referre it to our larger discourse. Only letting you know, that this subuersion, and vtter ruine of the Picts, happened in the year of our redemption, 839. in the first yeare of King Kenneths glorious raigne, & 1168. yeares after their first plantation in Albion.

Kenneth K. of Scots. desolaterh Pictland.

The Getes haue bin, and yet are a warlike people, mollested greatly by the Turkes at this instant: and yet they found the Romain work sufficient. These are the Transylvanians, Valachians & Moldauians, & their country is neere to the Riuer Ister, where it falleth into the Pontick sea.

Of the Getes.

The Bourguignons are helde by Orosius, to come forth of Germany, and Volatteranus saith, that Iouinianus the Emperour vanquished some such people, that liued by the Riuer of Rhine. But there is nothing more certaine (according as I haue gathered by the Germane Histories) then that they yssued from some remaynes of the Gothes, Vandals, and Hunnes, who beeing altogether chased by the Romaines, threw themselves on that part of Gaule, which is called after theyr name, and there (perforce) enthroned themselves. For afterwarde, they coulde so well resist the Romaines, that they were constrained to yelde them tolleration, and let them liue in the saide Countrey amongst the first Inhabitants. Where they builded Fortes, Villages, and

Of the Bourguignons.

Of their
first name.

and *Tofones*, which they called then *Bourgs* of the *Gothes* & *Hunnes*: but being some corrupted into one word, from *Bourgs-Goth-Hunnes*, they are now called *Bourguignons*, as much to say, as a martiall people. *Aetius*, Lieutenant to the Empero^r *Theodosius*, gave them a battel in the yeare of *Christ*, 435. and won the day: But it cost him so deare, that he would neuer after meddle any more with them. About the yeare, 430. they receiued and embraced the *Chistian* sayth. This people in these dayes are become very ciuill, and are as much addicted to Learning, as to Armes: For they haue a goodly *Uniuerstie*, founded by one of the *Dukes* of *Bourgougne*, wherein many Lectures are read of all the *Sci-ences*, to *Schollers* of all *Nations*, at *Dola* the Capitall Citty of that parte of *Bourgougne*, which is under commaund of the house of *Austria*, and there they hold a *Parliament* also. As for the other part of *Bourgougne*, in obedience to the Crowne of *France*, *Digeon* is the *Metropolitane* Citty thereof, where likewise is held another *Parlament*: And these two *Bourgougnes* are maintained in very good peace, albeit they are in obeysance to diuers *Princes*.

A faire vni-
uerstie in
Bourgougne

Of the
kingdome
of Naples.

We wil conclude this discourse with the kingdome of *Naples*, which is a Citty very auncient and Noble in all respects, and giueth the Title of kingdome to the whole *Prouince*, by her owne proper name. As concerning the name of *Kingdome*, I do not hold it to be of any great antiquity, because the *Normanes* took it, from the *Grecians*,

cians, who possessed this *Prouince* in diuers partes thereof, and then it was entituled the *Earldome* of *Apulia* or *Puglia*, as some do yet tearme it. *Robert Guiscard*, a verie valiant and woorthy man, expelled suddenly the *Grecians* thence, and tooke *Sicilie* also from the *Sarrazins*, entitling himselfe Duke of *Apulia*, and of *Calabria*, and Earle of *Sicilie*. In no long time after, his nephew *Ruggiero* or *Roger*, having conquered the Citty of *Naples*, which till that time had bene in the *Grecians* Government, receiued the Title of King of both the *Scicilies*, by *Anacletus* the *Anti-Pope*, in the yeare of our *Lorde*, 1130. which afterwarde was confirmed vnto him in good and lawfull manner. And from that time forwarde, it was called the kingdome of *Scicilie*, on this side *Pharos*, vntill the raigne of *Charles* the first, when it became deuided from *Sicilie*, by occasion of that famous accident, called *Vesro Sciciliano*, the *Scicilian* *Quening*, wherein so many of the *French* were slaine. I finde moreover in many good *Historians*, that *Naples* hath had three severall names to wit; the *Kingdome* of *Naples*; the *Kingdome* of *Apulia*, and the *Kingdome* of *Scicilie*, on this side *Pharos*.

Robert
Guiscard
the valiant
Norman.

The Scicilian
eue-
ning.

¶ Of the Kingdome of *Portugall*.

The *Kingdome* of *Portugall*, beganne in the yeare of *Christ*, *M.C.X.* after this manner,
Henric

Hen. count
of Lorraine

The first K.
of Portugall

The King
of Portugal
a Knight of
S. Iohn of
Ierusalem,

Henry Earle of Lorraine comming thether, per-
formed many valiant deedes against the Sarra-
zins: And his high desertings moued Alphon-
sus the first, King of Castile, to giue him a Ba-
rardo daughter of his in mariage, named Tiresia,
and (in way of Dowrye) assigned him also that
part of Galicia, which then was contained in Lu-
sitania. Of this marriage was Alphonso borne,
who was the first that euer stiled himselfe K. of
Portugall, and he was the first also that took the
Citty of Lisbon from the Sarrazins. For he ha-
ving conquered five of their kings in seuerall bat-
tels, caused his Armes to bee adorne with five
seuerall Crownes and Coat-Armors, which euer
after continued the Ensigne of the kings of Por-
tugall, in perpetuall memory of his valour. But
he quickly stained this faire fame, with crueltie
used by him to his owne mother, for, after her se-
cond marriage, he caused her to be imprisoned: &
albeit the Pope labored the matter greatly by his
Legate, yet could hee neuer compass her deliue-
rance. Which sin was seuerely punished on him
by his enemies, who afterwarde took him in bat-
tell. And then his son Sanctio succeded him, and
after Sanctio diuers other, to Iohn, who was the
tenth King in direct and natural line. This Iohn
was at the first expelled from his Kingdome, and
made a Knight of S. Iohn of Ierusalem: but at
length he was re-called to his kingdome, where
he made very honorable proofe of his valour, and
(among diuers famous deedes) he took from the
Sarrazins the Citty of Septia. Hee had seauen
sonnes

Sonnes, among which Ferdinand (for intergri-
ty of life) was tearmed a Saint. Henry another
of his Sonnes, was the first that found Noua Insu-
la in the Atlantike Sea. He being very skilful
in the Mathematicks, liued continually without
a Wife, and made his daily abiding in a Mon-
astery, which was called the Cape of S. Vin-
cent, and there he died in the yeare, 1460. But
Edward, who was the eldest brother, was made
King, and (by warres) he adorne to the king-
dome of Portugall, Zelia, Tigea, and Alcazar
in Africa. He had two Daughters, or Sisters
(as some say), named Isane and Leonora: the
first was married to the king of Castille, and the
other to Frederick the third, Emperour: of whom
was borne Maximilian the first, who was after-
ward Emperour, and Grandfather to Charles the
fift. He had also a Son named Alphonso, who
succeded him in the kingdome, and begate Iohn
& Emanuel, who was 14. king of Portugal. Ema-
nuel had Iohn, who took to wife, y sister of Charls
5. Emperour, called Katherine. Lodwick died an
infant, but Isabel was wife to the said Charles, &
he had another daughter, who was married to Charls
D. of Sauoy. After him succeded Sebastian, who
(in our tyme, fighting with the Moors was slain,
and the king of Marocco, with diuers other great
Lords of the Moors. Henry, Uncle to the decea-
sed king, followed him in succession, he being then
a Cardinal, & very aged; holding the kingdome but
some few months. But he dying, Phillip king of
Spain entred on the kingdom, resisting the claime
of

The succel-
sion of the
Kinges of
Portugall.

of Don Anthonio, being a Brother-son of the dead King Henry, and so out-wareied him, that he could neuer attaine thereto in full possession. So it remaineth still vnder the Spanish gouernment.

¶ The Kingdome of Italy.

Concerning the Kingdome of Italy, the antiquity thereof, when at first it was called Ianicula, of Ianus; Camescena, of Cameses; Saturnia, of Saturnus, Hesperia, of Hesper, and Italia of Italus, with all the Kings there reigning, till the Latines, and those likewise that descended of Eneas, to the time of Romulus, with the History both of olde Rome, and Rome as it now is; it remaineth to our generall History. Onely we will say somewhat of the Originall of Venice, moued thereto by iust occasion.

A breefe discourse of the Originall of the Venetians; the foundation of Venice, and how it hath bene gouerned, from the year of our saluation 421. to this instant.

To the ancient, Right Worshipfull, and worthy Society of the Gold-Smiths.

Historiographers, who haue written of the Venetians, doe not agree together in their true Originall. For some doe write, that they are descended of the Venetian Gaules, inhabiting along

long the Ocean Sea in little Britaigne, called Armorica, whereof one of the principall Citties (being a Bishops See) was called Vennes. Others, and among them; Titus Lilius borne in Padua, assures vs, that they came forth of Paphlagonia, and that Philemon their Captaine, (being slaine at Troy the great) they went with Antenor into Italy. Others write, that this Nation, hauing bene Neighbours to the Cappadocians, and venturing fight with the Cimmerians; they hazarded further vpon the Adriatick Sea in their fortune. The most common opinion, is of them, who say, that the Hinitians or Henetes came with Antenor, and, in some time after (by changing of a letter) were called Venetians, or Venetes. First of all, they expelled the Euganeans, who inhabited this Countrey, betwene the Adriatick Sea and the Alpes, and builded the Cittie of Padua. Afterward, by success of time, they increased in such sort, as they would not be satisfied to bee Maisters (onely) of that which had appertained to the Euganeans, (consisting of thirtie foure faire Citties and Townes;) but intruded farther, to seaze on Bressano and Forli. Some report this Countrey to be bounded with the Riuers of Pau, and that of Adde, as also the Lake of Guard, aunciently called the Benack, the Alpes, and the Adriatick Sea.

And so the auncient Venitians, in this manner extended their Dominion, both in longitude and latitude, in the most pleasant Countrey of Italy: but

People of Paphlagonia
People by the inner gulfes of the Adriatick Sea, towards the Alpes.

Liburnia,
the Coun-
trei of Cro-
atia, be-
tween Istria
& Dalmatia

The situa-
tion of Ve-
nice, and
capacitie
thereof,

but the seating of the places, did daily beget the elder estate of the Venitians hatred. For on the one side, the ordinary robberies of the Liburnians, and on the other side, y frequent and frightful courses of the Barbarians, did hinder them from any long time of continuing in quiet. For, without these impeachments, this nation had bene most fortunate, in conquering (by the right of Warre) one of the most goodly and beautifull Regions in all Italie. Nowe, ouer and beside, that on the South-side, it is enuironed with a most calme circuite of the Sea, and in regard thereof, is the more capable of receiuing all strange Merchandizes: So is it likewise watered with very delectable Riuer, whereby, whatsoeuer cometh from the Sea, is easilie transported to the very Pauell of the Prouince. It aboundeth in Pooles, Ponds, Forrests and vnder-woodes, and the whole Land is choicelie fertile in Corne, Wine, Oyle, and all kindes of Fruites. It is also plentifully stozed with Countrey Houses, Townes, Citties, and Villages, Castles, Fortes, and such like, very commendable for the situation, and enclosure of their Walls.

These now Inhabitants, when their weak estate beganne to growe in fairer forme: they were seldome exempted from the Warres and incursions of Straungers. For, after manie bolde insolencies of the Barbarians, with continued Warres against each other, euen from their very beginning, untill the time of Attila:

they

they were yet much more dreadfully encombered, with the furious assault of the Gordes, a tempest farre exceeding in turbulencie, all other former disasters happening to them whatsoeuer. For first, the Hunnes (a people of Scythia, dwelling nere to the Riphean Mountaines) conducted by Attila, the Sonne of Mandluck, dispersed themselves ouer Italie, and making horrible spoyle wheresoeuer they went; fell into the Prouince belonging to the Venitians. After a long siege, they tooke the Cittie of Aquileia, and spoiled and burnt it wholly. In like manner did they ruinate the Citties of Concordia and Altina, and almost all the Venitian Region.

Mountains
in the north
part of Scy-
thia, where
snow lieth
continually

An ancient
citty in that
part of Ita-
ly, called
Forum Julij.

At the fearefull newes of this Warre, the Venitians were more amazed then any other, and so much the rather, because they had bene formerly inbred, to sustaine their chiefeest mis-happes amongst the Barbarians. Whereupon, it is saide, that (euen then) a great number of persons with-drewe themselves from the firme Land, to the Isles where Venice at this instant is builded: hasting thither from all other partes, especiall vpon the arriual of this cruell Enemy Attila. Some (of the better sort of Padua) first began the retreat, and being come to the entrance of the Riuer, which was then very deepe, (whence the name of Rialto hath remained to the same place, as deriued of the word Riuealto) they there laid the first foundation of the Cittie of Venice.

The first
foundation
of Venice,

The meaner people of Padua, enforced by the selfe same feare; fled thence, and began to people themselves in Chioggia, Malamocco and Albisola. **Some** of them of Aquileia (at the same time) betooke themselves to the Barthes or Fennes of Grada, and, vpon the fresh returne of Attila, the people ranne (in mighty affluence) along the sea Coastes to the neighbouring Isles. They of Aquileia bestowd themselves in Grada, a place next to firme Land, yet engirt with Waters. They that fledde from Concordia, made vse of Coarli and the Attinois, five little Islands nere to one another; which they gaue names vnto, according to the names of the Gates of their former lost and ruined Citties: To wit; Torcello, Maiorbo, Buriano, Muriano, Amiana, & Constantiaco.

The prime estate of the place where Venice now standeth.

The first builders of Venice, & at what time.

These severall places, where at this present the city of Venice is seated, were (in elder times) very strait or narrow Islandes, and nere vnto each other: sauing onely that they were separated by the pleasing course of Riuer, which ranne into, and returned againe from the Sea, according to the changes of his fluxe and reflux. For in these straites were then any dwellings to bee discerned, but onely of Sea-fowles, that flew thither from the Seas, to sport themselves vpon the Sunnie bankes; and Fishermen also would some-times there put in for harbour.

The Paduans, that tooke vp the Rialto, were the first that beganne to builde, and it was in the

ry same place, where the first foundation of the City was laid: namely, the 25. day of March, in the yeare of our Lord, 421. and second yeare of the raigne of Pharamond, first King of the Gaules or French-men; in the time also of Pope Boniface the first, and of the Emperour Honorius. Whereby it plainly appeareth, that at one and the selfe same time, began both the kingdome of France, and the Commonwealth of Venice. And that both the one and the other haue continued to this present, for twelue hundred yeares, very little, either more or lesse.

This Cittie so newlie begun, encreased daillie both in people and buildings. But see what happened vpon a suddaine, a Greeke Carpenters House (or rather he was one of the Shipwrights, named Entinopus) falling a fire, consumed in a moment (with a violent & continual embracing) 24. faire new built Houses. Which when these new-come inhabitants perceiued, and fearing that Heauen was offended with this their manner of beginning, forgetting God, and seruing their owne appetites. They fell all to prayer, and made a soleinne vow, to bulde a Church in the honour of God, and in memory of the Apostle S. James; at which very instant time, a mighty tempest of raine (as suddainelie fell) whereby the rest of the new-begun Cittie was happilie preserved.

That Church is yet at this daie plainelie to be discerned, with the marks and appearances of great antiquity, euen in the very midst of the Rialto:

The first
Church
built in Ve-
nice,

alto : And it was then consecrated by foure By-
shops, to wit ; Seuerianus Bishop of Padua ; Am-
brose, Bishop of Alina ; Iocundus, Bishoppe of
Trevisa, & Epodius, bishop of Vderzo, & a Priest
was there appointed, to perfoyme diuine seruice.

Noble and
rich men
the first fou-
nders of Ve-
nice,

The first foundations of this famous Citty,
were men of honest repute, Noble and rich . For
the ancient Venitians, at the change of their abi-
ding, brought with them thither their Wines
and Childzen, with the very wealthiest moouea-
bles which they had, and so (at leisure) withdrew
themselves, to places of a more secure dwelling.
But being impeached (by incursions of the
Hunnes) to Till the Groundes vppon the Sea
Coastes ; such as had any meanes of apt commo-
ditie : gaue themselves to fighting, and to make
Salt, or to transport the goods of their neighbors ;
esteeming the benefite thereby gotten, to bee no
more dishonest or unbenefiting, then to plough
and husband the grounds of others.

As for the wealthier sort, they addicted them-
selves to Traffick Merchandizes with strangers,
and by their frequent aduenturing into diuers
Countries, some of them, being very skilfull Spi-
ners, and well experienced in the triall of seuerall
Doors or Mettals hidden in the ground, which by
industry and endeaour they found in the earth ;
became Finers or Triers of those Mettals, and
extracted (from the grosser substances) the purer
perfections of Golde and Siluer, whereby (in
their owne language they were termed Orifici,
deriued of the Latin word Aurifex, Gold-Smiths,
or

or Hammer-Pen, that (of those refined Met-
tals) could frame Cuppes, Pots, Ringes, Ba-
sons, Cyners, or any other needfull matter what-
soeuer, both for the seruice of God in Churches
and Temples, and for the royaltie of Emperors,
Kinges, and Princes . So that, by the consent
of diuers good Authours, as Liuie, Florus, Cas-
siodorus, Trogus Pompeius, and others, the
first Gold-Smiths, Workers in Gold and Sil-
uer, and framers of those excellent Mettals into
such orderly meanes for vse (within the partes of
Europe) liued in Venice, whereas yet (to this
day) doe remaine the very best, ingenious and
perfect work-men for such matters (according to
the iudgement of many) that are to bee found in
any part of the World . Concerning such, as re-
mained more ordinarily at home, for care and
safetie of the Citty, they applied their spirits,
to deuise good lawes and customes for generall
benefite . During which time, such was their
due respect of Justice, and so precise care of equi-
tie and right to all men, as, among so great a
number of people, there could not bee any disor-
derly differences noted.

Catholique Religion they so singularly com-
mended, and the daylie presence of some reue-
rend Prelates, who had saued themselves with
their Compatriots : that it augmented (among
them) a common affection to piety. And their assis-
tance appeared very requisite, not onely for the
ministry of holy offices ; but also for retention of
the Inhabitants of this new Citty, in auncient
piety and Religion.

The first
Goldsmiths
knowne in
Europe,
were in Ve-
nice.

Care of Ju-
stice and
common
good.

Loue of re-
ligion, in
especial re-
spect.

fearing, least they might bee infected with the popson of Arrian Heresie : because nothing else made more spoyle and hauocke thorough all the Province, except the Weapons of the Gothes and Hunnes.

Such was the beginning of the Citty of Venice, and in such manner of living, and in such exercises, shee spent her first infancy : till (by her Vertues) shee attained to greater groweth, and grounded her selfe in her instant state and condition. It hath constantly bin held, that this common-wealth (euer more) retained that forme of gouernment which is tearmed Aristocratia, that is, that the most noble and worthiest Cittizens, should guide and gouerne. For although it be saide, that it hath bin gouerned, first by Consuls, then by Tribunes, and lastly by Dukes, & Masters of warlike power : yet notwithstanding, all these Dignities, being but electiue, and not hereditary, the election should (in right) appertain to the most Noble Islanders, and Gentlemen of name, by whose aduise the Common-weale ought to be managed, euen as it hath bin, and still continueth to this day.

Consuls, to the number of thre, were chosen for two yeares, and albeit that this kinde of Gouernment lasted for about the space of threescore yeares, yet hee finde only but thre consecutiue or succeding elections of them. The first Consuls, were Albertus Phalarius, Thomas Candianus, and Zeno Daulo. These men first gouerned the Citty in her Nonage, and some are of the minde, that

*Aristocratia
optimam
principatus.*

The Gouernment
of Consuls,
and who
were the
first in Venice.

that they were the first Authors of the Padnaus flight, and their rettyement to the Lakish or marshy Isles, as also of their first building there. The second Consuls, were Lucianus Graulus, Maximus, or Marinus Lucius, and Hugo Fuscus. The third, were Marcus Aurelius, Andreas Claudius & Albinus Maurus. The names of such as were elected after these, are not to be found in any Histories.

After, that the Isles (about the Rialto) were filled with Inhabitants: in sted of Consuls, Tribunes were created, and for their creation, the matter was first debated priuately by fewe people, afterwarde, it was ordained and resolved in open assembly of the Islanders : that in each Isle there should be a Tribune, and he should bee a yearely Magistrate, to render Iustice to the Cittizens, and with severity, to punnish their offences. But the remainder, which concerned the generality of the Common-weale : was referred to the generall assembly of the Islanders, to bee by them determined. Afterward, there was but one Tribune created, for gouernement of the Isles, which continued for some yeares. Finally, they concluded to create teane, wherunto were added two more, who should dwell in Heraclea : And this Tribunary dignity held place for more then two hundred yeares. Here is to be noted, that the Tribunes of the Isles, abusing their authorities, did so trouble the State with ciuill dissensions, as it plainly appeared, that the maine bodie of the Citty would bee dissolved, without some
god

The creation of Tribunes, and what they were.

god and immediate remedy. Which gave occasion, that (to heare the complaints of euery one) a generall assembly of the Isles was published, and their meeting to be in Heraclea.

Election of
a Duke among the
Venetians.

In this assembly, Christophero, Bish. of Grada was President, accompanied with a great number of the Clergy, & after diuine seruice was performed, the first proposition which he made, was, (for good of the commonwealth) each man might complain of y future Tribune, which being done, and the offences no longer to be indured, for publick benefit of the state in general. resolution was set down, to make election of a Duke, who should represent all hono^r and Maiesty in the State of Siegneurie, and he should haue power to assemble the generall counsell, when questions were to be made, of any important matter concerning the Commonwealt. He should haue power also, to elect yearly Tribunes, or Magistrates in euery Isle, and their appellations to be brought before him. Moreover, if any should obtaine any dignity, Prelacy or benefice, by Suffrages of the Clergie or people: that he should not enioy it, or be possessed thereof, without the good liking and consent of the Duke, whose power also ended with his life.

Who was
the first D.
of Venice.

This being thus concluded, in the yeare, 697. Paullucio was created the first duke, and so hath y Ducal dignity continued euer since. Haue only that in the yeare, 737. after the death of the third Duke Orso: it was determined, that no Duke should be elected, for six yeares, but that a Master of

of the armed troops or soldiors should be established, and his authority to be annual, which lasted no longer then six yeares. For in the yeare, 742 they proceeded againe to a Dukes election, & since that time, the Commonwealth of Venice hath euermore had Dukes and Princes of the Siegneury: by whose wisdom (and his Counsell assisting) it hath bin preserved in an euer flourishing estate, euen to this instant yeare, 1611.

¶ A short Summary, of the liues of the Dukes and Princes of Venice: and a breuiate also of the most remarkable actions, in the times of their government.



Auluccio Annapesto, was firste Duke of the people, chosen in Heraclea. Hee tooke his Oath before Christophero patriarch of Grada to gouerne according to y Lawes, and to regard nothing more then the weale publicke. He pacified the difference which Luitprand k. of the Lombards had with king Aribert, and made friendship with them both: As well by his authority, as by armes. He brought the rebellious Aquilius vnder obedience, increased the Citties customes and reuenewes, and dyed, hauing bin Duke 11. yeares, vi. months, and iij. daies.

2 Marcello Tegaliano, of the same place of Heraclea, was elected his successor, by common voyce of the people. Hee was deuoute, modest,

modest and affable, but much lesse diligent in gouerning, then his predecessor. The Patriarchat of Grada was transferred into Aquileia in hys time, by Luitprand, and there he had great wars about the dissensions of the Bishops, whereinto he would not interpose himselfe, but died, hauing bin Duke nine yeares, and xxi. dayes.

3 Orso Hipato, a Noble-man of Heraclea, woon himselfe great Reputation by his famous deedes. Paulo the Exarcho had recourse to him, the Grecian Army being broken, and siegelaied to Rauenna by Luitprand. He regained Rauenna, made the Kings Prophet his prisoner, slewe the Duke of Vicenza, and reuealed the Exarcho in his due rights. Hee bydeled the Aquileians, who troubled the publicke peace, and put courage into the soules of the younger sort. He was slain by reason of the dissensions of Iesolo, the xi. yeare and fift month, of his Principality.

4 Theodato Hipato, sonne of Orso, was proclaimed Duke five yeares after the death of his ffather: during which time, the people were gouerned by a Marshall or Maister of the soldiors: and forsaking Heraclea, he brought the State to Malamocco. There he was the first created, and limited his confines with Astolpho king of the Lombards. He was also slaine, by Galla a citizen of Malamocco, in the 13. year of his principality.

5 Galla de Malamocco, a wicked and seditious man, yet shewing himselfe as Protector of publick peace, he was established in the place of Theodato. But his wickednesse being knowne, and
that

that (being but a subiect) he would needs make himselfe absolute Lord, hauing before slaine his chiefe Maister Theodato: the people pluckt out his eies, and toke from him the dignity, which he had a yeare vsurped.

6 Dominico Monegario, of Malamocco, was seated in the sted of Galla. Somewhat to bydle his Dukes authority, the people ioined two yearly Tribunes with him. But he, being a man audacious and arrogant, sought to tiranize ouer the people: whereat they growing into fury, pluckt out his eies, the 8. yeare of his Principality.

7 Mauritio Galbaio, a Noble Heracleian, for his Justice, wisdom, and wealth, was chosen to this dignity. Hee made his sonne Duke with him, and they gouerned together. In his time, the church of Grada being mollested, he sent an Ambassador to pope Stephen, to accord the difference. The Bishoprick of S. Peter de Castello Oliuolo was then erected. And he died, hauing gouerned 23. yeares.

8 Giouanni Galbaio, hauing bin Duke 9. years with his father, gouerned the commonwealth yet 9. yeares more, and after the said time, hee made Mauritio his Sonne companion with him in the Principality. But they being both of wicked and vsufferable life, hauing murdered Iohn Patriarchat of Grada, throtwing him downe headlong from an high towre: Fortunatus, successor in the Patriarchate, made a conspiracy against them, & another was elected Duke. Whereat, being not a little confounded, the ffather fled into France, & the

the son to Mantua, the xvi. yeare of their rule.

9 Obelerio, being elected Prince by them that had intelligence with Fortunatus, took his Brother Beato as his associate, and Valentine beside (being their thirde brother) was admitted with them in the same dignity. And it is worth note, that of these three brethren, Beato is onely placed in the rank of Dukes in the Counsell chamber of Venice, whereas Obelerio incited Pepin king of Italy, to make war on the Venetians: and Beato maintained the commonwealth reigning 5. yeares.

10 Angelo Participatio, after he had well born himselfe in the warre against Pepin, was elected Duke, the people being summoned to the Riako. He founded the Dukes Palace, in the same place where that now built, standeth. The deuision of the Empire was made in his time, & the Venetians left in their own liberty. The City was diuided into wards, streets and precincts. The Pregadi, & the Quaranta, who (for criminal offences) was then instituted among them. He gouerned eighteen yeares.

11 Giustiniano Participatio, hauing bin an associate in the dignity with his father, was (after his death) confirmed by the people. He repealed home his brother Iohn, who was then at Constantinople, & accepted him as his fellow ruler: he made the peoples authority greater than before, & gaue aid to Michael the Emp. against the Sarazins. The body of S. Mark was in his time brought from Alexandria, accepting into his protection, & the church remaining at this day, was consecrated in

in his memory. He died the 2. year of his dignity.

13 Giouanni Participatio remained in the royalty, & enlarged the Church of S. Marke, placing therein a great number of priests & Canons, and appointing a Primicerio to gouern them. He caused the head of Obelerio to be cut off, whom hee had besieged in the Isle of Curtia. He made war upon the Nauratines, and ouerrame them. In the end, a conspiracy was deuised against him, and being confined to Grada, in the eight yeare of his Principality, he shaued his head and beard, and made himselfe a Monk, in which estate he died.

13 Pietro Tradonico of Pola, hauing carryed himselfe to the peoples contentment in the wars against Pepin, was elected duke. He ioynd Iohn his son in rule with him, & gaue succor to the Emp. of Constantinople, who made request thereof by Theodosius Patricius. He was made Protospary of the empire, in help whereof he sent 60. gallies. Lewes 2. granted him many priuiledges, & in the end he was slain by a sedition, in his 27. year.

14 Orlo Participatio, hauing appeased the sedition, was made Duke. The Turkes hauing spoiled Dalmatia, euen so far as Grada, were vanquished by him, & Giouanni Participatio his son, whom he had made associate with him in his gouernment. Basilius the Emperour highly honored him for that good seruice, and made him Protospary of the Empire. He gouerned 17. yeares.

15 Giouanni Participatio, being confirmed in his dignity, took and burned Comachio, wasted the County of Rauenna, to reuenge himselfe on

on the Count of Comachio, who had imprisoned and wounded to death his Brother Badoario. He growing much overcome with sickness, caused the Church of Saint Cornelius and S. Cyprian to be built at Malinocco; and having governed five yeares and six monthes, renounced the Dignitie.

16 Pietro Candiano, was elected after the voluntarie dismission of his Predecessour. Hee was a valiant Man, and expert in Armes, and yet notwithstanding, greatlie addicted to devotion. He went (in person) with tenne Gallies against the Narantines, who (as Thæus) robbed and purloined from the Venitians. Fighting valiantlie against them, hee died at the second time, with the weapons in his hands. He governed no longer then five months.

Dominico Tribuno, is set by some in rank with the Dukes: but others, lesse curious in search of the History, haue omitted him, because hee was Duke but three months and thirteen daies, and nothing is remarkable in his time, but a certaine priuiledge granted by him to Chioggia.

17 Pietro Tribuno, Sonne of Dominico, was elected Duke. He obtained of Guydo, Emperour and King of Italy, a confirmation of all auncient Priuiledges. The Barbarian Hunnes came againe into Italy, and burned Heraclea, Capo de Arger, and Chioggia. This Prince ouercame them, with very much honour, and this was the third time, that those Strangers sought to blurpe on that State. Hee governed twentie
four

four yeares.

18 Orso Badoaro, called himselfe Participatio, and was the first that changed his name. He sent for his Son Pietro to Constantinople, and he was made Protospatarie. In the yeare 920. he obtained of Rodolphus, Emperour and King of Italy, the confirmation of the Venitians auncient authority, to stamp Monies. He addicted himselfe wholly to piety, and in his 20. yeare, hee renounced the Dignity, to make himselfe a Monk, and liue priuately.

19 Pietro Candiano the second, was a worthy man, and made war on Lauterio Marquesse of Istria, who hindered the Traffique of the Venitians: he ouercame him, and reconquered the people of Capo d'Istria. He vanquished Albertus, Son to the Emperour Berengarius, who impatronizing himself of Rauenna, impeached the passage of the Venitians Ships. In his time, Maydens were stolne by the Testaines, to ioyne in marriage with them; but they were sone recovered. He governed seauen yeares.

20 Pietro Badoaro, the Sonne of Orso, was redeemed by him from the Sclauonians. Hee governed but two yeares and seauen moneths, alwaies in peace, which he much affected. Berengarius the Emperour did him many fauours, for his great deserts.

21 Pietro Candiano the third, Sonne to the second Candiano, associated himselfe in his dignity with his son Pietro; & at two severall times armed 33. Shippes against the Narantines; but

at

at

at the second time, he made peace with them. His son being repproued by him for his bad behauior; reuolted from him, and against the Common-wealth. The people would haue slaine him, but he was sent into exile: where ioyning with Guido, Sonne of Berengarius; hee endangered the Common-wealth. Whereat his father grieving, died in his sixteenth yeare of his gouernment.

22 Pietro Candiano the fourth, being repelled from exile (albeit the people had swozne neuer to receiue him) was made prince with very great applause. Hee dealt in such sort with Pope Iohn the 12. that the Churches of Grada was made Patriarchall, and Metropolitane of all the Venitians State, and of Istria. Otho the Emperour, granted him many honourable priuiledges. Hee ruined Vderzo, and was slaine with his Sonne, in a sedition of the people: hauing gouerned 20. yeares.

23 Pietro Orseolo, was a man altogether deuout, and was elected by the people against his will. He would very often walke in an vnknown habite, to visite the Houses of poore people and Hospitallers. Hee appeased the dissensions betwixen the Venitians, and them of Capo d'Istria, who yielding themselves tributarie. He went with Beato Romualdo of Rauenna, to liue religiouslie. Hee gouerned two yeares and two moneths, dooing many woorthy and charitable Deedes.

24 Vitale Candiano, Sonne of Peitro the third, made the confederacy with the Emperour Otho.

Otho. He fell sicke so soone as hee entred vppon his charge: wherfore he became a Monk, hauing gouerned about a yeare.

25 Tribuno Memo, was very rich, but no man of State. In his time happened great dissensions, betwixen the Families of Morecina and Caloprina, by reason wherof, many notorious murders were committed. He took part with the Morefina, which caused the other faction to withdraw themselves to Verona to the Emperour Otho. He gaue the Ill of Saint Giorgio Maggiore to the Abbat of Morefina: And renounced the Principality in his twelfth yeare, entering into Religion.

26 Pietro Orseolo the second, being a verie discrete man, ordered the matter so well with the Emperours Basilius and Alexius, that the Venitians were exempted from Toulles and taxation. Otho the Emperour lying at Verona, did highly fauour him; and, among other graces, to hold one of his Sonnes at Baptisme. He was the first that extended their Confines on the sea, winning many places in Istria and Dalmatia. Hauing caused the Church and Pallace to be finished in his time, hee died the 8. yeare of his Principality.

27 Ottone Orseolo, hauing gouerned some space with his ffather Pietro, was confirmed in the dignity, at the age of eighteen years. He won such reputation, that Geta King of Hungaria, gaue him one of his Sisters in marriage. In person he conquered them of Istria, who were be-

come Rebels; And went into Dalmatia, in the enterprize against Crefnura. At length, the malicious enuiers of his glories, deuised a conspiracy against him, and hee was confined into Greece, in the 17. yeare of his rule.

28 Pietro Centranico, of Barbolano, succeeded next to Otho. But hauing not well qualified all dissentions, as well concerning the Cittizens remouing, as the other neighbours: he was compelled to forsake the dignitie, and make himselfe a Monk. Orso, Brother of Otho, returned from Constantinople, being Patriarch of Grada, and he was constituted in expectation of Othos comming. He continued about a yeare in the palace, and forsake the Principality, newes being brought of Othos death. Dominico Orseolo would then perforce vsurpe the Dignity, but hee was expelled by the people the next morning, and dyed at Rauenna.

29 Dominico Flabanico, was elected during his exile, by the faction of them that had excluded Dominico Orseolo. In his time, and in the yeare 1040. the national Councel was held, for gouernment of the Ecclesiasticks. He made the familie of Orseolo suspicious to the State, by his owne meanes, and laboured for their utter supplantation. He gouerned ten yeares, foure months, and twelue daies.

30 Dominico Contarini was very pleasing to the people. He brought Dalmatia to peace, being heavily burdened with the rebellion of Zara. He fauored the Normans against Robert A. of Apulia.

lia. And the disoord which happened betwene the Common-wealth, and Pepo Patriarch of Aquileia, was by him qualified. Hee builded the Monastery on the Lido, and died in his 28. yeare.

31 Dominico Silino, won himselfe such reputation, that Nicephorus Emperoz of Constantinople, gaue him his sister in marriage; by whose perswasion he made war by on the fozenamed R. Robert of Apulia, and (at the first attempt) returned with a very honorable victoꝝ, possessing himselfe of Duras. But at his second aduenture, he fought with small aduantage; whereby ensued the diminution of his credit. He pergetted the Church of S. Marke with Marble, first and before any other, causing it also to bee beautified with an artificiall Checquer-work. Hee died in the 13. yeare of his gouernment.

32 Vitale Faliero being made Duke, he immediately obtained of Alexius, then Emperoz, to haue the Soueraignety of Dalmatia and Croatia. Henry, successor in the Empire, did him many great fauours: and comming in deuotion to Venice, hee held on of his Daughters at Baptisme. The Office of Proprieties was constituted in his time, and the workmanship of Saint Markes Church continued. He died in his sixteen yeare.

33 Vitale Michele, by his woorthy aduenturing on the Sea, did very farre extend the Common-wealths limits. Hee made the Easterns warre, by perswasion of Pope Urban the second, for conquest of the holy Land, with the Princes

of Christendome. The Isle of Smyrna, Suria and Ierusalem were then recovered from y^e Infidels. He died in his first yeare.

34 Ordelafo Faliero, Sonne of Vitale, assisted King Baldwin against the Infidels, in conquest of the Holy Land; and made such progression, as they devided the Empire betwene them, thoroughout all the Kingdome of Iudea. In the eight yeare of his Principality, Malinocco was almost all burned and submerged; by reason whereof, the Episcopall See was transferred to Chioggia; He went in person to the war against Zara, which was become rebellious, and winning the victory: hee would needs returne thither againe a second time, and on the like occasion; where he died in Armes, in the 15. yeare of his principality.

35 Dominico Michele, being made Duke for his high repute and merit; went to giue ayde to the Christians in the holy Land. With 200. well appointed ships and Gallies, hee made the Infidels to raise their siege from before Ioppa. Hee took Tyre, which he gaue to Vaumond Patriarch of Ierusalem. Emanuell the Emperour made war against him, from whom he won Chio, Rhodes, Samos, Mitylline, and Ister. He renounced his Principality, in the 13. yeare of his rule.

36 Pietro Polani, kinsman to Michele, was a very wise Man, inasmuch as hee was made Arbitratour of the difference betwene Conrade and Emanuell the Emperour. Hee made warre against them of Pisa and Padua, whom hee

hee conquered. He armed himselfe against the Duke of Apulia, in behalfe of the said Emanuell, to whose Empire he added many worthy possessions. Some say, it was his Sonne that won all the battailes, and that himselfe, being fallen sick, returned thence, and died in his eightene yeare of rule.

37 Dominico Morefimi, hee swept the Gulfe of certaine Pyrats of Ancona, the chiefe whereof, being called Guiscardo, was taken and hanged. He laide siege to Pola, which hee tooke, with Parenzo; which Citties were become rebellious in Istria. Hee held confederacy with William King of Sicilie, of whom hee obtained many exemptions for the Traffique of his Merchants. Zara made the Metropolitane Cittie, at his instance, and hee so preuayled, that Dominico his Sonne was made an Earle. He beautified the buildinges of the Cittie of Venice, and began the Tower of Saint Marke. He died seauen monethes after the eight yeare of his Election.

38 Vitale Michele the second, subdued the Tarentines, which nowe had rebelled the third time. He imprisoned Vrick Patriarch of Aquileia, and twelue Channons. In an hundred dayes, hee put forth an hundred Gallies, and twenty Ships on the Sea, against the Emperour Emanuell. The great family of the Iustiniani, were, in his time brought to one onely man, and hee was become Religious; whom hee tooke forth of his Monastery (by the Popes consent)

and gaue him his owne daughter in mariage, because he would not haue so worthy a house to bee extinct. There happened a great pestilence in his time, the occasion whereof, the people in theyr weake iudgement laid vpon him. He was wounded, and dyed, hauing gouerned xviij. years, and xviij. daies.

39 Sebastiano Ziani was the first that euer was elected by the eleauen electors. In his time there was a great Schisme in the Church, by meanes of the Emperour Frederick Barbarossa, who caused Alexander the thirde to forsake the See, Octavian hauing bin made Anti-pope. Alexander made his retirement to Venice, where hauing a long time serued in the Monastery of la Charita; he was in the end knowne, and taken thence by the Prince and Seigneury. Whereupon, Barbarossa made warre against the Venetians: but his sonne Octavian being taken, he mediated reconciliation betwene them. He died in the fift yeare of his gouernment.

40 Orio Malipiero, or Mastropetro, was the first Duke elected by the 40. and for that purpose was created by the death of Ziani. He hadde sixe Councellores allowed him to authorize his deliberations. He reconquered Zara, that had nowe the fourth time rebelled. He sent supply vnto the Christians against the Moores, who beganne to vsurpe in the Holy-Lande, 88. yeares after that Baldwine had deliuered it. Ptolomais was recovered, and Andronicus, successor to Emanuell the Emperour, deliuered many Venetian Merchants.

chants. He renounced the Principality in his 14 yeare, and entred into Religion.

41 Henrico Dandolo was likewise elected by the forty. They of Zaro were once againe vanquished, and Pola conquered. In his time was the surprisall of Constantinople, and the acquisition of the East Empire, wherein hee assisted the Princes and French Barons. Hee dyed in his thirteenth yeare, being General of all the Christian Army.

42 Pietro Ziani, son of Sebastian, was made Duke within a while after the death of Dandolo, the Correctors being then first instituted. In his time came Ambassadors from Athens & Achaia, to submit themselves in obedience to the Common-wealth. Candie was then peopled with a Colony of Noble Vinitians. He married Constance, Daughter to Tancrede King of Sicilie. In the end, hee renounced the Principality, hauing gouerned 24. yeares.

43 Giacomo Tiepolo, was made Duke by chance, in concurrency of Renieri Candolo, who had as many voyces as he. Candie rebelled, and the seditious were seuerely chastised. Zara, that had long boync the yoke, was now reduced vnder obedience. Hee had warre against them of Ferrara, and against Ezzelino, who would haue inuested himselfe with Padua. In conclusion, he gaue ouer the Principality in his twentieth yeare, and dyed sone after.

44 Marino Morefini, was made Duke by the one and fortieth, by reason of the precedent concurrence.

currence. In his time was another Colony of Noblemen sent into Candie, who builded there Canea. Hee made warre against Ezzelino, who besieged Mantua, and who (in a furious rage) caused twelue thousande Paduans to bee helme in peeces, which he had with him then in his Army. He died in the fourth year of his Principality.

45 Reuieri Zeno Podesta, at Fermo was elected Duke, and sent to bee fetcht thence with foure Gallies. Under him, the Commonwealth won a famous victorie, against them of Genes: but the contentment therewith was very brieft, because Michaell Paleologus expelled both the French-men and Venitians out of Constantinople, being ayded by the Genewaie forces, which was eight and fiftie yeares after the surprizing of the sayde Citty: yet once more (after that) the same people were againe reconquered: And hauing gouerned this Dignity sixtē yeares, he dyed.

46 Lorenzo Tiepolo was made Duke, in memory of the victory hee had againste them of Genes at Tyre: hee allyed two of his Sonnes, (verie Nobly) with two strange Ladies: by reason whereof, a Law was then made, that the like might not afterward be done. He brought Seruia in obedience to the Commonwealth, and the Bolognians were vanquished by him: he gouerned seauen yeares, and xxb. dates.

47 Giouanni Contarini, being aged eightie yeares, and Attorney of S. Marke, was made Duke.

Duke. The Law against illegitimates was then enacted, and they excluded from all publicke offices. There were some rebellions moued in Istria, and by them of Genes, but they were quickly appeased. At length, through unwise dinesse of age, and by aduise of the Senat, he gaue ouer the dignity, hauing gouerned foure yeares, and six moneths.

48 Giouanni Dandolo was elected, being then absent. The Citty was (in his time) much afflicted by water, and an Earthquake. He made war in Istria, against the Patriarch of Aquileia, & the Count of Goritia. At the instance of pope Nicholas, he assisted the Archbishop of Tripoli with 25. gallies. He died seauen months after his vij. yeare of rule.

49 Pietro Gradanigo, a man of great courage, deliuered the common-wealth from two important dangers. One, was a high disgrace, which hapned in a battel against them of Genes: The other, was the conspiracy of Baiamonte, which was boldly checked with weapon in hande, vpon the place of S. Marke. It was then ordained, that Noblemen onely should gouerne, and the counsell of tenne was then instituted. Hauing ruled 22. yeares and nine months, he died.

50 Marino Giorgio, was a man of such life, that they termed him a Saint. Venice was continually excommunicated in his time, by reason of the taking of Ferrara. Zara rebelled againe the sixte time, and much labour it cost to reduce it vnder obedience againe. After, hee build

builded the Monastery of S. Dominick, and died (aged 81. yeares) in his first yeare, hauing gouerned ten months, and ten daies.

52 Giouanni Soranzo, had the hono^r of recovering Zara, and many other places, which had revolted in his Predecessors time. Negropont, was re-obtained, and Warre afresh commenced against them of Genes. The excommunication was quitted from Venice, by the interposition of Francisco Dandolo, kneeling befo^re the Pope, with a Chaîne of yron about his necke. The number of Atturneyes of S. Marke, was increased to sixe. He gouerned sixtene yeares, and sixe months.

53 Francisco Dandolo, who had so lowely humbled himselfe fo^r his Countreyes good, was therefore exalted to her highest Dignitie. They of Pola, and of Valesia, submitted themselues to the Common-wealth, which gaue way vnto the warre against the Patriarch of Aquilea. Padua was taken on Albert Scaliger, and Treuise and the County remained to the Common-wealth. This man was of the league with the Christian Princes, against the Turke, and in his time were sixty seuerall Ambassadors at Venice. He gouerned ten yeares, and ten months.

55 Bartolomeo Gradenigo, Atturney of Saint Marke, was made Duke at 76. yeares of age. by the intercession of Andrea Dandolo, and his relation. In his time was Venice miraculously deliuered from a mighty imminent inundation. Candie rebelled, and the Rebelles were

were seuerely punished. There happened a great Dearth in the Cittie, which droue the people to discontentment. Hee died in his fourth yeare.

54 Andrea Dandolo, who had befo^re resigned his place to Gradenigo, caused the dearth fo^r to cease, by sending fo^r great sto^re of Corne out of Sicilie. Hee obtained of the king of Babylon, free Pauidation into Egypt. Zara rebelled the seauenth time, and was rep^rized. The Warre betwene them of Genes and the Cittie, was troubled by two great accidents: One, was an earthquake verie dreadfull, and the other, was a greuous Pestilence. Hee gouerned twelue yeares, wanting some few months.

55 Marino Faliero, was elected Duke, being then Ambassado^r at Rome. Hauing receyued an iniurie by some perticulers, which was not reuenged according vnto his owne desire: he determined in the eighty yeare of his age, to make himselfe absolutely Lorde, without any troule. The Conspiracy being discouered by Nicholo Lion; he had his head smitten off with in the Pallace. And it was ordayned, that his Picture shoulde not bee placed among the other Dukes, but the place being left voyde, had onely this Writing. This is the place of Marino Faliero, who, for his greuous offence, had his head cut off: he was Duke but ten moneths.

56 Giouanni Gradenigo had an excellent spirit, but a much mishappen countenance. The warre

Warre was renewed againste the Genes, which terminated with a mutuall peace. Hee had warre against the King of Hungarie for Dalmatia. Trevisa was besieged in his time, and thether hee went in person. He gouerned one yeare, three moneths and fourtene daies.

57 Giouanni Delfino, was elected Duke when he was in Trevisa, defending it against the King of Hungary. The Senat sent to demand free passage for him, which being denied, he came forth with 200. horse to beard the enemy, & so attained to Margliera, where the Senat in person received him. In short time he gaue end to this war, & recovered Conciliano, Serualla, & Asola. He made peace for the soueraignty of Dalmatia, and died aged 45. yeares, hauing gouerned foure yeares, two months, & eleuen daies.

58 Lorenzo Celso, vpon a false bruit of a victorie against them of reuolted Genes, was made duke in concurrence of Pietro Gradenigo, Leonardo Dandolo, & Marro Cornaro. Candie rebelled again, & it was regained with very great difficulty. On this occasion, a Iusts and feast was publickly made in the place of S. Mark: he died 2. dayes after the fourth yeare of his Principality.

59 Marco Cornaro, a man very wise & learned, was sent into Candie, which was rebellious, and there he made a cruel bloody war: the Pope granting plenary Indulgence to al such as went thether. The Rebels being seuerely punished, & commonwealth sent to Pope Vrbane 5. a certain number of their Gallies. He gouerned 2. yeares, 5. moneths and 24. daies.

60 An-

60 Andrea Contarini, fled to the Paduans, fearing to be elected Duke, and as presaging the ruine which (in his time) wold betide the commonwealth. First of all, he made warre with them of Triesta, then soon after, with Carrara for the confines of Padua: and such was the fortune, that Chioggia beeing taken, the Cittie of Venice found it selfe to bee in extreame daunger. But in the ende, hee went and opposed himselfe (in person) against the Enemies, vanquished them, and regained Chioggia. Hee dyed, hauing gouerned fiftene yeares, foure months, and fiftene daies.

61 Michele Morisini, was a man well furnished with Learning and Wisedome. Some say, that in his time the Isle of Thenedes was taken, and not in the time of his Predecessour Contarini. There were diuers Lawes then made, and (amongst others) it was ordayned, that Homicides, who formerly had bene hanged, should afterwarde haue their heads smitten off. He liued but four months, & five dayes in his Dignity, and died in the 74. yeare of his age.

62 Antonio Veniero, was a rigorous obseruer of Justice. He confined one of his owne Sonnes in exile, because he had (ouer-lightly) offended the Familie of a Noble Venitian. Hee made league with Galeazzo the Vicounte, against Carrara, whereupon hee tooke Padua. Hee assisted the Emperour Emmanuell against the Turke, and gaue ayde also vnto Sigismond, King

King of Hungaria, who afterward came to the Empire. The place of Saint Marke, and that of the Rialto, were greatly beautified in his time. He died two months and thre daies, after the 18 yeare of his rule.

63 Michele Steno, had the dignity of Atturney of Saint Marke, with that of Duke. Hee wonne an important battaile against the Genevaies. Carrera was now the last time vanquished, and Padua and Verona surprized. They of Vicenza, to free themselves from his tyranny, yielded themselves to the Common-wealth. Ladislaus King of Hungaria, did likewise forgoe Zara. He died, having governed 13. yeares and thre daies.

64 Thomaso Mocenigo, was first Generall of the Goulfe. Hee embraced peace, to the ende, that the Cittizens might Traffique. Vdina became obedient to the Common-wealth, with the Countrey of Friuoli; by meanes of the Lordes of Sauorguani, who were made Noble-men of Venice. The Florentines were also succoured against the Duke of Milaine. In his tenth yeare he died.

65 Francesco Foscarei did stoutly repress the Duke of Milaine, who proceeded too farre on the liberties of Italy. Brescia, Bergamo, and other Citties of Lombardie were then won: among which were Loda and Parma, and Rauenna in Romania. Hee made also a large progresse on the Seas, men into Morea. The Senate assisted Palaeologus the Emperour, against the Turkes, who

who usurped Constantinople in the yeare 1453. Hee was made Arbitratour by the Duke of Milaine, in certaine differences of neighbour-hood. The King of Dacia was made a Noble Venitian: And afterward, the Duke (in regard of his age and infirmities) was dismissed, having governed 34. yeares, and six months.

66 Paschale Malapiero, was appointed in the place of Foscarei, being Atturney of S. Mark, who died two daies after his dismissal. Hee made a Law, that in following times, the Duke should not be deposed. In his daies, the famous Arte of Printing was brought into Venice. The Arsenall was greatly encreased: And hee maintained the people in peace, during foure yeares, 6. months, and five daies that he governed.

67 Christophoro Moro, of Procuratour of S. Marke, was made Duke. He liued for some time in peace, till the second yeare of his government; and then the Turke (proud of his surprisall of Constantinople) declared Warre against the Venitians. He made heace with Pope Pius the sixt, and the Duke of Burgundy: But the Pope dying, they remained alone, and maintained war which lasted twenty yeares. And yet he dyed, having reigned 9 yeares and six months.

68 Nicholo Tono had such good happe, that (in his time) the common-wealths affaires went well against the Turke. Pietro Mocenigo, General in the Archipelagus, united his power with the Popes, The King of Naples, & they of Rhods sent 85. Gallies together, and tooke Satalia, a cit-
E tg

tie of Pamphilia. He made league likewise with the King of Persia, against the Turke. James King of Cyprus coming to Venice, espoused Catharina Cornara, adoptive Daughter of S. Mark. He governed one year, eight months, and five daies.

69 Nicholo Marcello, Attorney of S. Mark, after some lawes made by the Correctours; was elected Duke. In his time there was a conspiracie in Cyprus, to haue the Kingdome fall into the power of Ferdinand King of Naples. Pietro Morcenigo went thither with a great Armie, where hee appeased all troubles, and seuerely chastised the Rebels. Scutari, a Cittie in Liburnia, was besieged by the Turke, and valiantly defended by Antonio Loredano. This Duke governed one yeare, foure monthes, and 17. daies.

70 Pietro Mocenigo was elected Duke, in desert of all his worthy deeds. Lepanto was besieged in his time by the Turke, & vertuously maintained by Antonio Loredano. They brought their power likewise before the Isle of Stalimena, but the same Loredano (by his valour) defended it. The Daughter to King Ferdinand came to Venice, with the Cardinall her Brother, where they were totally entertained. This Prince caused a Pony to be stamped, which he termed by his owne name: And governed but two yeares and nine monthes.

71 Andrea Vendramino had such ill hap in his government, that the Venitian Army was
two

two severall times put to flight by the Turkes: Once, nere to Croya in Albania, and the other, in the Countrey of Friuli. He was a goodly man of person, and had a most beautifull Ladie to his Wife, by whom hee had as goodlie Children, whom he allved in marriage with the chiefe Families. He governed one year: and eyght monthes.

72 Giouanni Mocenigo, Brother to Pietro Mocenigo, hauing continued the Warre against the Turke; in the ende made peace with him: Ordering the matter so, that hee left Scutari and Stipula in libertie of commerce, and power to keepe a Deputie at Constantino-ple. Hee made Warre against Ferdinand King of Naples, at the instance of Pope Sixtus the fourth, which occasioned the long Warre called Sociale. In the ende, peace was made, the Common-wealth hauing gotten Rouigo and Polesano. The Cittie became much disgraced by fire, and a pestilent sicknesse: The Prince dyed, hauing reigned seauen yeares and six monthes.

73 Marco Barbarigo, the Plague being ceased, caused all to be new builded, which the fire had defaced in the Pallace. Hee was greatly differing from from all other Princes, to wit, in pardoning, and forgetting perticuler injuries doone vnto him: but such as were committed against the State, he would haue redemged with strictest seueritie. The Grand Signeur or Turke, sent a perticular Ambassadour
unto

unto him, to congratulate his election. He governed but nine months.

74 Agostino Barbarigo, withstood the progress of Charls 8. King of France, when he made war against them of Arragon, for the kingdome of Naples, which he conquered. The Turke usurped on the Common weales of Lepanto, Modona, and Corona. The kingdome of Cyprus was brought vnder the tutelage of the Senate, and Quēn Catharina brought thence to Venice. The Office de la Sante was created, by occasion of the Pestilence. The Duke governed 15. yeares, and 21. daies.

75 Leonardo Lauredano sustained a very rigorous war against the chiefest Princes of the world: there being a league made at Cambray, betwēne the Emperour Maximilian; the King of France; them of Naples; and the Dukes of Savoy, Ferrara and Mantua, incited thereto by Pope Iulius the second. All the whole estate of firme land was surprized, except Trevisa; but in the end it was recovered. He liued in the Principality nineteene yeares, eight months, and 20. daies.

76 Antonio Grimani, being Generall, had a most infamous disout or foile, by which occasion, he was dismissed of the charge of Procurator of S. Marke, and confined to Cherso. He brake his limitation, and with-drewe himselfe to Rome to the Cardinall his Sonne: where hee had so many woorthy Offices imposed vpon him, as, not onely he was re-established in his Attur-

Atturries place againe; but hee was likewise made Duke, at the age of eighty two yeares, and governed but one yeare, ten monthes, and two daies.

77 Andrea Gritti, gaining best part of the glory, for the reprisall of Padua, was in very great esteeme. Hee dealt so with the King of Fraunce, (to whom he was Prisoner) that his Majesty alied himselfe with the Common-wealth, and Brescia and Verona were reconquered. Hee knew very well, how to make his carriage pleasing to the Senate, during the warres betwēne Charles the first, Emperour, and King Fraunces the first, as also against Solyman. Hee governed fiftene yeares, seauen monthes, and eyght daies.

78 Pietro Lando continued the defence of the Common-wealth against the Turk: with whom (at last) he made a peace, knowing how to make vse thereof, & maintaine his owne charge, while the war continued betwēn Charles the first, and King Frances the first. He governed six yeares and eight months.

79 Francesco Donato, making benefit also of this peace, beautified the Citty with many goodly buildings, besides that of the Ballace. He sent succour to the Emperour, against certain Rebels in Germany. The Princes of Guise, comming to Venice in his time, were entertained as fitted their dignity. He governed seauen yeares and six months.

80 Marco Antonio Trevisano, a span altogether

gether deuoute, laboured that the Common-wealth might abound in goodnesse and ciuill manners; preuenting (by his owne worthy example) that vices should not be winckt at, as, in too many Countries, they are. He gouerned a yeare, wanting three daies.

81 Francesco Veniero, could so well skill of gouerning the Common-wealth, that albeit the Turke (in his time) made Warre in Apulia, and the King of Fraunce in Tuscanie: yet all was well at Venice, and the Quene of Poland Royallie welcommed thither. He gouerned two yeares, one moneth, and twentie daies.

82 Lorenzo Priuli, was solicited (by the Pope) to make Warre against the Emperoz. But hee being a friend to the Common-wealth; by no meanes would offend him, but mediated a pacification of those affaires. In his time peace was made betwixt Fraunce and Spayne, and Charles the first dyed. This Prince gouerned three yeares, eleauen months, and eght daies.

83 Girolamo Priuli, Brother to the precedent Prince, enioyed those great Honours which Pope Pius the fourth gaue to the Common-wealth: And all his delight was to heare Ambassadors in the Hall of Kings. In his time the Councell of Trent was concluded, whither he sent (as Ambassadors) Nicholo de Ponte, and Matheo Dandolo.

The Common-wealth held (at Baptisme) the

the Sonne to the Duke of Sauoy by a Deputie, borne of Marguerite of France. He dyed, hauing gouerned eight yeares, two monthes, and foure daies.

84 Pietro Loredano, by the concurrence of two others, was elected Duke, contrarie to the hope of all, or his owne expectation. The Arsenall was burned in his time, and there then also happenes a very great dearth of all thinges. Selim, Successour to Solyman, tooke occasion to breake peace with the Common-wealth, demanding of them the Kingdome of Cyprus, and mooued Warre vpon this Subject. He gouerned foure yeares, five monthes, and eight daies.

85 Luigi Mocenigo, Warre being kindled against the Turke; lost the Kingdome of Cyprus, Nicosia being taken, and Famagosta surrendered. The Common-wealth made league with Pope Pius the sixth, and Phillip King of Spayne, so that their Armies (being ioyned together in the yeare 1571. they obtayned a worthy victorie against the Turkes. Soone after, Henry the third, King of Fraunce, came to Venice, where hee was magnificently entertained. This Prince dyed in his seauenth yeare.

86 Sebastiano Veniero was elected by common voyce, and with such applause, that dyuers Turkes ranne to him, and kissed his feet. Hee created five Correctours of the Laues, for ruling the affaires of the Pallace.

Citty was deliuered of a dangerous plague, and the Ballace was againe very greatly defaced by fire. This Prince gouerned not about one whol yeare.

87 Nicholo de Ponte, was created Duke, a man very learned in al the Sciences, and whereof he had made publicke profession in Venice. He passed thorow all the honours of the Common-wealth, wherein with the Cittizens coulde possibly gratifie him. The Seminary of S. Marke was instituted by him. Certaine Princes of Iapponia arriuing then at Venice, were by him most honourably entertained. He builded the Bridge of Canareggio: and gouerned seauen yeares, nine months, and thirtene daies.

88 Paschale Cicogna, Procurator of S. Mark, was elected when he was at diuine seruice in the Church. In his time there was great warres betwene France and Spaine about Piedmont, and betwene the Emperour and the Turke, for some parts in Hungaria. He caused the Town of Palma to be builded, in the confines of the countrey of Friuli, and a newe Castle or Fortresse, in the Isle of Cephalonia. He hadde the honour of the wonderfull Bridge of the Rialto, which hee builded: And gouerned ten yeares, or thereabout.

89 Marino Grimini, Procurator of S. Mark, was so highly in grace and fauour of the people, that on the day of his election, they declared extraordinary signes of ioy, and continued them for many following daies. The second yeare of his Principality, he caused the Dutche his wife to

to be crowned in great Triumph. At which time Pope Clement the eight sent him the Rose of gold. In his time much ioy and triumph was made, for the peace concluded between the Kings of France and Spayne. Upon occasion of the Popes coming to Ferrara, obtained by the Ecclesiasticall Estate, the Cardinall Aldobrandino passed thence to Venice, where he was most honorably welcommed with diuers other Cardinals. There was such an extraordinary ouer-flow of waters, in the first yeare of his Principality, by the Warks, Boats, and Gundeloes floated on the place of S. Marke, euen as if they had been in a full maine riuer. He dyed, and was much beinoaned of the people, hauing gouerned ten yeares, and eight moneths.

90 Leonardo Dandolo, hauing by his worthy desertings, singular wisdom and dexterity, managed passed affaires, and gone through all honours of the Common-wealth, giuing euident testimony of his care and faithfulness, was advanced in the place of Grimani, the tenth day of January, 1606. He had bin sent Ambassadoe to Constantinople to Mahomet (hee being newlie come to the Empire of the East) in the common-wealthes name, to salute him with accustomed complements. He hath such a practive brain, and so happy a memory, seated in a soule so religiously zealous for common benefite, that the Senate hath referred more to him then to any other of his Predecessors. The Citty hath (in his time) bene excommunicated, by Paulus Quintus now pope, about

about some pretentions appertaining to his *Ses*: But it may well be saide of this Prince, that, against such Thunder-clappes and lightning flames, he hath shewne himselfe like an invulnerable Rocke, in defence of that estate in generall. In like manner, two principall Pillers of Christiendome, threatned great disaster and ruine: but that most Christian Henry the fourth, King of Fraunce, embracing those two Collombes, upheld both the one and other, & redressed all discontentment, by the entermise of his Ambassadors, and hath erected a Triumphall Arche, to the immortality of his glorie. This Prince now living happily in peace, doth dayly acknowledge to Fraunce, his particular affection for such favour, and may (in time) much better declare it. God long preserve him, and all other good Princes.

Of the Kingdome of Spaine.



Spaine divided (at first) into six Provinces, viz.
1. Tarragon.
2. Carthage.
3. Lusitania.
4. Gallacia.
5. Boetia.
6. Tingitrua.

Spaine was (in her younger daies) held by sundry petty Kings and Tetrarches; and afterward became divided into many Commonwealths. The Carthaginians (a people of Affrica) hazarding their fortune thither, helde one part thereof, and possessed themselves of many Citties, Townes, and places, untill they were expelled thence by the

the Romaines, in the time of the Punick warres. Since when, it was continually subiect unto the Commonwealth of the Romaine, & reduced into forme of a Province only, in the raig of the Emperour Augustus. So it remained till the Emperour Honorius; in whose daies the Vandales (a people of the North parts) brought it under their command. But they were (some after) chased thence by the Gothes, who established there the seate of their kingdom, which in that kind they maintained, for the space of about two hundred years: nor were they then called kings of Spaine, but kings of the Goths. In the raigne of Roderick, king of the Goths, the Moors of Affrica entred Spaine, in the yeare 715. they being brought thither by one named Iulian, in very despightfull indignation, and to shape out a way to his bloody revenge, because Iain Roderick had dishonoured his Sister, or (as some others say) his daughter. And so did the Moors possesse themselves (wel-near) of all Spain, seizing the city of Tolledo, which was the capital city. Thus ended the kingdom & name of the Goths in Spain. For rested they so, but pursued on their conquest still, & there remained none but Galitia, the Asturies & Leon, which countries king Pelagius, Uncle & successor of Roderick, had fled to for refuge, & there shut up himself, in regard that those places were environed with Mountaines & might wel defend & shelter him for some time. But his successors, being hardly pressed by the Sarrazins, could no longer resist: wherefore, under the raigne of Alphonfus the seconds, they were

433.

The Moors
in possession
of all
Spaine.

were forced to craue the helpe of Charlemaigne, King of Fraunce, by whose valour and Vertue, the Moors were beaten thence a great way, and had bin quite cast out of the Country, if the Spaniards mallice had bin no hinderance thereto. Afterward, the kings of Leon and Galicia (for such were then their only titles) being so formerly preserved, began somewhat to increase in power. And in regarde of this expedition, performed by the French, the strength of the Moors was so weakened and diminished, that many other Kingdoms were established in Spaine, as that of Nauarre by Enocho Counte of Bigorre, in the yeare, 960. which he tooke away from the Moors and Sarrazins, by a very valiant conquest of them. The Son of this Enocho, being named Garzias, second king of Nauarre, won and conquered Arragon from the same enemies. And afterward, in the year 1116. was Arragon reduced to be a kingdom, by the Will and Testament of Sanchio the Great, fourth King of Nauarre, for loue to Ramyrus his natural Sonne, who was the first King thereof. This was the same Sanchio, who being Earle of Castille in the kingdom of Leon, tooke on him first the name of King Castille, which he left vnto his Sonne Ferdinand. The kingdom of Portugal was also conquered from the same Moors, by Earle Henry, Sonne vnto the Duke of Lorraine; who held it first of all, vnder Title of Earle, in the year, 1110. but quickly after brought he it to be a kingdom. Spaine did continue so (in this kinde of State) for a long time,

The King
domes of
Nauarre &
Arragon.

Portugall
conquered
from the
Moores.

time, deuided into many Kingdomes: And the Moors had also theyr abiding there, possessing still a great part thereof, till such time as

Ferdinand the fift, King of Arragon, who was married to Isabell, the onely heire of Castille: And he (wholly) expelled the Moors out of Spaine, in the yeare, 1492. In no great distance of time after, he possessed himselfe of Sicilie & Naples, inuading also the East Indiaes. But fraudulently he vsurped the Kingdom of Nauar, against Iohn d'Albret, who was (indeede) the lastfull King. And it is this Ferdinand, and Isabell his Wife, that (wee may say truely) the Kingdom of Spaine onely had beginning in. They left one onely Daughter, named Ioane, who was married to

1492

The begin-
ning of the
king dom of
Spaine, and
descent of
their kings.

Phillip the first, of Austria, Sonne vnto the Empero^r Maximillian, and Mary of Bourgundie: hee succeeded in this Kingdom of Spaine, and other Countreys beside. He was likewise Earle of Bourgondie, of Flaunders, and Lorde of the Lowe-Countreys, in the right of his Mother. In this his Marriage, was borne

Charles the fift, who was afterward Empero^r. Hee reigned nine and thirtie yeares, preserving his Provinces verie happilie: And he left for successor, both in Spaine, and the more part of his other Countreys, his sonne

1516.

Phillip the second, who reigned thre and fortie yeares, hauing adioyned (to his other Estates) the Kingdom of Portugall, in the yeare of our Lorde

1555

Lozde, 1580. and so (consequentlie) all that which the Portugalles helde in the East Indiaes, and else where, as in Affrica and Brasile, which came vnto him by the death of King Henrie the Cardinall. Hee died aged seauentie yeares, the thirtieth day of September, 1598. No long time befoze his death, he hadde made peace with the mighty and most Chyistian King of Fraunce and Nauarre, Henry the fourth.

1598

Phillip the thirde, his Sonne, succeeded him, and raigbeth as yet to this day. He married Margaret, Daughter to the Arch-Duke of Austria, by whom he had a Sonne, in the month of April, 1606.

Of Germany and the Princes Electors.

Of Germany,
and the
Princes Electors.

Little can we here speake of Germany, in regard it requireth a large & ample discourse: Onely concerning the Princes Electors, I finde it recozded, that Pope Gregorie, the fift of that name, being a Native of Saxonie in Germanie, and kinsman to the Emperour Otho; to the end that the Emperre might long remaine, in the hands of them of his Nation, procured a Law to be made, with the conient of Otho, about the election of the Emperour, in the yeare of our Lord, 1002. which Law was afterwarde duely kepte, and hath bene to our time, that it shoulde be alwayes lawfull and permitted to the Allemaignes or Germanes only, to elect and chuse the Prince, that was to be called Cæsar, and King of the Romanes, with the Title likewise of Soueraigne Emperour and Augustus, so soone as his election was

was approued. It was therefore ordered, that that thre Ecclesiasticall persons, and foure of the Laytie, shoulde haue the full authority heerein, with the voyce of all the State in generall. The Ecclesiasticall men, were the Arch-Bishoppes of Magonoe, Treues, and Colougne; The Lay- icks were the Marquesse of Bradenbourg, the Count Palatine of Rhine, the Duke of Saxony, and the King of Bohemia, to all whose Successors this Dignitie appertained. And the King of Bohemia was added for the seauenth Electour, to the end, of auoyding all differences which might happen in the election, and to iudge especially ouer the other.

Three Ecclesiasticks, and three Layickes, with addition of a fourth, the K. of Bohemia.

¶ A short Chronologicall Discourse of Fraunce, the Originall of that Nation, and a brieft History of their kings, from Pharamond their first Gouvernour, to Lewes 13. now raigning.

¶ To the Worshipful Mayster Richard Langley, Esquire, Towne-Clarke of the Honourable Cittie of London.

The greater part of such as haue written, concerning the Originall and Etymologie of the Name Francs or Francions, who afterwarde came to bee called Frenchmen, haue scarce faithfully or respectiuelie handled

The error
of Writers,
about the
names ori-
ginall.

handled that Subject. Many ancient moderate Writers, as Sigisbert, Gregory of Tours, Aimonius the Monk, Hunibant, and the more part of our Chroniclers and Annalists, made they whole recourse to Dreames and Fables, because they liued in those barbarous times, when learning was trodden vnder-foot, and good Bookes were burned by the Gothes, Vandales and Hunnes, with other vnciuil pations, who quenched and smothered the light of good Letters, which being hidden vnder ground (to auoid such barbarous and abortiue fury) our fore-named Writers were toob of knowing those sound Authoꝛs, without whom they could not indiciouſlie censure, or write the History of the French Nation. Others that long time after, and much nearer to our instant Age, haue likewise written on the same Argument; by following the track of those former blinde-guides, haue fallen into their error and folly: reading no other Authoꝛs but those misse-leaders, neyther taking any paines to peruse those graue auncients, which more polished seasons haue discovered vnto vs. So that those best embraced Authoꝛs of the French, are euen the loudest lyers, leauing a rooted opinion in their ydle fancies; that they are issued of the Troyans, and that they were named French of Francus, or Francion, the Sonne of Hector, who, after sacke and spoile of the saide Citty, saued himselfe (with so many as could escape the Græcians sword and fire) in the Palus Mæotides, and that (of his name, whom they thus fol-
lowed)

Francus or
Francion,
the son of
Hector.

lowed) they were first called Francks, or Francions. Next, that nere to this Palus Mæotides, they builded a Citty, which they named Sicambria, after the name of an Aunt to Francus, the Daughter of King Priam; and that there they dwelt, vntill the Emperoꝛs Valentinians time, being then constrained to passe into Allemaigne, and thence into Gaule. So here the conceite of some fond French-men, concerning the Etimologie of their name; which if any one should offer to take from them, he should (in their iudgment) commit no mean crime. And albeit there are many, and contrary opinions in this case, yet I will plainly tell ye no more, then what I haue read, and seene written.

Sicambra
the Daugh-
ter of King
Priam.

Some say, that (in times past) there was a nation in Europe, scattered & dispersed here and there, who were called Cimmerians; one part of them had the name of Cimbrians, another Sicambrians, and a third Francs, or Francions. These people passing thorough the Countrey of Pannonia (now deuided into two parts, the one called Hungaria, and the other Austria) were driven from their precedent dwelling, which was at the Cimmerian Bosphorus by the Goths, in the yeare of the Worldes Creation, 3520. Others say, that these Cimmerians learned themselves to be deriued of those Fraci, that appeared on the Earth after Noahs flood (viz:) that of those diuisions made in the whole vniuerse, by partage of the Mediterranean Sea, those which were in Europe (distinctly on the right hand)

Cimmerians,
Cimbrians,
Sicambrians,
Francs or
Francions.

The Hebrew Fraci,
and the Affricanes.

gave to the Hebrews these Fraci, even as them on the left hand did the Affricanes. There are some others, who doe fetch the Originall of those Cimmerians, from Gomer the Sonne of Iaphet, and youngest Sonne of Noah, of whom they should take their Name, by change of some Letters, calling them Cimmerians, in stead of Gomerians. But howsoever it was, that Nation of Cimmerians, abandoning the utmost Confines of Thrace, and the fore-named Bosphorus; divided themselves into dyvers bands: one whereof made their way to the Pannonians; another to that side of Germanie, where the Cimbrian Chersonnelus is described by our Geographers; And the rest, leaving Europe, passed into Phrygia, and making uppe higher into Asia, set downe their rest on the Bankes of Danubie, and the maine Ocean. There (once more) they separated themselves into two Troopes: One whereof entred into Europe, under conduct of their King named Francion. And, being no other then meree Macabond persons, enquiring still for noveltie of Countries, after they had runne through a great part of Europe; at length, they rested on the bankes of Rhine, where they would needs build a Citie, in semblaunce and Name of Troy, the Capitall Commaunder of Phrygia. They began the foundation, but the worke remained imperfect. The other sort, that made their aboad on the bankes of Danubie, elected for their King one named Torchor, by whose name they were called Torches or Torques.

The Cimbrian Chersonnelus.

Torches or Torques, of Torquor their King.

Torques: even as on the contrary side, the other, after the name of Francion their King, were termed Franes, Françions, or Françons. They waxing weary of their kings Empire (which grew to an insupportable tyranny) expelled them, & lived a long time without any King, under authoritie of their Captaines. But in the end, corruption & over-swaying those Captaines, and threatening a tyrannicall usurpation: they did likewise cast them off, and grew to their former election of Kings againe, even from the selfe-same stirp and race, whereof their first Kings had bin elected. They made choise then of a Man named Theudomer, son to Richomer, a man of strong, great and goodly stature, wearing his Haire long, and hee was descended of the race of Priam King of Phrygia, and of Francion. So that, if this opinion be true, it should instruct us, that the Originall of the Françons or Françions, proceeded of the Cimmerians, and that those Cimmerians came from Phrygia, and the Trojans.

Theudomer, a kinsman (by descent) to king Priam

The Cimbrians, who were descended of the Cimmerians, went to the bankes of Rhine, and dwelt there in those straits, where (in these daies) are the Countries of Holland and Gueldres: But they were forced thence, by frequent overflowings, and strange inundations of the waters of Rhine.

The Sicambrians, being issued of these Cimbrians, and who never boudged from the shoares of Rhine, as these others did, of whom we have formerly spoken: they passed into Italy, and from thence

thence into other Regions heretofore mentioned. And it is to be noted, that when the Cimbrians went first to Rhine (see it that they came from the Pannonians by Land, or from Phrygia and Thrace by the Germane Sea, being in number about 489360.) they were by the Teutones and Thuringians, neighbours to Rhine, named Neumagi, as much to say, as new kinsmen or Cousins.

Neumagi, is
new kins-
men.

Antenor
married
Cambra
Daughter
to the King
of Britaine.

Afterward, when their King Antenor (a man of great power) had espoused Cambra, a beautiful, wise, and chaste Lady, borne in the Country of Brittain, now called England: in favour of her, he tearmed his people Sicambrians. This happened in the yeare of the Worlds Creation, 1550. At which time Artaxerxes reigned over the Persians, and Hanniball passed first into Italie.

Priam, Son
to Antenor
succeeded
him, & then
Marcomedes.

Antenor, King of the Sicambrians, left to those his people inhabiting on the Rhine, his Sonne Priam for their King. After whom succeeded Marcomedes, who extended his Dominion from the bankes of Rhine, so farre as Thuringe. The other Sicambrian Kinges, succeeding after these fore-named; did (almost all of them) tearme themselves Troyans: which holdeth (with good iudgement) to shew, that the Sicambrians were issued of the Cimmerians and Phrygians.

There were also many Kinges of these Nations, and after that the Sicambrians grew to increase nere the Rhine, both in multitude of men and riches: diuers other Kinges reigned over them,

them, who extended the limites of their possessions, on either side the Rhine. In the raignes of Clodion, Clodomire the second, Meradac and Bolon, (under conduct of whom, the Cimbrians forsooke the shoares of Rhine, by reason of the inundations of the saide River, and likewise of the Sea) they leagued themselves with the Teutones or Allemaignes, and departed in great troopes from their habitations; leaving very few there behind them, who being afterward vanquished by the Romaines, with other people of the Gaules neighbouring nere the Rhine; continued peaceably in their dwellings, untill the declining of the Romaine Empire: but yet they were wadged as Souldiers in the Romaine Legions, and served the Romans faithfully in all their wars.

Clodion,
Clodomire,
Meradac &
Bolon kings,
leagued
with the
Teutones.

Some certaine yeares after, they rebelled against the Emperour Honorius, who conquered them in a battaile: But, recouering theyr losse, they grew in to good fauour with the Emperour Valentinian. Whereupon some haue written, that in regard they gaue him good ayde against the Alaines, & expelled them from the Palus Maotides: they were by him called Francks, and dispensed withall for tenne yeares tribute, which formerly (as a Duc) they payed to the Romaines. But at the ten yeares end, the Emperour sent his Collectours to them, to leuy againe the saide tribute: whereto they would in no wise listen, but despising his commaundement, they murdered his Officers.

Why the
Emperour
Valentinian
called
thē Franckes.

K. Priam
slaine, and
his people
fled into
Germany.

The Sicam-
brians liued
with the
Pannonians.

Franconia
in Saxonie,
and France
in Gaule.

The Emperour being offended at their rebellion, assembled a potent Army, that vanquished them in battaile, wherein also Priam their king was slaine, and they driuen to flight from theyr Citty Sicambria. Seeing thus expelled thence, they came into Germany, which then was enemy to the Romans, & possessing themselves of Thuringe; they liued there (for some time) vnder the raigne of Marcomedes, son to Priam, & of Sueno, sonne to Antenor. one of their kings: thus you may see what some haue said. But, as concerning the Citty of Sicambria, builded neer to the Palus Mæotides, not by the François or Francions, but onely so auouched, by the writings of Hnnibant, & afterward by those of Gregory of Tours, of Reginon, and of Sigisbert: good Authours do make a more mockery of it, for they neuer knew any other Citty named Sicambria, but that famous Citty which is in Allemaigne. So that by this our instant deduction, it euidently appears, that the Sicambrians dwelt with the Pannonians, & that (from thence) they came into Germany, to the shoars of Rhine: and hauing in such manner obtained their liberty, they were then first of all called Francs. But now to come againe to our Francs, Francions, or Francones, admit them to be issued of the Sicambrians, or of the Cimbrius, or of the Germans, or of any other: It is notorious enough, that two great Provinces were by them inhabited, & named; to wit, Orientall France or Franconia, in the Country of Saxony, & the kingdome of France in Gaule: and that the very

very first time, that any speach was heard of the, it was in the declining of the Romaine Empire, vnder the Emperours Aurelianus, Probus, Florianus, and Proculus. Which hath made some to conceit the very same matter of the Sicambrians, and that the name of Francs was giuen them, either after one of their kings; or of their bold courage, or of the Hebrew Fraci. The Emperour Aurelianus had to deale with them, when they would needs passe the Rhine, to come into Gaule, and (as some report) slue a great number of them. And yet they were not so much weakened, but they could rebell againe, and withstand the succeeding Emperours.

Now let vs come to the Etimologie of this name of Franc, or Francs, there are some, who make no other prooffe thereof, but that it was only in regard of the immunity, giuen vnto them by the Emperour Valentinian, after they had holpen him against the Alaines: Inferring also, that he called them so by a Greek name, François, which is as much to say; as bold, hardy, & valiant, and by those means were enfranchised from all toulds, subsidies, and tributes for ten years space. But there is not any Etimology receiued by our Frenchmen, but such as certaine Authours, by idle forged Histories of their owne braine, would make them to beleue: and that they are deriued of Francus or Francion, son to Hector, according as we haue already declared.

Now, to answer all these recited opinions, and to begin with the word Ferocitie, as deriued

The French
wold haue
their name
deriued of
Ferocitie.

Hector had
no son but
Astianax.

Franchise
and Immuni-
tie.

of the adiectiue Ferox, and whereof some great estimation is made: There is no apparance at al, that they shoulde deriue their name from thence, this Etymologie being but puld in by the eares, and so farre off from the name of Franks, as there needs no other reason to object against it, but the very spacious distance betwene these two words Ferocitie and Francois, considering withal, that all Authoꝝ haue described the French, to be men milde, courteous and affable, and not fierce, stern or cruell. As for the other reason, the best receyued of them, that strives to make vs beleue, that they are issued of Francus or Francion, the son of Hector: It is most certain, that there neuer was any such Francus or Francion son to Hector, because Hector had but one son, named Astianax, who at the surprizail of Troy, was thron by the Greeks from a very high Tower, to the end, that no one of the Troyans race might remaine, to reuenge (vpon the Greekes) the sacke of Troy. And to say, that the Etymology of the name of Franks came from the franchise and immunity, which was giuen vnto them by the Emperoz Valentinian: It hath no likelyhood of reason, because they were called so before Valentinian was borne. Now, albeit that the name of franchise, comes nearest to that of Franks: yet cannot that deriuation be receiued for authentical, because the name of this Nation is more auncient (by more then a thousande yeares) then the worde of franchise, which is but a new coyned word in respect of the other, and which, by Frenchmen (louers of their owne

stone language) hath bin allowed to signifie the said liberty.

¶ The Election of Pharamond, who was the first King of France, how he was elected for his Vertues and Heroyick actions only. The Franks gaue ayde to the Emperoz Valentinian, and (by that occasion) were exempted from paying Tribute for ten yeares. In like manner, what Ceremonies were aunciently obserued, in election of their Kings; and of the Salique Law.



The Franks, Francions, or Franks (of whose adventures and Etymologie we haue amply discoursed) having after many peregrinations, Voyages, and Trauerſes, made choise of their abiding at Paulus Maxotides: very nere thereunto, and (according to the opinion of the most common and receiued) they builded a City, where they inhabited vntill the time of the Emperoz Valentinian, whom they valiantly assisted against the Alaines, that had rebelled against the Emperoz and the Romaine Empire. In recompence of which good service, the Emperoz discharged them (for tenne yeares space) from paying the ordinary Tribute, which they owed to the Romans: yet ordering, that (at expyration of such time) they shoulde returne to their former seruitude. The ten yeares being expyred, constraint came for repayment of the

The Franks
builded a
City nere
to the Palus
Maxotides.

the Tribute: But they (feeling the sweetnes of such an immunity, & desirous to reduce to a perpetuall priuiledge, that which the Emperour had but in grace graunted) in pride and presumption replied, that they purposed no longer payment of any thing: but, since with price of theyr bloude, and no meane daunger of their lines, they had freely bought and purchased their freedome: they were not so weakely aduised, to forgoe (at so cheape a market) that which had cost them so deare.

The Franks
foyled by
the Empe-
rour, chuse a
Captaine
named Mar-
comir.

The Emperour displeased with this their refusal, brought a great Armie against them, and foyleing them in the fight, expelled them from their dwelling: So that they were enforced to assemble themselves, vnder the conduct of a chiefe Captaine amongst them, named Marcomir or Marcincier, which (in the olde Franche Language) signifieth a Gouverneur of theyr Country. Thus they withdyne themselves into a Province of Germanie (at this present called Allemaigne) where they inhabited, and after their own name, called the Province of their abiding, Franconia. There are some Authours, who will not auouch, that the Emperour Valentinian did vanquish them, because (in verie trueth) there is no such matter founde in any bette auncient Writer. Contrarywise, Amianus Marcellinus, an olde

The words
of Amianus
Marcellinus
then ouer-runne and spoyled) by the Pictes
and

and Scottes; And likewise, that a great number of the Franks, as also of the Saxons, did ouerspreade Gaule. But common Opinion holdeth, that the Franks would not pay the Tribute, after tenne yeares were expyred, and that beeing, thereupon, ouertome by the Emperour Valentinian; they were (as already hath bene sayde) expelled from theyr abiding, and compelled to saue themselves in the sayde Province.

Being there seated, they grew desirous, to chuse and establishe a manner of Governing their Estate, whereby ensued manie contentions among them. For, some would haue it brought into a Monarchie, which is the Gouvernement of one Prince onely: And others, into an Aristocratie, which is to bee gouerned by a certaine number of Wise and discrete persones.

They chuse
an order of
gouernment
among the.

Whereupon, in a publike assemble made, on this occasion, one among them, named Chara-
mond, made a verie eloquent Oracion in the behalfe of Monarchie, and his maine scope aimed; that they shoulde elect for their King and Prince, Pharamond, a man iust, verie deuoute, of good sorte, and valiaunt. qualities necessarye requyred to bee in a Prince. Moreover, hee added, that if hee shoulde doo any thing, unfitting for a King and Prince: it was a very easie matter for them, to take away from him the administration of his Kingdome and Gouvernement, because people were before Kings,

The aduise
of Chara-
mond, con-
cerning the
election of
Pharamond

„ Kings and made them their Rulers. Nor can I
 „ be perswaded, quoth he, that the man now to be
 „ elected, will any way fall into Tiranny, or raise
 „ vs in any disobedience towards him, in regard
 „ of the vertuous qualities wherewith he is endu-
 „ ed: And from him may we well expect, all such
 „ Iustice, kindnesse, care, and assistaunce, as Sub-
 „ iects can hope for in their Prince, his actions &
 „ behauiour of life being so wel knowne vnto vs.
 „ He is Sonne to this woorthy Captaine *Marco-*
 „ *mir*, who so wisely and happily hath brought vs
 „ hither, who so securely hath heere established
 „ vs, and who so valiantly sheelded vs from the
 „ Romaines threatnings; when (by inequality of
 „ our power to theys) wee were compelled to
 „ forsake the Palus *Mæotides*. Wee are then
 „ much obliged to Pharamond, in memory of
 „ his Fathers weighty merites: And these two e-
 „ speciall reasons shoulde mooue vs to receyue
 „ him as our King, and preferre him (before all
 „ other) to that dignity; euen as wee ought to
 „ aduance Monarchy before Aristocratic, where-
 „ unto I know some among vs will encline, with-
 „ out fore-seeing the harmes that will befall vs, if
 „ we embrace it. For, if wee consider our aunci-
 „ ent manner of life, it hath beene to obey one,
 „ and not many, in which regarde, me-thinkes,
 „ that the first thing, which ought to be respe-
 „ cted in the establishing of an Estate, is the
 „ humour of the Inhabitanes, and to consider,
 „ of what commaund or gouernement they are
 „ most capeable, to wit; of Monarchie alone, or
 many-

many-headed Aristocratic.

Thus spake Charamond, and then manie
 contrarieties were mooued among them, about
 diuersities of Opinions. Whereupon, Prince
 Charamond beganne agayne another most ex-
 cellent Oration, maintaining his former spee-
 ches againste Quadrek, a great Prince like-
 wise, who defended the contrarie, saying: That
 Kingdomes gouerned by many Princes, were
 more peaceable, and better pollicied, then to
 be subiects to one king onely.

Quadrek
 his opposi-
 tion against
 Charamond

After all these disputes (long debated on
 eyther side) the Francs (who were more cape-
 able to liue vnder a Monarchie, then a pub-
 licke commaunde, because they were men free,
 most hardie, and couragious) by common con-
 sent, elected King Pharamond, and according to
 their custome, placing him vpon a Pauois,
 lifted him vpon the Shoulders of men, and
 so walked with him three times about the place
 of their meeting, proclaiming him theyr King.
 This was in the yeare of the *Worldes* creation,
 438. And of Iesus Christ 420. After others,
 foure hundred twenty six, or four hundred twen-
 ty and seauen.

The electi-
 on of King
 Pharamond

Some say, that he was the Sonne of Marco-
 mir, yet others say no. His name was Pharamod
 or Waramond, which in the ancient Franc Lan-
 guage, signifyeth a man of truth. And wee may
 well conceiue, that his name and nature were
 correspondent, and that he was a vertuous per-
 sonage: considering they chose him for their king,
 after

after ſuch a great contention, and withall, that ſuch as deſire to liue vnder a Monarchy, and to haue one King: will haue him to be a good man, which is the onely felicitie that can come to any Eſtate, when a Prince is furniſhed with integrity and truth, and all other Vertues commendable in a Prince: Euen as contrariwiſe, it can ſuſtaine no greater miſchiefe, then to be ſubiected to barbarouſneſſe, and Iniuſtice of a cruell Tyrant.

Pharamond
firſt King of
the Franks
or Franco-
nians.

Clodion
was the
firſt that
entered into
Gaul.

All the trueſt Hiſtozies doo agree, that Pharamond was the firſte King of the Franks or Francons, in Franconia a Province of Germanie: but they ſpeake not of his paſſage into Gaule, for hee was neuer there. And the firſt of them that euer went thither, was Clodion the Dayzie, Sonne (according to ſome) of the ſore-named Pharamond. For came he alſo thither (but as wee uſe to ſay) to bidde the Countrey Good morrow: For hee was repulſed, chaſed, and compelled to returne thence. And hee, that (of the two Nations of the Francones and Gaules) made them but one, reducing them into one body: was Meroneus, the Sonne of Clodion, as ſhall bee after declared in his due place. Pharamond liued onely on the Bankes of Rhine, without paſſing anye further thence: it contented him to bring his people onely thither, to ſounde, not the ſoord, but the fortune of paſſage into Gaule.

Seeing choſen King, hee conceiued, that the verie ſtrongeſt bonde, which bindes and ſhutteth
vp

vp anye Eſtate for longeſt continuance, is the Conſtitution of Lawes: which are nothing elſe, but a reaſon planted in Nature, commending honeſt occasions, and prohibiting their contraries. Beſide that, they had neuer bene made by Lawe-makers, but for the conſeruati- on of States, Emperres, Kingdomes, Seigneu- ries, Citties, and theyr Inhabitantos. And be- cauſe long Warres, as alſo their ſo recent and late foyle; had brought his people vnto ſome good ſort of obedience: hee concluded to make new Lawes, which might cauſe them to liue vnder certaine Rules of pollicy, conſidering, that as hardlie can a people liue without Lawes, as the body without members.

Pharamond
deuiſeth
Lawes for
his people,
with con-
ſent of his
Lords.

Lawes Sa-
liques or
Ripuaries.

For the better eſtabliſhing of theſe newe Lawes, hee vſed the aduiſe of ſoure his chee- feſt Barons, euen thoſe of woothieſt merite amongeſt all his Lordes, to whome ſome doo giue theſe Names Vridogaſt, Sagogaſt, Vri- ſogaſt, and Boſogaſt. Hee likewiſe deuſed certaine Lawes, which hee tearmed Saliques and Ripuaries, the Chapters whereof are yet to bee ſeene, which doo not ſpeake any thing of the generall right of his Kingdomes, but con- cerning the particular right of euerie one, eſpeci- ally in the Article of Succeſſion. From whence our French Nation hath vertued the Lawe Sa- lique, ſpeaking of the ſucceſſion of the Realme of France, the institution whereof, they attribute to Pharamond.

Againſt which Iudgement, wee will not
oppose

oppose our selues any way, onely we say, by the testimony of truest Histories, there is not found any but this Salique Law; which the French doe boldly affirme to bee made by Pharamond. Yet such as labour to haue vs beleue this opinion, doe scarcely know howe the Kingdomes of Barbarians, and their Kinges gouerned: Albeit it was a custome obserued among Barbarous Nations, that their Daughters should neuer succede in the Crownes of their Kingdomes. Also, in the raigne of Pharamond, the third generall Councell of Ephesus was holden, against Nestorius Bishop of Constantinople; & the fourth Schisme came into the Church. Saint Hierome and Saint Augustine died, the one aged ninetie one yeares, and the other seuentie six, after they had long time gouerned their Churches: And then began Christian Religion to flourish, by the holy and painefull writings of many Doctors. This is all that can be saide of Pharamond, first King of the Franks, or Franconians, who afterward were called Frenchmen: And hee, after he had reigned ten, or (according to some others) eleauen yeares, died in Anno Dom. 431. Our Histories haue not giuen him any Title, albeit some say, that Clodion his Successor was his Sonne.

A custome
among bar-
barous Na-
tions.

Especiall
maters hap-
pening in
the time of
Pharamond

431

Clodion
first named
Hayric, for
wearing
long hayre,

2 Clodion, second King of the Franks, Franconians, or French, succeeded his Father Pharamond, in the yeare of grace 431. He was first named Clodion the Hairy, because hee wore his Beard and Haire long, ordaining the French to wear

weare the like, in signe of liberty: because the Romaines vsed to poule and shauie all such as they subdued, in signe of seruitude, and this fashion of wearing long haire continued in France, vntill the time of Peter Lombard, in the raigne of Lewes the younger, fourth King of that name. Clodion perceiuing the Romaines to war weak, by Marres which they maintained against the Visigotes, and loath to loose occasion for enlarging his Kingdom: leuied a mighty Army, subdued the Thuringians, or Lorraines, took Cambray by assault, putting all the Romaines to the sword that were therein, and banquished their Army nere to the Riuer of Rhine. Then passing the Forrest Charbonniere, hee tooke Tournay; and pursuing his purpose, for dilation of his Confinnes, he went into France, conquering Burgundy, Tholouse, Angoulesme and all Aquitain. Clodion hauing reigned twenty yeares, died in An. 449.

and a beard
in signe of
liberty.

The deedes
of Clodion
for enlarg-
ing his
Kingdome.

3 Meroneus, third King of the French, succeeded Clodion as his Sonne, or nearest kinsman, Anno 450. Tritemius writeth, that he was Sonne to Clodion, but it is not found to bee so in the Histories of France. In him the generation of the Kings of Fraunce tooke beginning, which endured vntill King Pepin, the Sonne of Charles Martell. Meroneus (like vnto his predecessors) was a Pagan; yet very bold and courageous in warr, as he declared by many foughten battailes, wherein hee was continually present. In his time, Attila King of the Hunnes or

450

The begin-
ning of the
Kings of
France in
generation.

Z

Hun-

Attila with
his Hunnes
inuaaded
Gaule.

Hungares (who tearmed him selfe Flagellum Dei) leuyed an Army of five hundred thousand Men, and came into the Countrey of Gaule; where he spoyled Coulougue and Treues, with many Castles situated on the Rhine. Hee tra-
uersed Fraunce also, where hee wasted Amiens, Beauuais, Chaalons, Troys and Rheimes, bring-
ing his sledge befoze Orleauce. Meroneus see-
ing Fraunce so much oppressed (with the helpe
of Aetius, Lieutenant Generall in Gaule for the
Armie of Theodosius the younger, Emperour
of Rome, and of Theodorick King of the Vuis-
gothes) gaue him a strong battaile in the Ca-
talaunike fieldes (which is sayde to be nere
to Chaalons in Champaigne) in which fight,
were slaine about two hundred thousand Men
of Warre, as well on the one side as the other:
Attila beholding his Men in disorder, and that
he could not call them backe againe as he would:
was enforced to retire home to Hungarie, where
he could neuer after re-assemble them of that com-
pany.

The fight
of Attila
out of Gaule.

This battaile was fought in the yeare 452.
Others say, it was in the twenty seuenth year of
the Empire of Valentinian the third. Meroneus
hauing his hopes much moze highly aduanced.
by such a great and glorious victory: tooke the
Citties of Sens, Paris, and a great part of Gaule,
not finding any to offer him resistance. So that
thence forthward, the Countrey which befoze had
bene tearmed Gaule, began euen then to be cal-
led France.

¶

He caused one of his Sonnes to be throned When Gaul
into a Fire, because hee hadde slaine the King of began to be
Cornwall, who came in courtesie to be merrie cald France
with him; Cornwall being then tributarie to
France, as some haue reported, who also boe en-
title Meroneus to be the first king of the French,
and all his Race the Merouingians. Hee
died in the tenth yeare of his raigne (after hee
hadde very much enlarged his Kingdoms) in
Anno Domini. 472. Or, according to others,
459.

4 Childerick, or, as some tearme him, Chil-
perick, Sonne to Meroneus, succeded him in the
year 460. The great luxurie, and bad life which
he led, in the beginning of his raign, abusing the
Wiuues and Daughters of many worthy Lords,
begot him such indignation and hatred among
the; that they purposing to surprize him, he was
faine to saue himselfe by flight to Basinus, king
of Thuringe, now called Lorraine. This did
he by the counsell of a friend of his, named Vido-
marck, who (as a secret token betwene them)
breaking a Ring of Gold, gaue him the one halfe:
coniuring him, to giue no faith (for his returne)
but to him that should bring him that other halfe.
The French elected (in his place) a Lieutenant
of the Romaines, named Gillon, who held Sois-
sons, and laide such heavy exactions on euery
man, exercising also such cruelties on the Prin-
ces of France: that (in the 8. yeare) hee was ex-
pelled, and Childerick againe restored, wholly
by the meanes of Vidomarch.

460

The incon-
tinent life of
Childerick.

Zz

Chil-

Childerick pursued Gillon his Enemy, and had great victories and conquestes against him. Hee fought a battaile also nere to Orleance, against Andoacre, who was Duke of the Saxons. Hee enlarged his Kingdome along the Riuer of Loyre, so far as Angeirs. One great and irreparable errour he committed, for breaking the right of Hospitality, with Basinus King of Thuringe, (who had receiued, and relieved him in the chiefest of his aduersity) he caried away with him his wife Basina, by whom he had a Son called Clouis. He died in An. 485. the 26. of his raigne.

Childerick wronged his dearest friend

The first Christian K. of France.

The Romaines Dominion ended in France.

5 Clouis, first King Christian, and fift King of France, succeeded his Father in the year of our saluation 485. He married Clotilda, Sister to the Duke of Burgundy. He made warre vpon Siagrius, the Sonne of Gillon, Lieutenant to the Romaines, who held Soissons, and som other parts of Belgick Gaule: from whence hee expelled him, and made him fly to Tholouze, to Alaric King of the Vuisigoths; who betrayed him, and sending back to Clouis, he had his head smitten off. So the Romaines, being partly fled, and partly slaine; held no longer dominion in France. Having likewise vanquished King Basinus, hee subdued Thuringe, now called Lorraine: and amplified the kingdom, even from y^e Rhine, so far as Seine, extending her limits to the riuer Loyre. The Quene his Wife did often times sollicite him to become a Christian, whereto he would by no means listen: til being in a hot conflict against the Allemaignes (who descended in great companies,

panies, to driue the French out of Gaule) and despairing of the battaile; hee thought vpon the God of Clotilda his Quene, promising, that he would be a Christian, if that day he obtayned the victory. It pleased God to grant it him, and hee was Baptized at his returne in the Citty of Rheimes by Remy Arch-Bishoppe of the sayde place, with his two Sisters, and more then three thousand of the Nobility. The sacred Oyle was poured on his head, euen in his Baptisme, and all his successours (at their Coronations) haue in like manner bene sacred. Clouis changed his former Coate of Armes, taking three Golden Floure-de-luces, in a fiesde Azure: where-with hee first warred vpon Gondebant King of Burgundy, who was Uncle to his Wife, and discomitted the Vuisigothes before Poictiers, hauing slaine (with his owne hand) Alaric they King, and wonne from them the Countrey of Aquitaine, so farre as the Pyrenean Mountaines, and almost all Gaule and Allemaigne. Herevpon the Emperour Anastasius sent him a Crowne of Golde, with the Title and besture of Patritius and Consull. He made a choyse of Paris for his ordinarie abiding, and commaunded it to bee the chiefe Citty of his Kingdome: where he dyed in Anno 514. being aged eighty yeares. And was buried in the Church of S. Geneuiefue du mont de Paris, which himselfe had founded, in memory of Saint Peter and Saint Paul, leaving four Sons and two daughters.

How Clouis converted and became a Christian, by means of his Quene.

The Emperour sent Clouis a Crowne of Gold.

111.
Foure kings
raigning to-
gether in
France.

Clothaire &
Childebert
warre in
Spaine,

6 Childebert succeeded his Father Clouis, in the yeare five hundred sixtene, but not in the whole kingdome; for he leauing foure Sonnes living, it was deuided into foure partes among them, and each one was King of his seuerall portion. Childebert hadde for his part Paris, where hee held his Seate royall, with other dependances, as Poictu, Maine, Touraine, Champagne, Aniou, Guienne, and Auuergne. Clothaire was King of Soissons; Clodomire King of Orleance; and Theodorick the Bastard, being the eldest, was King of Metz. They made warre by the procurement of Clotilda their Mother, on Sigismond King of Burgundy; who was slaine (with his Wife & Child) by Clodomire King of Orleance: who likewise (in another battaile) was kild himselfe by Gondemar, vnder a feigned pretence of friendship: but for this (in the end) Burgundy was taken and destroyed. Clothaire assisted by Childebert, possessed himselfe of the Kingdom of Orleance, and slew his Nephewes. Clothaire and Childebert had great wars together, which in the ende was accorded; and they passed with their armies into Spaine against Almarick, who vsed their Sister very hardly, because she would not be an Arrian: And killing him in the battaile, they brought her backe with them into France. Hee reigned 45. yeares, and dyed without any Children: hee lieth buried at S. Germaine des Prez, which he founded by the name of S. Vincent.

112.

7 Clothaire, the Sonne of Clouis, succeeded

hed his Brother Childebert, in the yeare 559. or as some say, 560. hee had before bene King of Soissons fortie five yeares, and suruiued all his Brethren and their Children; so that (at length) he remained sole King of France. He was luxurious, and cruell in the death of his two Nephewes, Children to Clodomire King of Orleance. He likewise (with much disgrace) vpon a Good Friday, slew Gauliter d'Yuetot in a Church: for reparation of which wrong, he aduanced or erected the Land of Yuetot (which is in Normandy) into a kingdome, to the bettes of the said Gauliter. Clothaire seeing himselfe sole Monarch of the Gaules; would needs leue the third part of the Churches reuennues: Against which the Arch-bishop of Tours made resistance, telling the King boldly, that the reuennues of the Church, were the goods of the poore. He lost a battaile against the Saxons and Thuringians, because hee would not take them to mercie, and suffer them to depart with their liues saued. Hee overcame (in warre) Cran his Bastard Sonne, who rose in armes against him, causing him, his wife and Children to be burned: hauing also formerly slaine the Duke of Bretaine, whom he had caused to reuolt. Hee reigned 51. yeares; dyed at Compeigne, and lieth buried at S. Medard de Soissons, Anno 567.

Clothaire
Sole-Monarch of
the Gaules.

8 Cherebert or Aribert, succeeded his Father Clothaire, in the yeare 567. Paris fell to him by partage. He was very vnchast of life, & repudiated his Wife, to entertaine two of her waigh-

567

Cherebert
an vnchast
King.

Z 4

ting

ting women: for which Germaine Byschoppe of Paris excommunicated him. Hee reigned nine yeares, died without any heires: And lieth buried at Saynt Romaine nere Blaye in Gascoigne.

577

Fredegond
Concubine
to Chilperick.

Fredegond
caused the
King to be
murdered.

9 Chilperick, succeeded his Brother Cherebert, in the year 577. hauing before reigned nine yeares King of Soissons. He had three wiues, the first whereof he diuorced from him, compelling her to enter into Religion. The second, being named Audouera, he banished. And the thirde, called Athanagilde, he caused to be strangled in her bedde. All which was done by the procurement of Fredegonde, his Concubine, whom hee then married, and had a Sonne by her, named Clothaire. His Brethren warred against him for his inhumanities, and would haue deposed him: but in the ende, they were pacified. Chilperick perceiving his Brother Sigibert, King of Metz, to be much molested by the Allemaignes, took many Citties from him: whereat Sigibert being iustly offended, neuer ceased, till (by the helpe of Gontran) hee recouered all that was taken from him, pursuing him still in such sort, that Theodebert his Son was slaine, and hee glad to saue himselfe in Iournay, where Sigibert besieged him. Sigibert was slaine in his Tent, by two Traitors hyed thereto by Fredegonde. In short while after, Fredegonde knowing that the king had noted ouermuch familiarity, betwene her and Landry (Maire of the Pallace) her adulterer: she caused the king to be murdered by the

saide

saide Landry, at Chelles nere Paris, as hee returned somewhat late one night from hunting, hauing reigned in all 23. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Germaine des Prez.

10 In the year, 587. Clothaire, second of that name, the son of Chilperick & Fredegonde, (being but foure months old) was acknowledged for Legitimate, and made king, vnder the gouernment of Gontran King of Orleans his Uncle, who made Landry (Maire of the Pallace) Tutor to the young king, and because he should bee nourished with his Mother Fredegonde. Childebert King of Metz, endeouored by Armes to get the gouernment of the kingdome, and (as much as in him lay) to haue Fredegonde punished, for the death of his Father Sigibert, and of his Uncle Chilperik, whom she had caused to be both murdered. Gontran appeased him, by making hym his heire: yet notwithstanding, in short while after he began war againe, against which Landry with Fredegonde (who was a woman of admired courage) opposed themselves. And she (to imbolden the French) carried the young king his son in her armes, walking so with him thorough the thickest of the battell, and shewing him vnto the soldiors, she would say: Fight for your younge King, and defend his kingdom: by which means Sigibert was foiled, and driuen to flight. Brunehault, hauing put to death many chilozen of the bloud Royall, was deliuered to Clothaire, who caused her to be torne with four horses. He returned himselfe on the Saxons, leauing no male childe alive

587

Childebert
seeketh to
revenge his
fathers
death.

Fredegonde
a woman of
great spirit.

Brunehault
executed.

aline that was taller then his sword. He reigned 44. yeares, and lyeth buried at S. Germaine des Pres.

631.

The building of the Church of S. Denis.

Jewes banished out of France.

11 Dagobert, first of that name, succeeded his father Clothaire, in the yeare, 631. he gave to his brother Aribert, the kingdom of Aquitaine in partage, which returned to him againe, by surmounting his saide Brother. Dagobert was in great peril of death, in the life time of his father, because he had cut off his schoolmasters beard, and caused him to be grievously beaten: but miraculously he appeased the anger of his father, whereupon he builded the Church of S. Denis in France, which he enriched with treasures taken from other churches, especially that of Poitiers, and graunted them also the fayre of Lendit. Hee was the first that gave any patrimony of the Crown to Churches. He conquered the Sclauonians, who were then Idolaters, and quieted the Gascoignes that had rebelled against him, compelling also the King of Britaigne to do him homage. It is said, that being much addicted to pleasure, he would train after him a troupe of gallant maidens, apparelled like to Quænes. By a perpetuall Edict, hee banished all Jewes out of France, that would not be baptised. During his raigne, Mahomet the false Prophet, a native of Arabia, began to shew himselfe. He reigned sixteene yeares, died of a Flux in his belly at Espinay, and lieth buried at Saint Denis, which hee instituted as a Sepulchre for Kings.

645

12 Clouis, second of that name, succeeded his father

father Dagobert, in the yeare of mans salvation, 645. He had but one bastard Brother, named Sigibert, who in the life time of his father Dagobert was provided of the Kingdome of Austrasia, and reigned there but eleaven yeares, leaving a Sonne, whom hee dearly recommended unto Grimoald, Maire of his Pallace. But he, instead of advancing him in his right, caused him to be shaven, and sent unto a Monastery in Scotland, making his owne Sonne Hildebert King of Austrasia. Clouis hearing this wicked act, within two yeares after, caused Grimoald to be put to death, and expelled Hildebert out of the Kingdome: by which meanes, Clouis remained sole Monarch of the Gaules. He had by his wife Baudone (a Lady of Saxonie) three Sons, who were all Kings each after other. In his time there happened in Fraunce such scarcity of victuals, and consequently such an extreame famine, that Clouis, to redresse it, took from the Church of S. Denis, the silver couertures about the Relicks and rose, and other treasures (wherewith his father Dagobert had enriched it, to feede the poore in so great a misery, exempting thereto (in recompence) the iurisdiction of the Bishop of Paris. He went to Ierusalem, and there warred against the Infidels. He reigned sixteene yeares, and dying, was buried at S. Denis.

The treachery of Grimoald Maire of the Pallace. Clouis sole Monarch of the Gaules.

The care of Clouis for feeding the poore.

13 In the yeare, 663. Clothaire, thirde of that name, succeeded after his father Clouis. Kings (in those times) were so carelesse of maintaining their Maiestie Royall, that they suffered them

663

The Maires
of the Pals
lace ouer-
rule the
Kings.

themselves to be governed by the Maires of their
Wallace, who had charge of all their publicke af-
faires, while they (in meane space) gaue them-
selves wholly to voluptuousnesse. These Maires
hereby tooke such authority vpon them, that the
king was but as their vassaille, and him would
they keepe in some Castle, or other place of plea-
sure, neuer shewing him to the people, but one-
ly once in a yeare, the first day of May, and then
it was done with great pompe, and Royall mag-
nificence, mounted in a triumphall Chariot, and
the people that tooke pleasure in such sights, would
salute him onely with loud acclamations. This
course continued till Pepin le Bref, which was al-
most an hundred yeares. During the raygne of
such kings, Paris and Normandie was all their
largest demaines: the rest of Aule being diuor-
ced as it were from the kings Soueraigne pre-
rogatiue, was in the possession of many Princes,
making themselves Dukes and Carles in theyr
seuerall iurisdiction. He lieth buried at Chelles
nere Paris, dying in the yeare, 666. and fourth
of his raigne. Hee did not any thing deseruing to
be written, but onely kept his subiects in peace:
For Ebroin was so terrible (he being then Maire
and Gouvernor) as neither the princes of France,
or any other Straungers, durst attempt to rayse
Warre against him. The hono^r both of kings
and Kingdome, died with Clothaire, for the
Maires of the Wallace, pretending to guard the
rightes of the Crowne; beganne (each one tho-
rowe his owne auarice) to debate the Gouverne-
ment

ment of publicke affaires, as formerly hath bene
declared.

14 Childerick, second of that name, and sonne
of Dagobert, succeeded his Brother Clothaire,
in the yeare, 666, being receiued by the French,
in hatred of Theodorick: who (by the perswas-
ion of Ebroine) was crowned king, but after-
ward shauen, and put into S. Denis Monastery,
as Ebroine himselfe was at Lucon in Burgun-
die. His insolencies and cruelties, hastened his
tragicall ending, being slaine as he was hunting
with his wife Blitilda great with childe, by one
named Bodille, a Gentleman of Franconia, who
he had caused to be cruelly beaten. He raigned 12
yeares, and is buried at S. Germain des Pres.

666

Childerick
was slaine
in hunting,
and his Q.
also.

15 Theodorick, first of that name, Sonne also
to Dagobert, and Brother to Childerick, was
againe made king in the year, 680. He, after the
death of Cothaire the third, raigned a yeare and
more, before Childerick, albeit he was the youn-
ger Brother, onely by the meanes of Ebroine,
Maire of the Wallace. But in regard of his badde
gouernment, he was shut vp in a Monastery, and
so was Ebroin Maire of the Wallace, whose cru-
elties the French could not endure. But Child-
rick and his Queen being murdered in hunting,
he was fetcht forth of the Monastery, and aduan-
ced againe to the dignity Royall, in the yeare be-
fore expressed: And then was Landrefill, the son
of Archambauld, made Maire of his Wallace. But
Ebroin (forsaking his Cloister, got a great
Army together, & won the victorie against them;
killing

680

Landrefill
murdered
by Ebroin.

killing Landrethill by Treason, and taking the King and kingdome into his owne gouernment, reuenging himselfe, without sparing any. Hee ouercame Pepin and Martine, Brothers to the Duke of Austrasia, and (contrary to his faithfull promise) killed the saide Martine: himselfe also being after slaine (in the night tyme) by Hermanfroy, Count of the same country. Pepin Heristell was then made Maire of the Pallace, who carried himselfe valiantly in his Office, and greatly augmented the kingdome.

This King Theodorick, whom some doo call Thierry, hauing raigned xix. yeares, died in Anno 693. leauing two sons by his wife Clotilda, Clouis who was king after him, and Childebert. During the reigns of these two precedent kings, the greatness of Royal Maiesty (which ought to be in kings) did ouer much obscure it selfe: & the Church of Rauenna (dissenting from the Romain Church) was yet by meanes of Pope Donus, drawne to voluntary conformity, which greatly encreased the Cleargies honour, and their dignities, so that the Romain Church much augmented it selfe.

694.

16 Clouis, third of that name, and eldest sonne to Theodorick, entred into possession of the Royaltie, being verie yong in years, An. 694. In his time, Pepin Heristell, Maire of the Pallace, passed the Rhine with a puissant Army, subduing the Saxons and Sueuians, who had reuolted from obedience, by reason of some troubles happening in France. Hee also conquered the Frisons with

Pepin Heristell Maire of the Pallace.

The woorthy deeds of Pepin Heristell.

their Duke, and made them to receiue the Christian faith. He raigned foure yeares, and his buriall is not recorded.

17 Childebert, second of that name, succeeded his Brother Clouis, in the yeare, 698. Of his deeds there is little set downe in writing, so Pepin Heristell (Maire of the Pallace) ruled then the whole kingdome, and managed all the affaires of Fraunce at his pleasure. He heard Ambassadors, and gaue them answers, according peace or truce, as to himselfe seemed best. In these raignes, the Maies of the Pallace held such authority, as it was not lawfull for any to contradict them. And yet Lambert, Bishop of Vtrecht (whom Pepin had reuoked from banishment) notwithstanding al his power, did not forbear to reprove his aduerty: but it cost him his life, for hee was slaine by Dodon, brother to his concubine. Pepin made his owne son Grimoald, Maire of the palace, in which office he was sone after slaine. Then he made his bastard son, called Charls Martell, Duke of Austrasia, and Maire of the pallace. Pepin died in the 17. year of his gouernment, as Maire of the Pallace: And Plectrude his wife, being desirous to rule, with her young sonne Thibaulte, caused Charles Martell to be imprisoned at Colougne. Childebert died, hauing raigned 18. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Stephens of Naucy, as some haue supposed that his brother Clouis doth also.

18 Dagobert, second of that name, succeeded his father Childebert, in the yeare 716. He was gouerned by Plectrude, widow to Pepin Heristell, and

698

The power and authority of Pepin Heristell

Charles Martell Bastard sonne to Pepin Heristell.

716.

Hermanfroy
Maire of the
Pallace.

Hermanfroy
prevailed a-
gainst Thi-
baulte.

and by Thibaulte, Sonne to his sonne Drogon. Some French men Crovned (as their King) one named Daniell, or Chilperick, having the Counte Hermanfroy, Maire of the Pallace, that had slaine the cruell Ebroine. Charles Martell was still kept Prisoner at Coulougue, by Plectrude, who hindred him (by that meanes) from enjoying his Dukedome of Austrasia. Thibault the youngest Sonne of Plectrude, aspying to bee Sole-Maire of the Pallace, as also to expell Hermanfroy, and his King Chilperick; raysed an Army against them: But Hermanfroy withstood him so couragiously, nere to the Forrest Charboniere, that Thibaulte was glad to fly, with losse of his people. By this meanes, Hermanfroy (like a Conqueror) supported the reign of Chilperick, untill that Charles Martell was escaped out of Prison. Dagobert reigned foure years, leauing two Sons; who, by the factions of diuers Princes (affecting the gouernment) were made Monkes.

720

19 Clothaire, fourth of that name, was king in Anno. 720. After that Charles Martell had escaped out of Prison, wherein he had bene detained by Plectrude his Step-mother: he came presently into Fraunce with a strong Army, to re-seaze his Lordship of Maire of the Pallace, and to exlude Chilperick (called Daniell) with duke Hermanfroy, Maire of the Pallace, who hadde made him King of France after the death of Dagobert the second. They encountred together, and by the ayde of the Duke of Frise; hee was dis-

comfited and fled. But yet his courage was not quailed, so; afterward hee soyled Chilperick nere to Cambray: who having rebuited his forces, with the helpe of Eudo Duke of Aquitaine, was once moze vanquished in Champaign. The Duke of Aquitaine rettying, toke Chilpericke home with him into his Countrey. Hermanfroy, (called by some Rainfroy) was pursued and taken in the Cittye of Angiers, where Martell (in kindnesse) left him to finish his daies. Charles Martell having prevailed against all disadvantages, was receiued in Fraunce so; Maire and great Gouverneur. After the first victorie, which he had against Chilperick; he made Clothaire the fourth King of France, whom some do tearme to be Brother, and others Uncle to Dagobert the second. He reigned two yeares, and lieth buried at Nancy.

Charles Mar-
tell Maire &
great Go-
uernour of
France.

20 Chilperick, second of that name, otherwise called Daniel, having bin nourished young in a Monastery, had formerly reigned two yeares, before Clothaire the fourth. Charles Martell, after the death of the said Clothaire, sent for him out of Gascoigne, and acknowledging his lawfull right, caused him to be constituted King, in the yeare, 722. This did he the rather (notw in the fresh Sunshine of his reconfirmed power) to hold him as King in appearance onely, that he dying without issue, might leaue the Crown to his Brother. He reigned almost fve yeares, and lyeth buried of Noyon.

722

The subtile
policy of
Charles Mar-
tell.

21 Theodorick, second of that name, or Thi-
A a erry

727

erry, as some call him, eldest sonne of Dagobert the second, was made King in the yeare 727. Charles Martell sent to fetch him forth of a Monastery, whereinto he had bin put when he was young, and created him King, in bare Title only: For Charles Martell (being Paire of the Pallace) did mannage the whole businesse of the Kingdome, and carried himselfe therein with very good credit.

Charles Martell ruled the whol kingdome,

Thus did the Paire take such advantage of the Kings carelesnesse, as (in the end) they expelled them from the Royall dignity and used it only for themselves. Charles Martell subdued the Saxons, and those of Bauaria, that entred into rebellion. Eudo Duke of Aquitain raised the Sarrazins (who then bare great sway in Spayne) to come with him, and warre in France, making open passage for them. They came thether, to the number of foure hundreded thousand persons, with Women, Children, and Seruaunts, with purpose to inhabite the Country, wasting it all along as they went. But Charles Martell met them nere Tours, where hee vanquished and slew 350000. with very small losse of his owne followers. Afterward hee preuailed against the Frisons, and once more hee foyled the Sarrazins before Auignon, expelling them (in the ende) quite out of Fraunce. This King having reigned fiftene yeares, dyed, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Charles Martell made a great slaughter of the Sarrazins.

741

22 Childerick, thirde of that name, Surnamed the Insensible, in regard of his blockish neglect

lect and carelesnesse, being likewise brought from the Monastery, succeeded his brother Theodorick, in the yeare, 741. In which yeare, Charles Martell (Paire of the Pallace, and Viceroy of Fraunce) after many famous and woorthie victozies by him obtained, dyed: and was in Royall habite interred at Saint Denis, in the ranke of Kinges, albeit hee neuer had the same no: Title. He left three Sonnes, Pepin, Carloman, and Griffon. Pepin, being Paire of the Pallace, lost not a iotte of that authoritie, which his Father hadde formerly exercised ouer the Kinges: but governed the Realme with his Brother Carloman. Griffon, thinking himselfe not sufficiently remembered by his Father, seized Laon to himselfe, and helde it strongly: but in the ende, hee was constrained to agree with his Bretheren. Carloman, contemning the goodes and honours of this Worlde, went to Rome to Pope Zacharie, and receined the habite of Religion at his hands. Pepin, succeeding as heere, to that which Carloman had forsaken, and hauing the fauour of the chiefeft in the Kingdome: same occasion smile vppon him, to make himselfe a King, and therefore woulde not let slippe so fayre an opportunity. Whereupon by his Ambassadors, hee gained the consent of Pope Zachary, whom hee thorowly acquainted with the puslanimity and dissolute life of Childerick, with other his predecessors. In like maner he layed open to him, the paines and Trauayles

The death of Charles Martell who left three Sonnes.

Pepin maketh means to inioy the Kingdom.

A a 2 of

The death
of Childerick
and his
wife.

of his Father and himselfe, only in defence of the Kingdome, and how it was more conuenable, that hee who attended the charge of publicke affaires, should likewise beare the name of king, rather then hee that waited not thereon at all, but followed his own delights and voluptuous pleasures, which being considered by the Pope, by the intermise of Bruchard Byshop of Bourges, and Folrad, Chaplaine vnto the saide Pepin; it was ordeained, that Childerick should be shaven, and sent vnto his Monastery againe, where he dyed, with Gisala his wife, hauing reigned nine years. And then was Pepin with full consent of the Nobility, and generall suffrages of all the people, proclaimed King of France.

Heere ended the first generation of the Kinges of Fraunce, in the ligne Masculine, beeing termed the race of the Merouingians: which lasted from Pharamond to this Pepin, 331. yeares. And heere beginneth the second generation; called the race of the Carlouingians.

751



Pepin, surnamed Le Bref, or Short, Son of Charls Martel, was made King of France, in the year of grace 751. hauing bin nine years Maire of the Pallace, from the raigne of Chilperick the third. This man, as well by consent of Pope Zacharie, as fauour of the French Nobility (his former good gouernment also especially

cially considered) was sacred King, the first of that race. Pope Stephen, who succeeded Zacharie, withdrew himselfe into France, to haue succour against Astulphus King of the Lombards. Pepin being acquainted therewith, took part with the holy see of Rome, promising to restore that which was vsurped from it: In requitall whereof, the Pope sacred him againe, with his two Sonnes: And Pepin marching with his Armie into Italy, sent the Pope home to Rome againe, so; Astulphus was besieged in Pauia, and constrained to make agreement with the Pope. Pepin gaue to the see of Rome, the Exarchate of Rauenna, and many other Citties and Towns by him conquered. He had many victories against Gaifer, or Waifer, Duke of Aquitaine, who (in the ends) was slaine, and his Country conquered, in a battaile which he won nere to Perigord. He subdued the Saxons, who were reuolted from their allegiance: And he instituted the Court of Parliament in France. He died at Paris, in the eyghth tenth yeare of his raigne, leauing two Sonnes and seauen Daughters, which hee had by Bertha his Wife. In his time was Robert, surnamed the Deuill, Sonne vnto Aubert Duke of Normandy.

Pepin aideth
Rome a-
gainst the
Lombards.

Pepin instituted the
Court of
parliament.

Robert the
Deuill

24 Charles the Great, called Charlemaigne, son of Pepin le Bref, succeeded in the kingdome, the yeare of Grace, 768. and was Crowned at Wormes, after he had made partage with Caroloman his Brother. When hee had reigned 32. yeares King of France, by consent of the Clergie

768

Charlemain
made Emp:
of the west,
And the first
that was cal-
led most
Christian
King,

gie and Romaine people (in regarde of the great good done by him to Christendome, & the Church of Rome) he was proclaimed, and crowned Emperoz of Rome, in the year, 800. upon Christmas day, the people crying aloud thre severall times: To Charls Augustus, crowned of God, the great and peaceable Emperor; life & victory. He was the first, called Most Christian King, being a man of great stature, admirable strength, eloquent in many languages, studious, affecting to heare the reading of histories, a great lover of learning and the learned, as Paris and Pisa can well witnesse. Nicephorus & he devided the Empire, agreeing, that the one shold be called Emperoz of the East, and the other of the West. He quailed the commotion raised in Guicenne, by the procurement of his Brother Caroloman, who therefore went in a rage to Rome, and returning thence, died some after. To please his Mother he married Theodora, Sister or daughter to Didier k. of the Lombardes: whom he quickly choiced, and married Hildegrande, Daughter unto the Duke of Swethen, by whom he had Charles, Pepin, Lewes, Rotrude, Bertha, and Gillette. Having pacified the broyles in Aquitaine, at the request of Pope Adrian, he went into Italy against Didier; whom he subdued, and so gave ending to the Lombards kingdome, sending the king, his wife and children into exile. He conquered the Saxons, against whom he warred thirty yeares, having twelve severall Battailles against them. He repulld the Sarrazins, that wasted Spaine, and lost

The en-
ding of the
Lombards
kingdome.

lost one battaille in dealing with them, wherein perished thirtie thousand of his men: but returning on them the second time, he won a famous victorie. But too true it is, that bringing his armie home into Fraunce, and passing by Roncevaux; his arrieregarde was rudely assailed by the Gascoignes, and there he lost a great number of his knights, among whome were Rowland and Oliuer. He conquered the Hennes, Sclavonians, Bavarians, and Danes; losing his two best Sonnes, Charles and Pepin, accomplishing many deedes worthy of memozy, as well in war as peace. He founded the Universities of Paris, Pauia, and Bolongne: appointing also Orders for Ecclesiasticall personnes, called Capitula Caroli Magni, and caused the Counsellors of Maience, Rheimes, Tours, Chaalons, Arles & Francfort to bee holden, ordaining withall, the twelve

The vnfor-
tunate bat-
taille of
Roncevaux

Deedes of Fraunce. Such was the raygne of this great Charles, till beeing crazed with a feauer: hee dyed, in the five and fortyeth yeare of his kingly Governement, the fourteenth yeare of his Emprye, the seauenty one of his age, and lyeth buried at Aix la Chapelle.

The twelve
Peeres of
Fraunce.

25 Lewes, Surnamed the Debonnaire or meeke, succeeded his father Charlemaine, both in the Romaine Emprye, and kingdome of Fraunce, but not in his Vertue and greatness of courage, for hee was so pick-named, in regarde of his over-much readinesse and facility, which made his authority despised, both

Great dissi-
mulation be-
tweene the
Sonne and
Father.

of his owne people and straungers, in the yeare, 816. Many debanches hapned vnder his raigne, as well on behalfe of Bernard his Nephew, king of Italy, his wife and children (whom he caused to be put to death) as also in his war against the Bretons, who would not bee brought vnder his obedience. He had three sonnes by his first wife, to wit; Lothaire, whom he made king of Italy, Pepin king of Aquitaine, and Lewes king of Bauiere. In second marriage, hee had Iudith, daughter to the Count of Altorfe; by whome he had Charles the Balde, who (after him) was k. of France. Hee endeouored to refoyme the ouergreat pompe and dissolutions in them of the Church, by a Counsell holden at Aix la Chapelle. His three first Sonnes made diuers wars vpon him, being thereto prouoked, as well by the Ecclesiastikes, as by the partage which hee had made to Charles the Balde, his yongest son. In their first attempte, they besieged him at Compeigne, where they tooke their second mother Iudith, whom when they had shorne & bayled, they sent her in Religion to Poitiers; leauing their ffather (then) without any administration or royall charge. But afterward, being recovered from such seculity, and causing his wife to be brought him againe: he was so milde and meke, that he pardoned the Rebels all their offences. A seconde time his Sonnes arose against him, and (accompanied with manie other Traytours) leuied a great Army, wherein Pope Gregory tooke part with them: and then they

The sons in Armes against their father, and their vsage to him.

they compelled their ffather, to come and submit himselfe to their mercy, bereauing him of his imperiall Dynaments, and giuing him the habite of a Monk, they caused him to be strictly guarded in the Abbey of Saint Medard de Soissons. His Wife they sent as an erile into Italy, and his Sonne Charles (as a Prisoner) to Prouence. The Lordes of Fraunce and Allemaigne, being vnwilling to suffer that such shame and indignity should bee done to an Emperour; in the following yeare they gaue him his liberty, bringing his Wife and Son againe vnto him, & Lothaire Emperour (chefe causer of his ffather's captiuitie) was glad to fly thence into Italy. The Emperour contrayned his Sonnes to seeke his mercy, and then hee freely forgave them. At Mayence hee dyed, hauing reigned twenty sixe yeares, and was interred at Metz.

The Lordes of Fraunce release their Emperour.

26 In the yeare 843. Charles the Baulde, Sonne of Lewes the Deke, was made king, by a diuision or partage made with his Brethren. Charles remained king of France, Lewes king of Germany; and Lothaire had Italy, with the Empire, Prouence and Austrasia, whereof he made a Dutchy, calling it Lorraine, after his owne name. Before the saide partage, they had a great battaile nere to Auxerre; wherein almost all the Nobility of France lost their liues. Which was the cause that the Normans (who were risen vnder conduct of two valiant leaders) were become Maisters well nere of all France; but in the ende, they were expelled by the king, who

The Normans became Maisters (almost) of all France.

who was crowned Emperour by Pope Iohn, after the decease of his nephew Lewes, the son of Lothaire. In this time he became very high minded, contemning the French manner of habite, and wearing the Græcian fashion, with a Dalmatian garment hanging down to his heels, beside other strange & pompous attires. Having reigned two yeares in the Empire, he was poisoned by his physician; dying at Mantua; and buried at Verceilis, but seauen years after, his body was transported to S. Denis. He reigned in all 38. yeares.

R. Chail: s
poisoned
by his phis-
ician.

377

27 Lewes the second, surnamed the Stutter or Stammerer, Sonne of Charles the Bauld, succeeded his father both in the Empire and Kingdom, in the yeare 879. Charles the Bauld had three sons, the first was named Charlon; whose eyes hee caused to be pulled out, in regard of his wicked government. The second was called Charles, who dyed before him. And the third, was this Lewes, surnamed the Stammerer, because his tongue was somewhat short, and made him to falter in his speech. Pope Iohn came into France, being escaped out of prison, because hee stood against the crowning of Charles le Gros, (Sonne to Lewes of Bauaria) Emperour. He crowned King Lewes the Stutter Emperour, which hee enjoyed not long, in regard of his sicknesse, for he dyed in the second yeare of his raigne: leaving his Wife Richeult (Sister to the King of England, and who was returned home to her Brother) great with Child of a son,

The Pope
escaped out
of prison.

that

that was afterward called Charles the Simple. He appointed as his Guardian, Odo, Sonne to the Earle of Aniou, hoping great comfort of the fruit in her Tomb. Hee left also two Bastard Sons, Lewes and Carlon. During his raigne, the Normans were valiantly repulsed: hee lyeth buried at Compeigne.

28 Carlon and Lewes, the illegitimate sons of Lewes le Begue, were Kings after his decease, in the yeare 881. not having any other heire to succeed him. Some sought to give the kingdom to Boson, King of Prouence: and others to Charls the Emperour, king of Germany. Carlon & Lewes (nevertheless) were crowned Kings, and carried themselves valiantly against the Normans, who (for five yeares space) made very great enterprises on France. In the battaile which they had nere to Chinon, they fought manfully upon the river of Vienna; there nine thousand were slaine, beside them that were drowned in flight. They expelled also the fore-named Boson and Charls the Emperour, seeking to make themselves Kings of France. These two brethren died strangely. Lewes, pursuing a wilde Beare with his Hawking, was shot through with an arrow, which one of his traine did let fly at the beast, & so he died, in the 4. yeare of his raigne. Carlon died a yeare after, as unluckily, for hee being one day very pleasant on horse-back, galloping after a faire Damself, who ran (for her safety) into a small Countrey cottage: he (not staying his horse, nor minding the impossibility of his passage) brake his necke at the entrance.

881

The base
sons of Le-
wes made
Kings.

The strange
death of
both the
Kings.

Now

Now, because he was the eldest, and succeeded his Brother, the name of King is attributed to him, as if that he had reigned alone. They were both buried at S. Denis.

886

29 Lewes the third, surnamed Fai-neant, Do nothing, after the death of Carlon his Father, was made King in the yeare 886. This man, being altogether careless, albeit hee hadde a great number of men, which his Father had assembled to resist the Normans (who wasted the kingdom very much) would not use any resistance: but like one fearefull and negligent, made agreement with them, and promised to give them 12 thousand pounds of Money yearly, till twelue yeares should be expired. Whereupon, the French (disdaining to be tributary to the Normans) deposed the said Doe nothing, and made him a shaven Monk at Saint Denis. And the rather they did it, because he had taken a Nunne from Challes S. Baudour, neere Paris, & married her whether she would or no. To resist the Normans, the French sent for Charles le Gros, Emperour of Rome, Nephew also to Charles the bald, and him they made King. The Normans kept Paris besieged, with forty thousand men, who were in such sort foyled, as not a man of them escaped alive. Nevertheless, to containe them in some more moderation; hee made alliance and agreement with their Dukes. Which raised such strange garboiles in the Realme, so displeased the people, and incensed them with such hatred against him: that they expelled him both out

A dishonorable composition wth the Normans.

A great slaughter of the Normans.

out of the Empire and Kingdome, and hee dyed Charles le Gros expelled from the Empire & kingdom 891
in a poore Village of Suaba, very poore and miserably. Yet the five yeares of this raigne are attributed to him and not to Lewes Doe nothing.

30 Odo, or Eudes, Sonne to Robert Earle of Angiers, was made King in the yeare 891. after Charles le Gros, by advice of the Princes: albeit hee was not of the race of Charlemaigne, but onely Tutor to Charles the Simple, and he was preferred by Arnould the Emperour (successour to Charles le Gros) who would haue had the Kingdome himselfe. During his raigne, the Normans (breaking their agreement made with Charles le Gros) began to warre againe, much more cruelly then before, and now the second time besieged Paris: But Odo carried himselfe so vndauntedly, that he overcame them many times. In this while, certayne Barons of the Realme, had sent for Charles the Simple into England, and Crowned him King of Fraunce, at the age of foureteene yeares. Odo, who was then in Aquitaine (hardly brooking this disgrace) mooued great warre against Charles the Simple, which continued for long time. Nevertheless, at the houre of his death, hee entreated the Princes of Fraunce, that they should restore the saide Charles to the Kingdome, because (in true right) it appertained to him. This Odo brought up (as a noueltie) to haue a great many Floures-de-Luces (without any direct number) in the Armes of Fraunce, which continued so till the time of Charles the first. He reigned nine yeares, and

Charles the Simple sent for out of England, & crowned K.

and lieth buried at S. Denis.

900. 31 Charles the third, surnamed the Simple, son of Lewes le Begue, or the Stammerer, began to raigne soly in the yere 900. After his Tutours death, who had held the kingdome in the minority of his yeres. The warre of the Normans continued stil: yet the king fel into acquaintance with Raoull, or Rollo their Duke, and gaue him his daughter in marriage, endowd with all the Land, which then was called Neustria, and afterward made a dutchy, and named Normandy, with especial condition, that he should be baptized. Robert Earle of Paris, Brother to Odo, (lately deceased) pretended to usurp the kingdom, and drawing many Lords into his faction, crowned himselfe King. But Charles, with the ayde of the Emperour Henrie, gaue him battaile nere to Soissons, wherein the saide Robert was vanquished and slaine. Whereat Hebert, Earle of Vermandois (his Brother in Law) was highlie displeased, yet hee dissembled it for an apt tyme, and one day, pretending to feast the king, he entertained him to lodge in his castle of Peronne. Sooner was he entred, but he did shut him vp in a Towre (where hee dyed) compelling him to resigne the kingdome to Raoull, Brother to the Duke of Burgundy. Hee left by Theargina his wife, a Sonne named Lewes, who fledde for his safetie into England. This king raigned alone 14. yeres, and lyeth entred at Peronne.

Neustria,
now named Normandy.

Charles compelled to resigne his Kingdome.

927.

32 Raoull of Burgundy, Sonne to Richard Duke of Burgundy, was made king in the year

927.

927. This man not being of the linage of kings, would needs be crowned at Soissons: as well by fauour of Hugh the great Earle of Paris, as also of Hebert Earle of Vermandois, who then kept King Charles the Simple Prisoner, saving his person, under colour of feasting him, and constraining him (before his death) to resigne his kingdome, in presence of many Lords, and to give it (as a free gift) to the sayde Raoull, which yelded the greater authority to his raigne.

The Quene Theargina, wife to King Charles the Simple, seeing such troubles in France, made her retirement into England, to the king her Brother, with her Son Lewes, called Lewes of beyond the Sea. Raoull made a voyage into Italy, pretending to get the Empire, which was then in strife, and there he vanquished Berengarius an Italian Prince, who laide some claime thereto. But finding himselfe not wel affected of the Italians; hee with-drew thence into France: where hee dyed of a very strange disease, being eaten with wormes, notwithstanding all remedies applied by his Physicians. He raigned about tenne yeres, died at Auxerre, and was buried at S. Colombe nere Sens.

33 Lewes, fourth of that name, surnamed Lewes d'Outre-mer, or of beyond the Sea, Son of Charles the Simple, was made king in the yere 929. being then in England with the king his uncle, the Princes, Prelats, and Barons of France sent for him into England: whither his Mother Thear-

Hugh the great Count of Paris.

Lewes d'Outremer, or of beyond-Sea.

lie.

929.

Hebert Earl
of Verman-
dois execu-
ted.

Theargina had carried him for refuge, when Hebert had betrayed King Charles her Husband; & he was crowned at Laon. The King had debate with Raoul of Burgundy, about the Kingdome, and made warre vpon the Emperour Otho for the Dutchy of Lorraine: but peace being made betwene them, he tooke to Wife Herberge, Sister to the said Emperour. At his returne home into Fraunce, hee caused Hebert Earle of Vermandois to bee hanged, who had procured his Father to dye in Prison. Hugh, the great Earle of Paris, who then held the full sayle of the Kingdome; raised the Normans to rebell against the King: But the King drawing him to his side, he rebelled from him again, because he had made an agreement with the Normans without him, and caused them also to alter their purpose, with a fresh begunne warre: wherein the King was taken Prisoner, and carried to Rouen. Afterward he was deliuered to the great Earle Hugh, who detained him at Laon: but the Emperour Otho came to his succour, & deliuered him. Lewes raigned twenty seauen yeares, and lieth buried at S. Remy of Rheimes.

956

The death
of Hugh
the great
Earle of Pa-
ris.

34 Lothaire, Sonne of Lewes d'Ourremer, or of beyond the Sea, was made King in the yeare 956. At the beginning of his raigne, Hugh the great Earle of Paris governed all the affaires of France: but he dyed soon after (leaving three Sonnes, to wit, Hugh Capet, who afterward usurped the kingdom; Otho and Henry, who were successively Dukes of Burgundy;) and

and was sumptuously entered at Saint Denis. Lothaire raigned 31. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Remy of Rheimes.

35 After King Lothaire, Lewes his Sonne, ⁹⁸⁶ first of that name, succeeded in the government, in the yeare 986. He raigned but one yeare, died without any heire, and was the last King of the race or lineage of Charles the great, his burial was at Compeigne. Charles, Duke of Lorraine, ^{Charles Duke of Lorraine} (who was his Uncle and next Heire) hearing ^{seeketh to} of his death, would needs passe into France, to ^{be King.} make himselfe King: But the French hated him extremely, as well because he had continually pertaken with the Allemaignes, sworn enemies then to the French; as also, in regard hee was a bad Prince to his owne Subiectes. So that they would not receiue him for their King, but wholly ranne to Hugh Capet, then Maire of the pallace, a very wise and worthy man. Hee perceiuing that the French fauoured and affected him, knew well enough how to sow (both in their eares and hearts) an vnliking opinion of Charles Duke of Lorraine, to make him the more hatefull to them. He first laid befoze them, how hee had permitted the Allemaignes free passage, when they came and warred on France. Next, that he had maintained the chiefe enemies to the crowne of France, wherein hee stood guilty of high treason; And so, (by consequent) was disabled of any succession to the said Crowne.

D. Charles
disabled by
Hugh Ca-
pet.

¶ Heere endeth the second generation of the Kinges of France, in the ligne Masculine, being the race of the Carloungians, and which continued (after Pepin) for the space of 233. yeares.

987



D. Charles
and his wife
& Children
surprized by
treason.

Vgh Capet, Sonne to Hugh the great Earle of Paris, possessed himself of the Crowne of France, in the yeare 987. He was (by some of the French) proclaymed King at Noyon first of al; some after, in the Citty of Rheimes (partly by fauour, and partly perforce) Crowned King of Fraunce, and made his entrance into Paris: whereuppon, Charles Duke of Lorraine took Rheimes, Laon, and Soissons. Hugh Capet with a potent Armie besiedged Laon, wheré hee tooke Charles with his Wife and Children, by Treason in the Wyshop of the said place, and sent them Prisoners to Orleauunce, where they were very strictly kept, and died. Capet being the Conqueroz, maintained, that the kingdome should wholly appertaine to him: because Raoull of Burgundy (his vnckle) had formerly possessed himselfe thereof, by the voluntary resignation of Charles the Simple. Hee caused his son Robert (who had folloved his studies) to be crowned at Orleauunce, and to associate him in the kingdomes regiment: taking away the authority of the Paire of the Pallace, when thus he advanced his son, whom he had by Adela, Daugh-

daughter to Edward King of England. Hee appointed also the twelue Peeres againe; beganne the dignity & office of Constable; and established the Marshals of France. He reigned alone, & with his Son 9. yeares. He founded the Abbay of S. Magloire at Paris, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

37 Robert, the sonne of Hugh Capet, being Crowned King in the life time of his Father, began to rule alone in the yeare 997. as true inheritance, both of the Crowne, and likewise of his Fathers vertues. He reigned worthily, being a Man very deuout and meke, the Kingdome continuing peaceable, and without warre. This King was very wise, and could compose in Latine very learnedlie: for he made many Proses, Hymnes, and answeres, which yet (to this day) are sung in the Church. He was also well skild in Musique, and would oftentimes sing among the Channons, and weare a Coape (for compaignie) with them, liuing as religiously, as royally. Henrie Duke of Burgundy (his Vnckle by the Mothers side) made him Heire of his Dutchie, leauing it vnto him by his Testament: and incited him against Landry Duke of Neuers, (being beloued and supported by the Burgundians) who insulted vppon his right, in which attempt they foyled him, and droue him to flight. Hee ioyned the Citty of Sens to the Crowne, by confiscation, for a certaine delict doone by the Counte Reynard. He sent his Armie against the Valentians, with Richard Duke of Normandy, to assist the Earle of Flanders his kin-man,

997

The vertues
of Robert,
son to Hugh
Capet.

His Wiues
& children.

against Henry the Emperour. He had thre wiues; Luthard, Bertha (whom hee forsooke vpon some occasion) and Constance, by whom hee had thre sons, one whereof died during his raigne. In his time was an vniuersal famine and mortality. He dyed, hauing raigned 34. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

1030.

38 Henry the first succeded in the kingdome, after his father Robert, in the yeare 1030. In his beginning to gouerne, his younger Brother Robert warred against him, being allied to the Earle of Champaigne and Flaunders; who stroue to make him king, by the procurement of his Step-mother: but he (assisted by the Duke of Normandy, and the Earle of Corbeile) mayntained his owne quietnesse. He ioyned Meulanc to his Crowne, by rebellion of the Earle of that place. Raoull king of high Burgundy being dead, the Emperour Conrade seized on that part thereof, which wee call La Franche Conte; And the Dutchy being Roberts, Brother to the king, the kingdome of Burgundy (which had so continued an hundred and thirtie yeares) was then abolished. The king seated young William the Bastard Duke of Normandy, (to whom he had bene Guardian) peaceably in his Dutchy, because some of his Subiects would haue depriued him thereof, as being vnwilling to entertaine him. He founded Saint Martine des Champs, in the same place where his Wallace was, without Paris. By Anne his wife, daughter to George or Gaultier king of the Russians, he had Phillip and

The ending
of the king-
dome of
Burgundy.

The King
of the Rus-
sians.

Hugh,

Hugh, and a Daughter married to the Duke of Normandy. Fastling himselfe to ware weeke, he caused his Sonne Phillip to bee crowned king of France: And before his death, he left Baldwin Earle of Flanders as Guardian of his Children. He reigned 31. yeares, and lieth buried at Saint Denis.

39 Phillip the first, succeded after his father, in the year 1061. During his time, William the Bastard, Duke of Normandy, conquered the Realme of England: and Godfrey of Bullen was made king of Ierusalem; also the Countrey of Gastinois came then to the Crown. This king raigned 48. yeares, and lyeth buried at S. Benets on Loire.

1061.

The con-
quest of
England by
William the
Bastard.

40 Lewes the first, fir named le Gros, immediately after the death of king Phillip his father, in the year 1110. was sacred at Orleance by the Bishoppe of Sens, the way of Rheimes not being then secure. Some Princes and Lordes (assisted by the king of England) in the beginning of his raigne, did giue him many molestations; but still it was his happe to be Conquerour, and the Warre of the English (verie many times appointed) was at last ended. Pope Gelasius fled for refuge into France, where hee was succoured against the Emperour. In the yeare 1129, the king caused his Sonne Phillip to bee Crowned; who (two yeares after) dyed at Paris, by reason of a Hogges running betwene the Legges of his Horse, that threwe him violently on the Paucement, and dying of

1110

The Pope
flieth forre-
fuge into
France.

B b 3

that

that hurt, he was buryed at Saint Denis. Afterward, he had his other Sonne Lewes crowned, and it was done by Pope Innocent, he being then in France.

Knights
Templers,
& Chartreux
Monks,

At this time were a great company of Lazers and Leapers in Fraunce, who would haue infected all the rest of the people; but they were all taken and burned. The order of the Knights Templers, & Chartreux Monks began in this kinges raigne: and the winds were so rough and impetuous, in the yeare 1135, that they ouerturned many Towers, Castles, Trees in foyrests, and Mills. This King appeased the troubles in Flanders, Bourbonnois, & Auvergne: he builded the Abbay of Saint Victor nere Paris; reigned 28. yeares, died at the age of sixty, leaving six Sons and a daughter, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

1138

41 Lewes the seventh, firnamed the Young man, beganne to raigne after his ffather, in the yeare 1138. He made war on Thibault Earle of Champaigne, tooke from him the Citty of Vitry: And (in a great rage) burned the Church, with 13 hundred persons in it, that had fledde thither for safety. By the sollicitation of S. Bernard, he went to Hierusalem with his Quene, and with the Army of the Emperour Conrade: where, besieging Damas, though assisted in the Army, he could boast of no aduantage; but retreating thence, had not the Shippes of Sicily befriended him and his; they hadde remained prisoners there. Being returned into Fraunce, he made a separation betwene him and Quene Elea-

1200. persons
sustained
in a church.

Elia nor his wife, Dutchesse of Aquitaine and Aniou, vpon two suspicions conceiued against her. Henry, Duke of Normandie (who afterward was King of England) married her, with her Patrimony of the saide two Dutchie; and thereabout followed great Warres betwene France and England. The King married Constance, Daughter to the K. of Spayn, who dyed soon after: And then he remarried Alice, daughter to the Earle of Blois, by whom he had Phillip Dieu-donne, Gods gift. Then happened great disturbance in England, betwene the King and his son, who making his recourse to Lewes, caused thereby a very troublesome war, without any aduantage to either side. But in the end they were accorded, and a marriage concluded, of Alice the daughter of Lewes to the son of England. The King died at Paris, hauing reigned 43. yeares, and lieth buried in the Abbay of Barbeau, which was founded by him.

A marriage
betweene
England &
France.

42 Phillip Augustus, firnamed Dieu-donne, Gods gift, succeeded after his ffather, in the year 1181. He banished all the Iewes out of Fraunce, and yet afterward permitted them entrance againe: ordaining many Edicts against Blasphemers, as also the bury of the Iewes. He did put to death the Albigeois Heretiques, and them of Beliers: augmenting greatly the Citty of Paris, instituting Sheriffes and Aldermen, commaunding the streets to be paved, building also the Halls for Studentes, and the Churchyard of S. Innocent, and enclosing with wals the

1181.

Virtuous
deedes in a
King.

Uniuerſity ſide. He went to recouer the Citie of Hieruſalem, with Richard Cueur de Lyon, King of England; and falling off from him, returned home into France. Hee hadde afterward great wars againſt the ſaid R. Richard, and Iohn without Land his brother, who ſucceeded him; about the titles of Normandy, Aquitain, Poictu, Maine, Aniou, & Auuergne. He won the battaile at Bouines againſt the Emperoꝝ Ocho, and other French Lords who were entred into rebellion againſt him: In which battell perished fifty thousand men, and Ocho himſelfe was enforced to flight, the Earle of Flanders and the Earle of Bologne being taken Priſoners, by which reaſon the king was called the Conqueror. He reigned 43. yeares, died at Mante, aged 59. & lieth buried at S. Denis, leauing two ſons and a daughter.

Fifty thou-
sand men
ſlain in one
battaile.

1224

43 Lewes the eyght, ſucceeded after his Father, in the yeare 1224. In the life time of his Father, hee croſſed the Seas, and made Warre in England, attayning to no ſuch ſucceſſe as hee expected. Hee renewed kindneſſe and Brotherhood betwene the French and Germaines, tooke Auignon, and warred vpon the Albigeois. He reigned thre yeares, and lyeth buried at Saint Denis.

1227

44 Lewes the ninth, ſucceeded his Father Lewes the eyght, in the yeare 1227. Blaunche his Mother (in regard of his young yeares) was appointed to be Regent: whereat ſome Lords were diſcontented, but ſhe tooke order ſufficiently with them. She maintained the warre againſt

againſt the Engliſh, and agreement was made with them vpon ſolemne Oath, to holde Aquitaine, doing homage, and to yelde by Normandie, Ponthieu, Maine, and Poictiers. The king being in peace, exerciſed himſelfe to liue Religiouſly, building Churches, Hospitals, and Monaſteries, enriching them with rents & reuenues. In the 24. yeare of his raigne, hee went to recouer the Holy Land, deſcended into Egypt, and toke Damietta. He was afterward ſo rudely aſſayled, that he was taken by the Soldane: but deliuered againe, vpon his reſtoring Damietta, and paying a great ranſome. Hee bought of the Venetians, the Crown of Thornes (as was ſuppoſed) with other Reliques of the paſſion, & cauſed them to be ſafely kept in the holy Chappel at Paris. Many Shepheards, underſtanding that the king was priſoner, aroſe vp in armes, and made great ſpoile in France: but they were ſoyled by them of Orleance and Bourges. The king at his returne, did very ſeuerely chaſtiſe blaſphemers: And paſſing afterward into Affrica, toke Carthage, and aſſailed Thunis, where the Peſilence happening in his Campe, he died of a flux of blood. He reigned 34. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Peace be-
tweene Eng-
lande and
France.

Peazants a-
riſe, and do
great hurt
in France.

Behold briefly the life and death of King Lewes, ninth of that name, who afterward by Pope Boniface the eight, in the time of Phillip le Bel, was canonized among the number of Saints in Romes Kalender, and called S. Lewes. His raigne was truly in piety, religion, ſanctitie and iuſtice.

K. of France
cald a Saint

justice. His youth was much tormented with rebellions, subleuations, & seditions of some Lords: but his manly yeares did disperse them, as the Sunne doth dimine clouds. Hee was deuoute, vp-right, valiant, liberal, seuer, and yet clement, vsing all these Vertues, according as hee knewe them to be needfull.

1271

45 Phillip the third, Son of S. Lewes, was proclaimed King in the Camp before Thunis, in the yeare, 1271. but was afterward Sacred at Rheims. He was Sur-named Phillip the hardie, and at his coming back into France, he had many difficulties, about the death of Phillip his impoyoned Sonne, in the Marres of Foix and Terracon. Upon an Easter day, in the evening houre, all the French (being then in Sicily) were euery one slaine, whereon grew the By-word of the Sicilian Vespres or Euening. The king died at Parpignan, in the fortieth yeare of his age, and lieth buried at Saint Denis, hee married Isabel, Daughter to Peter of Arragon, by whom he had Phillip, Charles, and Marie: And then, remarrying Marie, Daughter vnto Henric Duke of Brabant, he hadde by her Lewes and Margaret.

The Sicilian
Vespres.

1285.

46 Phillip the fourth, Sur-named le Bell, or the Fayre, Sonne to the fore-named Phillip, succeeded his father, in the yeare, 1286. both in the Kingdome of France and Nauarre, in right of his wife. In his younger daies he had a Scholemaster, a Roman boyme, and a great Diuine, named Gilles, who caused the King to write an excellent wo:ke

wo:ke (yet to be seene) called The Institution of Princes. As the King was at Paris, being returned from his Coronation at Rheims; this Diuine (according to the Uniuersities ancient custome, which was, to make a learned speech after the kings sacring) made a singuler Oratio to him to encrease his desire in following Vertue & piety, preserving his subiects in peace and tranquillity. He built the sumptuous Pallace of Paris, & subdued the Flemings, who had forsaken his part, & giuen aide to the English against him; the Earle of Flanders, and his two sons beeing then taken prisoners. The King left a Garrison in the countrey, but they were slaine in a commotion of the people: Whereupon, the Earle of Flanders (having giuen his faith to the King) was sent thither with one of his sons: but being able to do no good, he returned backe againe to the King, and died soon after at Compeign. The King went thither himselfe in person, & at the first had no better successe; but at length, he charged them so furiously, that he foiled 6000. whereon they were constrained to make attonement, and pay him 200000. Crownes. The day of Courtray, was afterward fauourable to the Flemmings, but deplozable to the French, the English preuayling mightily against them. Then came the Bulles of Pope Boniface against Phillippe, but they were burned in the Court of the Pallace: which made Boniface to excommunicate the King, but Benet his Successour absolved him againe. In his time was the Papall See, transferred to

A Booke
written by
the King.

The Popes
Bulls against
the King,
burned.

The Popes
See was
brought to
Auignon.

to Auignon, where it continued threſcore & ten yeares, Rome being then governed by Legates. The king died at Pountainebleu, which was the place of his birth: having reigned 28. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

1314

Enguerrand
executed at
Mont-fau-
con.

47 Lewes the tenth, Sur-named Hutin (after the conformity of his manners) succeeded his father, in the yeare, 1314. and had his right also, (after his Mother) in the kingdome of Navarre. Enguerrand de Marigni, General of the Finances, being accused to have robbed the kings treasury, was hanged at Mont-faucon, which hee himſelfe firſt cauſed to be made. Lewes took firſt to wife Margaret, Daughter to Robert Duke of Burgundy, by whom he had a Daughter. Next, he married Conſtance, whom he left with child of a Sonne. named Iohn, that lived but eyght daies. This king reigned but xviij. months, died at Boys de Vincennes, and is buried at S. Denis.

1316.

48 Phillip the fiſt, Surnamed the Long, ſucceeded after his Brother Lewes Hutin in the kingdome, being called Long. in regard of his tall ſtature and ſlenderneſſe. The Duke of Burgundie, would have trouble in his poſſeſſion of the crown, in regarde of his Daughters Daughter, but the Salique Law did not fauour him therein. This king Phillip married Iane, Daughter to Otholine Earle of Burgundy, by whom hee had three daughters: The firſt married with the Sonne to the Duke of Burgundy; the ſecond, the Sonne to the Earle of Flaunders; and the thirde to the

Daulphine

Daulphine of Viennois, by which marriages all Marres were allayed in Fraunce. During his raigne, diuers Leapers and Lazers (procured thereunto by the Jewes) poiſoned all the welles which cauſed a great Peſtilence thorough the Kingdom: but both the one and other were grievouſly puniſhed therefore. Never coulde this king obtaine of his people, any impoſt or Taxation by him leuied. He made a Law, that there ſhould be in his kingdom, but one kind of weight, one meaſure, and one money, commanding that it ſhould be duely kept. But while this was in execution, he died, without any heires male, having reigned five yeares in peace, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Marriages
make peace
in France.

In theſe times, certaine Tropes of Countrey people, that were called Paſtors and Shepherds, aroſe againe in Fraunce, as formerly ſome had done in the time of king Lewes the ninth. Theſe men made their vaunt, that they would croſſe the Seas, and go warre againſt the Infidels. They had two chiefe men of marke among them, and wel beſeeming ſuch an aſſembly, to wit, a Prieſt, that (for his miſ-behaviour) was expelled his Church: and an Apoſtata Monk, of the Order of S. Bennet. Theſe two fellows, ſo abuſed the hearts and beleeſe of the poore popularity, that ſilly Shepherds left their flocks, and Labozers their Manuall trades, to follow theſe two impoſtutes: who made them verily beleue, that the Holy Land could be recovered by none but them. In conſequence, this heape of Rascalitie was quai-

Another ri-
ſing of Pea-
zants in
France.

led

led in Languedoc, because, in stead of preparing their fury against the Infidels, and passing the Seas: they fell vpon the Jewes, whom the king had repealed into France.

1321

49 Charles le Bell, Son to Phillip the fourth, succeeded after his Brother, in the year 1321. and likewise was King of Nauarre, as his three predecessors had bin. He had three wiues. Blaunch, (whom he diuorced for her adultery) Marie, and Margaret. Iourdain de l'Isle (albeit hee was nephew to Pope Iohn the two and twentieth) was hanged and strangled at Paris, for his strange offences. This King fel to concord with the English, appeased the Earle of Flanders, and drew his people to a mutuall Reconciliation. He was a great Justicer, reigned seauen yeares, dyed at Boys de Vinciennes, and is buried at Saint Denis.

Iourdain de
l'Isle han-
ged at Paris

By his death, the second branch of the Capets (called De Valois) came to the Royalty, and began in

1328.

50 Phillip de Valois, Cousin Germaine to the three precedent Kings, dying without heire male: his succession was in the yeare, 1328. His right to the Crowne was dearely disputed, betwene him and King Edward the third of England, Son to the Sister of the three forenamed Kings, who (preferring his Mothers Title) would needs be King of France, contrary to the Decree of the Law Salique, and consent of al the

the States. He did King Phillip homage for Guyenne and Ponthieu; but (being not well pleased therewith) cut him off quite from Flanders, Bretaine, Germany, Crecy, where Phillip lost the day, with the very flower of al the French Nobility, taking Calais also by their sight. Truce being taken betwene both the Kings: Edward of England had both the Title of King, and Armes of France or conquest, which euer after was attributed to him & his. Phillip, reigned 22. yeares, died at Nogent, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

The Battell
of Crecy, &c
great losse
of the
French.

1350.

51 Iohn, Sonne to Phillip de Valois, succeeded his Father, in the yeare 1350. prouing as unfortunate in those tempestuous times, as his father had done before him. He married Ioane, Countesse of Bolongne, by whom he had foure sonnes and one Daughter. Raoull the Constable of France was beheaded in prison. In the day at Poitiers, King Iohn was taken by the English, and carried into England, which imprisonment of his, caused many pittifull Tragedies, the most furious whereof were acted in the chiefe Citties of France. Foure yeares after, King Iohn passed into England, for the freedom of his Distresses: but there he died at London, hauing reigned 13. yeares. His sonne caused his body to be brought to S. Denis.

King Iohn,
as a prisoner
brought in-
to England.

1364.

52 Charles the first, Sonne to King Iohn, succeeded his Father, in the yeare 1364. Hee sustained very great troubles during the captiuitie of his father, by a commotion which the k. of Nauarre raised at Paris, who was aided by the merchants of

of the said Citty, and would haue had the Regency, but that Charles (being then Dauphine) made opposition against him. He deale for the ransome and deliuerance of his father: after whose decease, he was crowned King. Hee tooke to Wife Ioane, Daughter to Charles Duke of Burbon, by whom he had three Sonnes, and one daughter. He maintained great warres against the English, hauing (at one instant) five seuerall Armies in field against them, because they were such potent enemies: And to supply so mightie a charge, he was faine to lay a heauie taxation vpon wine and salt. Bertrand de Guesclin, a most worthy knight, was then his high Constable: And the Bastille at Paris was then builded. A sedition happened at Montpellier, and six hundred of the seditious were executed. This King was surnamed the Wise, for his deep discretion, goodness, and gouernment. He so loued Learning, that he caused the Holy Bible to be translated into the French Language (which remaineth yet) in the Royal Cabinet of the Louure) with many other good Bookes beside. Hee had stil an eye to Justice, sitting daily to hear causes, and ordering all his affayres by Counsel. With much adoo, he regained some Townes from the English, in Poictu and Xaintonge. Hee reigned sixteene yeares, yeldded his soule to God at Chasteau de Beaute, and lieth buried at S. Denis. The Sed of the Turlupins was then abolished. See Emil. Lib. 9.

Five armies
at one time
against the
English.

The Bible
first version
into the
French
tongue.

was crowned King at the age of fourteen yeares, being under the gouernment of his Uncles, the Dukes of Berry, Burgundy, and the Duke of Anjou, who got into their custody many millions of Gold, left by the King's decease. And then, (no Money being to be found) the people were charged with heauy impositions, whereby great seditions happened at Paris, Rouen, and Orleans. The King tooke into the Armes of France againe, the three floure-de-Luces onely, and fell sicke of a Phrenzy: by reason of two factions in his Court, the Dukes of Berry and Burgundy, against the Dukes of Orleans and Bourbon, whereby many lamentable mishaps ensued. The Princes tooke the gouernment into their hands, and diuision happening (concerning the treasure) the Duke of Burgundy caused the Duke of Orleans to be slaine at Paris, and the Duke of Burgundy was slaine at Montreuil. Phillip his Sonne craued ayde of the English, who presently tooke (well nere) all Normandy; beside the unhappy day (to the French) of Agincourt or Azincourt, where many wooll Tragedies were acted on the Theater of France by the English, Burgundians, and the Kings Mother, who was imprisoned at Paris. The King of England married Madame Katherine of France. The Duke of Burgundy deliuered him the King, the Quene, and the Citty of Paris, where he caused him to be crowned King, and many other Citties and Towns were deliuered him beside. King Charles hauing reigned forty two yeares, died at Paris,

Factions in
the Court
of France.

The King
of England
crowned in
France.

and lieth buried at Saint Denis. His raigne was long, but full of calamity.

1422

54 Charles the seauenth, Sonne to Charles the first, was made King in the yeare 1422. He found his Kingdome possessed (in all partes) by the English; Paris and the greater part of the Realme, being then commaunded by the Duke of Bedford, Regent for young Henry King of England; who called himselfe King of Fraunce; held his Parliament at Paris; was there crowned king; and made the Seale and Monies also in his own name: King Charles hauing nothing else, but the Countries of Poictu, Berry, and Orleauce, whereon the English (in a mockery) called him the King of Bourges. They went to besiege the Cittie of Orleauce; but they were thence repulled by the French Capitaines: for they had a Maide in their Company, who was called Ioane the Pucelle, and they verily beleued, that she was sent of God, for the succour of King Charles, and to chase the English out of France. The King, after the discomfiture of the English nere to Partenay; was conducted to Rheimes, and there crowned: But the English got the Pucelle, and burned her at Rouen. The King made peace with the Duke of Burgundy, who shortly with left the English; and afterward recouered Paris and Normandy from them. King Charles reigned 38. yeares, and lieth buried at S. Denis.

Ioane the
Pucelle of
France.

1461

55 Lewes the eleuenth, succeeded his father, in the yeare 1461. being then in Burgundy, whence the Duke conuayed him to Rheimes, where he was crowned. He found a number of

notable Enemies, both Domestickall and for-
raigne: For his Lords made warre against him,
which they termed The Weale-publike warre,
& he lost the day to them at Montle-hery, Gran-
son, Nancy, and Guinegaste. The order of S. Michael was then instituted, and Iacques d'Ar-
maguac beheaded. His raigne was full of feare,
suspicion, and treachery, which so pierced his hart;
that, in a long tyme of dismay (after 33. yeares
gouernment) he died, and lieth buried at Nostre
Dame de Clery.

The order
of S. Micha-
el instituted

56 Charles the eight, succeeded his father Le-
wes, in the yeare 1484. being crowned at the age
of 14. yeares: yet the States meeting at Tours,
appointed that hee should not haue any Regent.
Hee sustained a long warre in Bretayne, which
terminated by his marriage with Anne, eldest
Daughter to Fraunces Duke of Bretayne; by
whom he had thre sons, but could not long en-
ioy any one of them. At the request of his Con-
fessour, hee rendered to the King of Spaine the
Carledomes of Roussillon and Perpignan, which
his father had won. Being in peace, he aduen-
tured to reconer the kingdom of Naples, which he
did (without striking one stroke) in full conquest:
B. Alphonfus and his son Ferdinand being thence
retired, & left Glibert de Montpensier Vice-Roy
there. Returning home into France, he was assai-
led on the way by the Romans, Venitians, and
them of Milleyne at Fornoue, where his person
was in great danger, the enemies being tenne to
one: Pererthelesse, hee charged them with such
courage,

1484.

The King-
dom of Na-
ples wonne
by the
French.

courage, that he bare thence the victory. He deli-
uered the Duke of Orleance, being besieged
in Nouarre, and made peace with the Duke of
Millaine. He returned home into France, where
hee dyed (within a yeare after) at Amboise, as
he stood and beheld the Princes playing at Ten-
nis. He reigned foureteene yeares, and lieth bu-
ried at S. Denis.

Thus ended (in him) the direct ligne of Va-
lois, he dying without any heires Male;
and then followed the collaterall Issue,
which began in

1499

57 **L**ewes the twelfth, nextest of kinne to
be Charles the eight, in the yeare 1499. Hee
eing Duke of Orleance, and also of Valois.
He repudiated Ioane, Daughter to King Lewes
the eleauenth, whom hee had married perforce;
and espoused Anne of Bretaine, Widdow to the
King his Predecessour. He established a Parli-
ament at Rouen, gaue orders to the Uniuersitie
of Paris; sent his Army into Italy, toke Genes
and Millayne, and Lewes Sforza, Duke of Mil-
leyne, who dyed a Prisoner in France. The
kingdome of Naples was re-taken, vnder the
conduct of Monsieur d'Aubigny: And the King
vanquished the Venetians Army at Agnadell,
where hee tooke Bartholmew their Leader, albe-
it the Pope banded with the Venetians against
him. Gaston de Foix tooke Boulongne, and
wonne the battaile nere to Rauenna: where he
was

The king-
dome of
Naples re-
conquered

Gaston de
Foix.

was slaine, by chasing the enemies ouer-far; and
yet notwithstanding, the victory remained to the
French, with surprizall of the Cittie, and many
Captaines and great persons taken Prisoners.
Hereupon, the Pope raised many heauy enemies
against him, whom (in the ende) hee worthily
vanquished. He reigned 17. yeares, and lieth bu-
ried at S. Denis.

58 Frances de Valois (as nextest of kin) suc-
ceeded King Lewes, in the yeare 1515. This
King bare such affection to learning, that he was
surnamed The Father and Restorer of the Sci-
ences. At his beginning, he ouercame the Swit-
zers, took Millaine and Fontarabie. Afterward,
being desirous to winne the Townes belonging
to the Dutchy of Millaine, and to bring his
siedge before Pavia: hee was taken Prisoner, in
the yeare 1524. and carried Captiue into Spaine.
Fraunce was then very greatly afflicted, not only
by this disaster; but by a great famine, because
the Corne was frozen vpper in the Earth. The
King was deliuered by a treaty holden at Ma-
drill, and married Elianor, Sister to Charles the
first, Emperour; peace being then concluded, in
the yeare 1535. The King possessed himselfe of
Sauoy & Piedmont, repulsing the Emperour out
of Prouence: But peace being made for tenne
yeares, the Emperour passed thorough Fraunce,
with very great entertainment. War began in
the Low-Countries, which (after many alarmes)
was accorded in the yeare 1544. euen then when
the English won Bullen. The King deceased at

1515

The King
carried pri-
soner into
Spaine.

The Eng-
lish wonne
Bullen.

Rambouillet, hauing raigned 32. yeares, an lieth buried at S. Denis.

1547.

59 Henry the second succceeded his father Frances de Valois, in the yeare 1547. So may degenerating from the laudable vertues of his father. Hee renewed and confirmed the alliance (made by his father) with the Switzers, and tooke the fortres about Bullen on the Sea, by such furious assaultes, and ouer-much neglect in the English, that they forsooke them, and made a peace. In the yeare 1552. he made his voyage for Germanie, to maintaine the liberty of certaine Princes, who had (in y case) required his help. He brought Metz in Lorraine vnder his obedience; and (at his returne) tooke Danuilliers, Yuoy, Monmedy, and other places, with-drawing by his Enemies. He made agreement with Pope Iulius the third, deliuering Mirandola & Parma; reducing also Siennato her ancient liberty, wherof the Spaniards had bereaued her. During this time, the Emperour came and besieged Metz, where (without doing any thing) he lost a great number of his men. The k. marching into the Low-Countrys, took Mariembourg, Bouoines, and Diuant, driving his Enemy vndauntedly before him. In the yeare 1555. truce being taken with the Emperour, Phillip King of Spayne, and the King of England (which lasted but a while) & the French forces being in Italy, vnder conduct of Seigneur de Guise: the King assailed S. Quintines, and won the day, which was called S. Laurance day. In the yeare 1557. the k. hauing assembled the

S. Laurance
day at Saint
Quintines.

same

same poloer, and vnder the same Leader; tooke Callice, Guines, Hames, and the County of Oy. with the Cittie of Thionuille the yeare following. Peace being finally concluded betwene them, by meanes of marriage of Phillip King of Spaine, with Elizabeth the eldest Daughter of France, and the Prince of Piedmont, with Margaret onely Sister to King Henry: In toy of the saide marriages and peace, a Turney was celebrated in Paris, in the streete of Saint Anthony, where King Henry (running in the Lists) was smitten with the Counter-cuffe of a Launce into the head, wherof he died the tenth day of July, 1559. and in the 13. yeare of his raigne, being interred at Saint Denis.

King Henry
hurt in T
ting. & died
loose after.

60 Frances, second of that name, aged about 15. or 16. yeares olde, succceeded his father, in Anno. 1559. In the life time of his father, hee married Madame Mary Stuart Daughter to the King of Scots: And the 15. day of September, he was sacced at Rheimes, by the Cardinall of Lorraine, Arch-Bishop of the said place. Thence hee accompanied Madame the Dutchesse of Lorrain his Sister, so far as Barleduc, and with-drawing thence to Amboise, thither came diuers men in armes (whercon it was called the tumult of Amboise) who saide; that they would present requests to the King, concerning the gouernment, and matter of Religion: But because they came in Armes, some of them were executed, and the rest appeased by the Kings Edict. The King, after a Councell holden at Fontainebleau;

1559

The tumult
of Amboise

C c 4

appoin

appointing an assembly of the States, to heare the greivances of his people, and distrusting some intended mutiny: he went to the Citty of Orleans in Armes, where being desirous to proceede in his purpose, hee fell sicke of a Catarrhe, which happened in one of his eares, whereof hee dyed the fift day of December, 1560. and lieth buried at S. Denis.

1560

Anthony of
Bourbon
Lieutenant
Generall.

61 Charles, ninth of that name, succeeded his Brother Fraunces, in the yeare, 1560. And because he was but eleaue yeares olde, the Kingdomes affayres were governed by the Queen his Mother: Anthonie of Bourbon, and king of Navarre, being made Lieutenant generall, which was to the great contentment of all the States then assembled at Orleance. The raigne of this King was trauessed with many ciuill dissensions, about the matter of Religion: whereon ensued the assembly of Poissi, the Edict of January, the death of the Duke de Guise, slaine at y^e siege of Orleance by Poltrot. Then followed the Voyage of Bayonne, the battels of Dreux, S. Denis, Iarnac, and Montcontour, with other Edicts of pacification: And the marriage of Henrie of Bourbon, with Margaret de Valois, whereat happened that most bloody and lamentable massacre. Then the siege of Sancerre, and that of Rochelle, with the retraite of the Prince of Conde in Germany: And lastly, the death of the King, (without any childe) being euen ouer-wearied with such numberlesse disturbances. The King died the 30. day of May, 1574. at Chasteau de Vinciennes

The bloody
massacre at
Paris.

Vinciennes lez Paris. But before his death, hee left the Queene his Mother Regent, vntill his Brother (who was then King of Poland) were returned to France; and he lieth buried at Saint Denis.

1574

62 Henry, third of that name, being returned from Poland (to the no little griefe of that Nation, so to part with their King) vppon the thyrdd day of February, 1575. if being the verie same day in Lent, whereon he had bin formerly crowned King of Poland in the Citty of Cracouia, was likewise Sacred and Crowned at Rheimes by the reuerent Cardinall of Guise. The 15. day following of the same month, was he married to Madame Loyse, Daughter to my Lord the Earle of Vaudemont, of the ancient and noble house of Lorraine. His raigne was diuersly agitated with partialities in Religion, which passed vnder pretext (in faction formed against the State) and coloured with the name of an holy league or Union, against which, he combatted with difficultes and no lesse diversity of exploits on either side. Under his gouernement was the ouerthrowe of the Rutter Army: the battel of Coutras, the Estates of Blois, and almost the whole reuolt of France. The Reconciliation of two Kings, which so pressed the factions and rebellious: that they had no other recourse, but to a most execrable parricide, which was committed on the Kings person at S. Clou, by Iacques Clement a Iacobine Monke, the first day of August. 1589.

The holy
League or
Union.

The King
murdered
by a Iacobine
Frier.

And

And so ended (in him) the race of that
Royall branch of Valois.

63

1589.



Henry the fourth, being formerly
King of Navar, by right of suc-
cession came to be K. of France
also, being issued in direct ligne
from Robert Earl of Clermont
in Beaunois, and the last Son
of S. Lewes. The beginning of his raigne was
very Thony, marked with very signale actions
in his progresse, the most memorabile whereof,
(for breuities sake) by a person of great honoz and
repute, were noted in these four liues.

Arques, Turi, Dijon still shall beare the markes,
Of honor right and courage in that king,
To whom the strangers pride stands trembling,
To heare the fights of *Dijon, Turi, Arques*.

Here, the life, fame, and due merit of that great
King, would giue mee way into a large felde of
ample discourse, did not my purposed breuitie
make imbarment. Therefore, with the verie
wordes of a woorthy and learned Gentleman, I
will conclude, and summe vp this Man of men,
this Prince-like Souldiour, and Souldiour-
like Prince: whose Royall face was white with
Time, watchinges, and experience, and the
Lainzelles which did beguirt his venerable head,
and tooke their roote in his Caske, were gather-
ed

red in the grounds of thre pitched fieldes, thirtie
fue encounters of Armies, one hundred and for-
ty Combats, and thre hundred severall seditious
of places, in all which, his person stroue (if it
were possible) to haue got the start of his cozage.
That the sacred person of so great a King, should
be vndone by the hand of an unholy villaine, and
his owne bassaille: that a Prince of the Sworde,
should be butchered with a knife. That he, who
had returned victoriously aliue, from the heade of
so manie Armies (where death kept his open
Shambles) should bee robbed of his life, by the
hand of onely one, and in the peacefull streets of
Paris, which were as yet euen warme with the
glozie of his Quenes Coronation, perforced
but the day before: As such a villanie, as exceeds
(if it were possible) the iust merit of damnation,
and that two Kings of one Kingdome, shoulde
one after the other be so shamefully murdred, the
one by a Iacobine frier, the other sometimes of
the Feliant Order, is such an indelible blot on
the brow of Fraunce, as the vtmost date of time
can neuer wipe off, nor any Penne sufficient-
lie expresse, the sorrowe sitting & Theame so un-
pleasing.

Jacques
Clement.Francis Ra-
uiliart.

64 Lewes, the thirtseenth of that same, el-
best Sonne to King Henry the fourth, and Ma-
ria de Medices his Quene, being then scarcely
tenne yeares olde, succeeded his Father, in the
Kingdomes Dignitie, but the Quene his
Mother was proclaimed Regent. May hee
long liue, heire vnto his Fathers fame and
Heroicall

1610.

Heroicall vertues, but, defended (by the hand of heauen) from his fate and hard fortune, as all Christian Princes else (I pray to God) may be likewise preserved.

A Briefe Chronologicall Suruay, concerning the Netherlands, deuided into 17. prouinces: with a Breuiate of the Earles and Princes there reigning, from Thierrie (who was the first Earle of Holland and Zeland) to this instant time.



* A people neere to the Scythians.

Batavia is Holland.

Concerning the Originall of the people inhabiting these countries, we finde, that two Brethren, sons to the King of * Cathes, the one being named Battus, or Batton, & the other Zelandus, were the first fathers of them, and that (from them) they deriued theyr names. For these two Princes, being too extremely pursued by the hatred of a Stepmother, & no way pittied or supported by the King their father (escaping many traines and machinations, of poisoning, murdering, and diuers other dangers by her daily deuised, & put in practise against them) were forced to forsake their native abiding & flie to an Island within the Rhine: where Battus determining to make his stay, called it Battavia after his owne name, & that is, in plainer vnderstanding, Holland. Zelandus, not liking to liue so neere, or with his Brother (least pursute should surprize them both, & reuenge there fasten, which

in more desperate place they had arrived) he traualled on to the uttermost confines of the Rhine, and liking there to set down his rest, imitated his Brothers example (in styling the Country) and called it Zeland. Concerning their building of Citties, Townes, Castles, and Fortes, which afterward came to be ruined and defaced againe, by wars with the Romans, Saxons, Gauls, Danes, &c. or to what order of life the people disposed themselves, and thorough how many and infinite encumbrances (from their originall) they passed for no meane stoe of years together: these are matters merely exempt from our intended breuitie, and may more amply be seen in *h* history at large, whereunto I referre any such desirous Reader, and borrowing fauour for so large a leape, I instantly proceede to the yeare, 863. when Holland first became to be an Earledome.

In the yeare before mentioned, Charles the Bald, King of France, at Bladell, in the Prouince of Campeigne, hauing there (in his company) a general assembly of his Princes and Barons, for consultation of many important matters: pleased to aduance the two Sons of Count Haghen (who was Vncle to the King) for their great desertinges, and for the farther encouragement of the like vertuous minded Gentlemen. Walger, who was the eldest Sonne, hee made Earle of Teysterbaudt; and Thierrie, the youngest Sonne, or Theodor, as some tearme him, being formerly called Thierrie of Aquitaine, hee made Earle of Holland.

This

Zeland named by Zelandus.

863

The two Sonnes of Counte Haghen.

This gift of the Kings, especially that to Thierry, was much withstood by the Frizelanders, as scoorning to be commanded by any new Lord or Ruler: wherefore they consulted with the Hollanders, and a plot was layde to expell this newe Earle. But it proued to no effect, for the King comming thither (in person) with a powerfull army, made such an example on the King-leaders in this Rebellion, that the rest (in great humility) submitted themselves, casting their weapons not onely at the Kinges feet, but likewise at the Earles, and (vpon pardon) they bowed theyr continuall bounden dutie to Thierric. His authority was then further strengthened, in the yeare 868. by the Letters Patents of King Charles, as also by them of Lewes, King of Germany, confirming him to be Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lord of Frizeland. This Thierric married Genna, or Ienna, Daughter to Pepin the Bald, King of Italy, Sonne to the Emperour Charlemaigne. He woorthily foiled the Danes, that then possessed the Towne of Vtrecht, the Wiltes and the Slaues, disabling them from any further footing in Holland, which made them presume to meddle in Zeland, but thence they were repulled likewise. By which meanes he remained afterward in peace, beautifying his Countries, both wyth fayre buildings and good Lawes. Hes dyed verie old, hauing reigned forty yeares, and after him succeeded

Thierry
Earle of Hol-
land, Zeland
and Lord of
Frizeland.

2 Thierric his Sonne, second of that name, Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lord of Frizeland,

land, who married with Hildegard, Daughter to King Lewes of France, the Stammerer, and Sister to King Charles the Simple. The Frizelanders did twice revolt from their obedience, and would not allow Earle Thierric to be their Lord, but slew very many of them that obeyed y^e Earle, wasting, spoiling, and burning all the way as they went. But at length, they were iustly repayed for their insolency, and such a slaughter was made of the Frysons (without any merrie) that few or none of them returned home to their dwellings. Afterward, he forced them to make the doores of entrance into their houses, so low and narrow, that they must stoop very lowe before they could get in, and this he did, to make them y^e more humble and seruile, receiuing a new Oath of allegiance of them. And hauing reigned about fiftie yeares, being then aged 88. yeares olde, he dyed, leaving two Sonnes behinde him, the eldest whereof (being named Egbert) became Arch-Bishop of Treues, and Arnold his yongest Sonne succeeded him.

The Frize-
landers re-
bell againe.

3 Arnolde, or (as others will haue it) Arnulph, yongest Sonne to Earle Thierric, followed in rule as his fathers Successour: But hee helde the Earledomes of Holland, Zeland, and Lordshippe of Frizeland, no longer of the Crowne of France, but of Otho the third, Emperour, and so became in fee to the Emperour. A verie fearful Comet appeared in his time, with strange Eclipses both of the Sunne and Moone, being as

A dreadfull
Comet, Ec-
clipses and
earthquakes

as red as blood, and terrible Earth-quakes: a fire also fell from Heauen, in similitude like an hyge Tower, burning for a long time: after which ensued so violent a Pestilence, that the living dyed burying the dead. The Frizons reuolting againe from obedience, made all his raigne a continuall warfare, and the Armies (on eyther side) meeting nere vnto Winckell, so dreadfull a battaile was fought betwene them; that the Hollanders sustained the worst, Count Arnolde being there slaine, and a great number of his cheefest nobility. This battaile was fought the eighteenth of October, the morrow after Saint Lamberts day, in the yeare 993. So this Earle Arnolde, hauing raigned fife yeares, and being thus vnfortunatly slaine, was buryed by his Father and Grand-father, in the Abbie of Eginont.

4 Thierrie, third of that name, and Sonne to Counte Arnolde, succeeded as fourth Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lord of Frizeland. Being desirous to reuenge his Fathers death vpon the Frizons: hee was much impeached therein by Adelbold, Bishoppe of Virecht, against whom (neuerthelasse) he preuailed in two foughten battailes, in the year 1018. and (with great slaughter of the Fryzons) brought them vnder obedience to his youngest Sonne Floris, whom hee made Lord of them. This Earle Thierrie, liuing afterward in very peacefull daies, vnderooke a Pilgrimage to Ierusalem, with the Lord of Arc-kell his loyall Subiect; who died at Hierusalem, and was there very honourably buried by Thierrie.

Adelbold
Bishop of
Virecht,

rie. After whose returne home, and some yeares passed in peace with his Wife and Children, hauing raigned 46. yeares, he died in Anno 1039. and was buried by his Fathers in the Abbay of Egmont.

5 Thierrie, fourth of that name, was the fifth Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lord of Frizeland, after the decease of Thierrie his Father. In a Tourney of Princes and Lords, performed (for pleasure) in the Cittie of Liege, it was this Earles hard hap, to kill a Brother of the Bishops of Cullen and Liege: whereby ensued such disorders and molestation, that, after many aduentures of reuenge, vnder-taken by the Germaine Gentlemen, albeit, therein they sustained much losse of men, the Earle was shot into the Thigh with a poisoned Dart, of which wound hee dyed the fiftenth of May 1048. after he had gouerned nine yeares, and was buryed by his Fathers, in the Abbay of Eginont. He was neuer married, and therefore left not any Childe to succede him.

6 Floris, who (as you haue heard before) was Earle of Frizeland, now after his Brothers death, became the first Earle of Holland and Zeland. The former mishap at Liege, could not as yet be forgotten by the Bishops of Cullen and Liege; but they would needes prosecute fresh reuenge vpon Count Floris, who being a man of vndaunted spirit, defeated his Enemies in two seuerall attempts. Once by a cunning Stratagem, causing Ditches and Ditch-fals to be made in South Holland, and couering them with Straw and grasse,

The Bi-
shops of
Cullen and
Liege.

Two milli-
rary Strata-
gms.

Ed

so

so that they could not be easily discerned. At this time, a bloody battaile beeing fought betweene them, there was forty thousand of the Carles enemies slaine, beside twenty five thousand more, who were drowned and smothered in those Ditches. An. Dom. 1058. The second foile of his aduersaries, happened foure yeares after this, when the Hollanders (putting the Germans to flight) returned with rich spoiles and great store of Prisoners, this was in the yeare 1062. yet was it this Carles ill fortune, to be afterward slaine unarmed, as he sate vnder an Elme, taking the aire, his enemies preuailing by this aduantage. Hee had ruled in Holland 14. yeares, and in Frizeland 21. and lieth buried at Eginont.

1063.
Robert the
Frizon.

7, 8. Gertrude, widow to Carl Floris, in regard that Thierrie her son was in his nonage, gouerned those Countries in his right. And in the year 1063, she remarried with Robert the Frizon (son to Baldwin of Lisle de Buck, Carle of Flanders) with the good lyking of all the States and Nobility. Hee also was made Guardian of young Carle Thierrie, and (had this Gertrude) three Sonnes, Robert, sur-named the young (who went with Godfrey of Bullen to the holy Land, and was (after his father decease) Carle of Flanders;) Phillip, father to William of Ixt, & Baldwin Bishop of Teroanne; beside three daughters also, which he had by the saide Gertrude. This Robert was called the Frizon, not in regard of his birth, but of his big stature, strength and courage, so; hauing preuailed against the Frizons, and

and hearing of his Brothers death, Baldwine de Mons, Carle of Flanders; hee laide claime to the saide Carle doine, and (notwithstanding the opposition of Richild Widow to Carle Baldwin: by meanes of the Flemings, hee ouerthrew the King of France in a battaile, and thee with her Sonne Baldwine, remaining satisfied with the County of Henault, Robert became quietly Carl of Flanders. For eight yeares space, he carryed himselfe with great wisdom and valour, and dying in the yeare 1077. was buried in the Cannons Church, founded by himselfe at Cassel. Gertrudes time of rule by her selfe, and Roberts after, are reckoned as two seuerall gouernments.

Robert Earl
of Flanders

1077.

9 Godfrey, sir-named the Crooke-backed Duke of Lorraine, in this time of young Carle Thierries minority, was made an instrument (in regard of the former quarrell of Count Floris, and the Bishops of Cullen and Liege, as yet not reconcued to their minds) to suggest a false information to Henry the fourth, Emperour, whereby the sayde Godfrey became an Usurper of the young Carles right, for the space of foure yeares. But, as he was sitting on the draught to ease his body, a Seruant of young Count Thierries, did thrust a Jaueling vp into his fundament, whereof he died (not long after) at Maestrecht.

The Crook
backt duke
of Lorraine

10 Thierry, sist of that name, who (by Crooke-backed Godfrey, and other strange oppositions) had long time bin debarred from quiet possession of his right; at length, by an absolute conquest

Do 2

of

The Frizons conquered in two battels.

390

A brieft Chronicle

of the Frizons, in two severall great battades, reconered all, and returned home as a Conquerour. Afterward, he married Whithilde, daughter to Frederick, Duke of Saxonie, by whom hee had a Son and a Daughter: Floris, that succeeded him, and Mathild, married to the Duke of Orleans. Earle Thierrie having governed sixteen yeares, dyed, and was buried in the Abbey of Egmont.

1119

11 Floris, second of that name, and succeeded the fat of Grosse, succeeded next after his father Thierrie: he greatly favoured men of the Church, whereby the Abby of Egmonts renenewes were largely encreased. He being a man of very peacefull inclination, little or no disturbances happened in his time: but onely by the Frizons, who, for their rebelling, were severely punished, and forced to submit themselves to his mercy. This Floris married Petronilla, or Parnell, Daughter to Didier, Duke of Saxony, and Sister to Lotharius the Emperour: By her he had three Sonnes; Thierrie, Floris, called the Blacke Prince of Kennemerlande; and Symon, also one Daughter, named Hadewick, who was Countesse of Gueldres. Having governed his Countries very honourably, for the space of thirty one yeares; He died in Anno. 1133. and lieth buried in the Abby of Egmont.

Dider duke of Saxony.

1133

12 Thierrie, first of that name, succeeded his father Floris, and was much mollested by the Frizons, in regard, that his Brother Floris the Blacke Prince, envying the happinesse & quiet Thier-

Of the Successe of Times. 391

Thierrie, went and toke part with them against him; untill such time as the Emperour Lotharius (being their Uncle) had reconciled them, and made them friends. Conrade being joynd as competitor in the Empire, with Lotharius, caused a fresh quarrell between Thierrie and the Bishop of Vrecht, he ratifying the former grant of Henry, which caused very long contention, and much blood to be shed on either side. Thierrie having governed his countries of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland 40. yeares, died in An. 1163. and lieth buried in the Abbey of Egmont.

Lotharius & Conrade Emperors.

13 Floris the third, eldest Son of Earle Thierrie, as Heire to his father, inherited his right in Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland. The Frizons (pretending their former freedoms and imperial liberties) made still their revoltes from time to time, emboldened thereto by the often suggestions of Godfrey of Rhemen, Bishop of Vrecht, who as his predecessors had done before him, still questioned the Earldomes of Ostergo & Westergoe in Frizeland: but the Emperour Frederick went himselfe in person, & made an agreement in writing betwene them. Al which notwithstanding, much hurt was doone on either side, as time and treachery fitted them with apt opportunity. A great controuersie hapned between the Carles of Holland & Flanders, for the Isle of Walchren, and Count Floris (in triall of fight) became Prisoner to the Earle of Flanders: who neuertheless used him princely, and they being accorded by the Archbishop of Cullen, and the Bishoppe of Liege; the

1163

Earldomes of Ostergo & Westergoe.

1163

Ed 3

great

The Dam
or Sluce,
called dogs
Sluce.

great hole nere to the Dam or Sluce, was reco-
uered with much adoe, by casting a Dogge. fish
thereinto, & speedy filling it up with earth, where-
on they named it Hondidam, that is, Dogs-sluc.
This Earle Floris, assisting the Emperoꝝ Frede-
rick, Phillip King of France, Richard II. of Eng-
land, with many other Dukes, Christian Prin-
ces & Carles, at the siege of Damietta in Soria; fel
there sick in the Army, and died in the year 1208
having governed his Prouinces 27. yeares.

1208.

L. William
of Holland.

14 Thierrie the seauenth, hearing of his Fa-
thers death in Palestine; succeeded as his heire in
all his Carledomes. The whole time of his regi-
ment, was in warre and continual conbussions.
First by his Brother Lord William of Holland,
(who was with his Father Floris in Palestine, &
performed there many honourable seruices) tho-
row diuers disagreements y^e happened betwene
them, notwithstanding as many labored reconci-
lings, and pacifications. Next, Baldwin Earle of
Flanders, he was as molestuous to him likewise,
for the Isle of Walchien: besides the Frizons re-
bellions, and his trouble with the Bishops of Co-
logne and Liege, as also his imprisonment to the
Duke of Brabant, and then the intrusion of the
Bishop of Vtrecht, after which, ensued a peace &
vnited ainity on all sides. This Count Thierrie
had no heirs male, but two beautifull daughters;
Adella, married to Henry of Gueldres, who died
without any Children; and Ada, meanely mar-
ried by her Mother, (after her Fathers death) to
Count Lewes of Loos; that so the gouernment
might

1198.

might be disposed at her pleasure. In y^e year 1203
Earle Thierrie died, hauing gouerned his Coun-
tries 1.3 yeares, and lieth buried in the Abbay of
Egmont.

15 Ada, daughter to Earle Thierrie, was Coun-
tesse of Holland & Zeland, after her fathers death;
which moued a great hart burning in the Lordes
& Gentlemen, that they should liue vnder a Wo-
man, and a poore Carls command. Therefore they
sent into Frizeland for Count William, prote-
cting to assist him in attaining the gouernment
of Holland. The young Countesse Ada was sur-
prised in their first attempt, and her husband the
Earle of Loos driuen to flight; who yet won the
Bishop of Vtrecht (by Money and other promi-
ses) to aide him, and by this meanes he had some
small successe for a while. But the Countesse
Ada dying without any Children, Earle Willi-
am was then the true and onely Heire to Hol-
land and Zeland, in which right of his, he went
with his power against the Earle of Loos, and
such was his successe, that the Women did beat
his Enemies with Distaffes and Stones, they
beeing glad to cast away their Armour for light-
nesse, to saue themselves by flight: yet many
were drowned in the Ditches, and a great num-
ber taken Prisoners, with all the Earle of Loos
Tentes, Pauillions, Plate, Jewels, and Pro-
uision, which Count William roally deuided
among his Hollanders, remaining absolute
Prince of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland.

The go-
uernment of
a Woman
despised.

Women
beat Men
with Di-
staves and
stones.

16 William, first of that Name, succeeded
right.

1218.

Edmund of
Lancaster,
son to the
K. of Eng-
land.

The won-
derful birth
of 365.
Children.

rightfully in all his Carledomes, by the death of his fæce the young Countesse Ada. Hee had some strife with Didier Bysshop of Vtrecht, and Gerard Vander Are his Brother: but (vpon certaine Articles) al displeasures were qualified. By his first wife Alix, daughter to the Earle of Guel-dres, he had Floris, that next succeeded him, Otho bishop of Vtrecht, William, Lieutenant of Hol-land, and two Daughters, the one was Abbess at Rhynsbourg, and the other at Delfte. His se- cond wife was named Mary. Daughter to Ed- mund of Lancaster, son to Henry the third, K. of England, by whom he had no issue. He gouerned 19. yeares, & dying, lieth buried at Rhynsbourg. 17 Floris the fourth, succeeded his ffather Count William in his Carledomes. Hee toke great re- light in Juffs and Turnaments, and the Earle of Clermont proclaiming a publicke Triumph for all comers (at the Countesse his Wiues request who greatly desired to see this Floris, of whom she had heard much fame and commendation) this honourable Earle of Holland, Zeland, &c. was there treacherously slaine, onely thorough the ieal- ous suspition of the olde Earle of Clermont, who was there likewise presently slaine himself, and the Countes (griening for this great mishap) dyed sone after. This Count Floris hadde a Daughter, named Mathilde, or Margaret, as some call her, who was married to Count Her- man of Henneberg; She despising a poore Wid- dow, that desired her almes vpon vrgent necessi- ty, holding in either arme a swete young childe, both

both which, God hath sent her at one birth, gaue her very rep roachfull words beside, as, that shee could not be honest of her bodie, and (by her hus- band) haue two children lawfully begotten. The poore Woman, griening to be retracted in such ex- treame want and neede, but much more, to heare her reputation so nereely touched, knowing her soule cleare from all dishonest detection, made no further suite to the Lady, but (falling vpon her knees) appealed to God for defence of her Inno- cency, and earnestly desired, that as shee had con- ceived, & borne those two infants lawfully by her husband, euen so, if euer that Lady should be sub- iect to the custome of women, that it would please him, to send hir as many children at one birth, as there were daies in the yeare. Not long after, the Lady conceived with child by her husband, & (for hir deliuerance) went into Holland, to visit her brother, taking vp lodging in the Abbey of re- ligious women at Losdunen, and grew so excee- ding great, as the like had neuer before bin seene. When her time came, on y Friday before Palm- sunday, in the yeare 1276. shee was deliuered of 365. children, the one halfe being sons, and the other daughters: but the odde child was an Her- maphrodite, and they were all wel shaped & pro- portioned in their little members. These children were laid in two Bassins, and were all baptized by Guydon, Suffragan to the Bish. of Vrecht, who named al the sonnes John, and the Daugh- ters Elizabeth, but what name he gaue the Her- maphrodite, is not recorde. They were no soner bap-

This Histo-
ry is auou-
ched for a
truth by di-
uers good
Authors.

baptized, but they all died, and the other also. The two Basins are yet to be seene in the sayde Church of Losdunen, and a memozy of them, both in Latine & Dutch. The Latine beginning thus. Margareta, Comitiss Hennebergia vxor, & Florentij Hollandia & Zelandia filia, &c.

Underneath are these verses :

En tibi innotosum & memorabile factum,
Quale nec à mundi conditione datum.

This Count Floris, being so treacherously slaine, as you haue heard before, had his body brought backe into Holland, by the Earle of Cleues, and other Noble Lords, who buried it in the Abbey of Rhynsbourg; hee hauing honozably and vertuously gouerned his Countreies 12. yeares. He left but one Son named William, six yeares old, who was in the tutelage of his Uncle Otho, bishop of Vtrecht, during his minority.

18 William, second of that name, succeeded his father Floris in all his dominions, being at y time of his vnder yeares, in the gouernment of Otho Bishop of Vtrecht his Uncle, who was a verie worthy and carefull Guardian to him. The pope hauing deposed Frederick the second, & Conrade his sonne from the Empire: the princes Electors (in despight of the Pope) made this Earle William King of the Romaines, and crowned him at

Earle William
king of
the Romans

Aix la Chapelle, he hauing then attained to the age of 20. yeares. A long and tedious trouble happened, betwene him, and Margariet Countesse of Flanders, a very high minded and proude woman, for the Countrey of Walchren, wherein,

after

after a great foyle and slaughter the Flemings, (taking part with hir) & imploied the aid of Charles Duke of Aniou, against king William, and sped thereby no better then shee had done before, but was glad in the end to seeke reconcilment. This k. William did build the Pallace of the Carles of Holland, in the village of La Hage, or the Hague where it is at this day, & a goodly Cloister at Harlem. At his wars in West Frizeland, where he preuailed very successfullly, he wold needs, without any other assistance then himself, follow y rebels ouer the Ice, where his horse slipping in, him selfe almost drowned, & none near to help him, but enemies of the Frizons, y lay secretly in ambush: K. William they beat him down with clubs & stauies, not knowing that it was the king, & so they slew him. But when afterward they took better notice of him, by his Target & Armes theron emblazoned, in very hartly sorrow for their foule deed, they buried him secretly, in a poore house in the village of Hookwonde, thinking so to wipe out all remembrance of him. But his body was after found, and buried in the Abby of Middlebourg, in the Isle of walchre.

19 Floris the first, son to king William, who was slaine so inhumanely, albeit hee was but six moneths old, yet he succeeded his father, his Uncle Floris being his Gouvernor and Tutor. At 17. yeares of age, he went with an army against the ever-reuolting Frizons, and ouercame them at a village called Schellinckhout, very severely reuenging his fathers death on them, & (by building

four

1190

four Castles in England) brought them wholly vnder his obedience. Afterward, Counte Floris made a voyage into England, where a marriage was contracted, betweene Iohn, eldest Sonne to Earle Floris, and Elizabeth, Daughter to King Edward the first, Iohn being (not long after) sent into England, to accomplish the saide marriage, where he remained in the Court of England, till his Fathers vnfortunate death, which briefly was thus.

The History of the death of Earle Floris

A knight lined in the Earles Courte, named Gerard Van Velson, who had bin a whole years space detained in prison, and his Brother beheaded, through certaine false suggestions whispered to the Earle, which (afterward) appearing to be a meere iniurie, the Earle sought to repaire this wrong, with verie especiall fauours doone to the knight, great aduancements, and would haue bestowed also his Concubine in mariage on him. Which Gerard disdainning, and replying, that he would not weare his cast shoes: the Earle rashly answered, that he should take his leanings, in despite of his heart. To prevent marriage with the Earles Minion, the knight bestowed his affections else where, and wedded a Lady of great hono^r and beauty. Which when the Earle vnderstood, he pursued his former rash folly, to the price of his owne life. Sending Gerard on an employment of much credit and respect, and where with he was not a little pleased, not doubting any such wicked intention. The Earle came vnto Gerardes house, vnder colour of hospitality, and there (win-

ning her to priuat conference in her bed chamber) forcibly deflowered her, to performe his rash promise to her husband. At Gerards return, and this foule wrong discovered, it was pursued with verie bloody reuenge, by a resolved conspiracy sworn against his life: which albeit he had some warning of (by a paper deliuered him by a po^r woman) yet his disa^ster being inenitable, a train was laid fo^r him as he rode a hauking, and xxi. wounds he receiued on his body, by the hand of the saide Gerard. But he and the rest of the conspirators escaped not unpunished, fo^r they had their heads smitten off, and were then laide vpon wheeles: but Gerard was put (stard naked) into a pipe stuck full of sharpe nailes, and was so roled by and downe through all the streets of Leyden. Then was he beheaded, and laide on a wheale, and all his kindred to the ninth degree, put to death, and laide vpon wheeles.

A severe reuenge for the Earles death.

20 After the wicked murder of Earle Floris the first, committed by the Fryzons, as hath been declared, Iohn his onely son (being then in England with King Edward his Father in law) was next to succede him as his rightful heire. But before he could leaue England, some partialities & factions happened in Holland fo^r the gouernement, which some were qualified at Earle Iohns being there present, notwithstanding the subtle policie of Wolfart of Borssele, seizing the person of Earle Iohn, and Ladie Elizabeth his wife, thinking to haue the gouernement of the sayde Earle, because as yet hee was but young. Earle

1197

Wolfart of Borssele his secret intention.

Iohn

1300

The end of
the race of
the Dukes
of Aquitaine
and succe-
sion of the
Earles of
Henault.

John preuailed against the Frizons, and the By-
shop of Vtrecht, and hauing gouerned his coun-
tries about foure yeares, hee fell sicke at Harlem,
and there died. He was the first of al the Earls of
Holland, that died without children: wherfoze in
him failed the line masculine of the Earles from
the Dukes of Aquitaine, which from Thierrie, oz
Theodor, the first Earl of Holland, had continu-
ed 437. yeares. He was buried in the Abbey of
Rhynsbourg, his widdow Lady Elizabeth being
carried back into England, where she was after-
ward married to the Earle of Oxford: So that by
the death of Earl John in this maner, those coun-
tries were deuolued to the earls of Henault, issu-
ing by the mothers side fro the Earls of Holland.

1301.

21 John, second of that name, called John of He-
nault (claiming his right from Alix, sister to Wil-
liam king of the Romans) succeeded after John, as
Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland, &c. He
had a long and tedious trouble with John de Re-
ueffe, who perswaded the Emperoz, that John
Earle of Holland dying without issue, his Earle-
domes ought (in right) to returne to the Empire:
according as Charles the Bald, Emperoz of the
Romans, had at first given them in fee & homage
to Thierrie of Aquitaine. This suggestion raised
the Emperoz Albert in Armes, against John of
Henault, but the Bishop of Cullen compounded
the matter between them, and John de Reueffe
was afterward drowned, by which means, John
of Henault was rid of a turbulent enemy. John of
Henault, hauing gouerned Henault thirty yeares,
and

John de Re-
ueffe drown-
ed.

1305

and his Countries of Holland, Zeland, & Frize-
land 5. yeares, died & was buried at Valenciennes
22 VVilliam the thirde, son and heire to Count
John of Henault, succeeded his fathers earldoms:
he was commonly called The good Earle willi-
am, for his Vertues, Justice, good life, and hono-
rable actions. In his time happened so great a
dearth and famine in Holland, that poore people
died with hunger, euen in the streetes as they
went: seeking also for hearbes and rootes in the
fields and woods, there they were likewise found
dead, and in the common high wayes: little chil-
dren died sucking at their Mothers breasts, and
some were enforced to feede on their deade Chil-
dren. In this time of Famine, a poore woman
in the Towne of Leyden, being extreamly ouer-
charged with hunger, entreated her owne sister,
(being a woman of better ability) to lend hir some
Bread, which she would thankfully repay again,
when God should enable hir. She very unkindly,
& without any pittie of hir extremity, denied her
oftentimes, notwithstanding the others often be-
gings, that she was assured, shee could not bee
without bread. Whereupon, the vnnmercifull Si-
ster (lying both to God, and to her owne poore
sister) saide: If I haue any bread, I with that it
may instantly be turned into a stone: wherewith
the heauy displeasure of God laid hold vpon her
words, & going afterward to her Cupboard (to re-
lieue hir self) she found al her loaves of bread con-
uerted into apparant stones, & died her selfe with
extremity of hunger. It is crediblie saide,
that

The good
Earle willi-
am.

1316

A wonder-
full dearth.

A strange
example of
an vnnmer-
cifull Sister.

that one of two of those stones, are yet to be sene in S. Peters Church at Leyden, as a memoire of this iust iudgement of God.

A worthy
action of
Iustice, don
by this
good Earle
William.

There is also recorded another memoizable Historie, of upright Justice doone by this good Earle William, to a pooze Countrey-man, against a Bayliffe of South Holland, who hadde taken a goodly faire Cowe from him, that was the releefe of himselfe, his pooze Wife and Children, as there are some Mine in that Countrey, which doe giue twenty pottles of Milke and more, in a day. The Bayliffe, at the pooze mans complaint to this good Earle William, who lay then sick in his Bed at Valenciennes (yet neuer debarred any suters from audience, were he sick or well) was adiudged to giue the pooze man an hundred Crownes of good Gold, for the wrong he had done to him, which was accordingly performed. But for his injury to publique Justice, (being himselfe an Officer) and abusing the authority committed in trust to him, the Earle sent for an Executioner, and caused his head to be smitten off by his Beddes side. This good Count William, beeing a vertuous Prince, victorious in warre, a man learned, wise, well spoken, and iudicious, a great friend to peace, gracious to all men, & beloued in all Princes courts, hauing governed his Prouinces 32. yeares, died the 9. of June 1337. and was buried with great pomp at Valenciennes.

1337

23 William the fourth, Sonne to the good Earle William, came to his fathers Earledoms by

by lawfull succession. He was a man of high merit, and a most famous Souldier, whereof hee made good pfose; first against the Sarrazins and Moores, in the Kingdome of Granada; Next, with the Emperour Lewes, and many Noble Carles, ayding his brother in law Edward the 3. King of England, against the King of Fraunce; Thertly, in ouer-running all Lithuania, Liouania, and warring against the Russian Infidels, lading home his men with victory and wealthie spoiles; And lastly, in preuailing against the Frizons, and Robert of Arckell Gouvernour of Vtrecht. Yet it was his hard hap to bee slaine unknowne (among the Frizons) before any coulde haue power to help him: so that he left no lawfull Child to succede him, and therefore his Sister, (being Emperesse) remained his onely Heire.

24 Margaret, Wife to Lewes of Bauaria, (then Emperour) and eldest Sister to Carl William, slaine (as you haue heard) by the Frizons, by the Emperours interposition of his authority, and her owne patient right, went downe by the Rhine into Holland, accompanied with a most princely and well becoming traine, and was acknowledged to be Lady and Princess of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland. But before her returne backe to the Emperour againe, shee constituted both his and her eldest sonne (named William of Bauaria) to be her Regent there in those Countries, for a summe of Money yearly paid to her; but remaining unpaid, she might resume all her rights to her selfe againe. The Emperour

Cc

decea

Earle William
a worthy
souldier
1318

1342

Robert of
Arckell, go-
uernour of
Vtrecht.
1346

Margaret
the Em-
peresse Prin-
cesse of
Holland.

The factions
of Cabillaux
and Hoecks.

1351.

A great ef-
fusion of
blood.

Mathilda,
daughter to
Henry duke
of Lancaster

deceasing, the Emperesse Margaret came thither againe, and had resignation (from her son William) of all the foresaid Countries, respying himselfe into Henault, as being well contented there to liue: till by intestine discord, & dangerous practices of two intruded factions, called Cabillaux and Hoecks (inherein both Nobles and Gentlemen did too far enter) the Mothers government did grow insufferable, and Duke William was recovered from Henault, to vndergoe the Sole authority. Two very bloody battailes were fought betwixen the Emperesse and her son; and in the first, Carl William escaped with great difficulty, and fledde into Holland, for this battaile was fought at La Vere in Zeland. But in the second, there was so much blood spilt, that (for thre daies after) the old Riuer of Menfe (at full Sea) was (all ouer) red in that place. The Emperesse (by helpe of a small Barke) escaped into England, and, vpon an agreement afterward made betwixen them; Duke VVilliam had the quiet possession of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland assigned him, and the Emperesse Margaret had the County of Henault, where (fue yeares after) she ended her daies, and licthly buried at Valenciennes.

25 Duke William being peaceably possessed of his Seigneries, according to the former composition, being also Duke of Bauaria, Palatine of Rhine, and Earle of Henault by his Mothers death, tooke to wife the Lady Mathilda, daughter to Henry Duke of Lancaster in England, by

by whō he had not any children. Much strife, war, and bloodis bickering, happened betwixen him and the Byschoppe of Vtrecht, with shrewd disadvantages on cyther side; till, by the meanes of some poble men, they were reduced to amity. This Duke VVilliam (by what occasion it could neuer bee knowne) fell distracted of his senses, and slew a knight with a blow of his fist: so that hee was shut vpp (vnder good Guard) for nineteene yeares space, euen till he dyed. Hauiug gouerned his prouinces of Holland, Zeland, and Frizeland (before his madnesse) seatiē yeares, and Henault two.

26 Albert of Bauaria, Brother to Duke William, in the time of his distraction, was sent for from Bauaria, and made Gouvernour of his Mothers Countries, in hope of his recovery, which by no meanes could be compassed. Hee banquished the Frizons in many rebellions, tooke the Towne of Delft, and beheaded the Baron of Eughien, vpon sinister informations, which caused great trouble betwixen him, and the brethren of the said Baron: but, vpon their reconciliation, Count Albert builded the Channory of the Chappell, at the Court of the Hage.

In his time, a Sea Woman (by reason of great Tempestes at Sea, and extraordinarie high tides) was seene swimming in the Zuyderzee, betwixen the Townes of Campen and Edam; which being brought to Edam, and cleansed from the Sea, posse growne about her, by her long abiding there: she was like to another wo-

1358

The Barons
of Eughien
beheaded.

1368.

A Sea Wo-
man seene
in the Zuyder-

1401

man, endured to be apparrelled. & would ~~saue~~ bin meates as others did, yet sought shee all meanes to escape, and get into the water againe, had shee not very carefully bin tended. She did learne to spin, and exercise other womanly qualities, being daily scene of infinite persons, who haue made perfect testimoniall of this rare accident, and signified it for an vndoubted truth, auouching, that she liued fiftene yeares, and lyeth there buried in the Church-yard. In the yeare 1404. this famous Prince Albert dyed, after hee had gouerned his Countries forty five yeares: nineteene as he was Tutor to his distracted Brother, and twenty seauen as Prince, Heire and Lord of those Countries, being buried at the Hage in Holland.

Phillip the
bold Duke
of Burgun
dy.

27 William, first of that name, after the death of Duke Albert of Bauaria his father, succeeded as his immediate Heire. His first Wife was Daughter to Charles the first, King of Fraunce, and shee dyed young, without any Issue. He secondly married the Daughter of Iohn, Sonne to Phillip the bold Duke of Burgundie, by whom he had one onely Daughter, named Iaqueline, or Iacoba, as the Dutch vse to call her. This Count William wasted Frizeland, spoiled Liege, and preuailed against the Gueldres, as also the Lordes (father and Sonne) of Arckell at Gorrichom, and reconciled the Duke of Burgundy to the French King. The Dolphine of France, Sonne to King Charles the first, married Iaqueline, Count Williams Daughter; but he

1417

he being poysoned, by putting on a shirt of maile, died without Issue: As Earle William himselfe did not long after, being bitten in the Legge by a mad Dogge, which hurt could neuer bee cured. So that Lady Iaqueline (his Daughter, and widow to the Dolphine of Fraunce) was his true Heire in all his Seigneuries: He gouerned thirtene yeares, and lieth buried at Valenciennes in Henault.

28 Iaqueline, or Iacoba. Daughter and Sole-heire to William of Bauaria, succeeded her father in all his Earldomes and Seigneuries, being then Widow to the Dolphine of France, and yet but 19. yeares of age. In regard of her youth and widow-hood, she endured much molestation in her gouernment, chiefly in Holland: for the two factions tooke head againe, and banished their boldnesse on both sides, the Hoeckins, fauouring the Countesses faction, and the Cabillantines her Enemies, by which meanes her rule was greatly disturbed. For Iohn of Bauaria (forsaking his Bishoppricke of Liege) sought to make himselfe an Earle, and marry his Niece Iaqueline (utterly against her will) and yet to dispossesse her of her rightfull inheritance, for which purpose he leagued himselfe with the Cabillantines, and other powerfull friends, who neuertheless were slaine in their bolde aduenture at Gorrichome. And, to frustrate the Bishoppes vaine hope, the Pope dispenced her marriage, with Iohn Duke of Brabant, albeit hee was her next kinsman, whereby their Patrimoniall inheritances

Iohn of Ba-
uaria By-
shop of
Liege.

John of Ba-
varia the Bi-
shop recko-
ned the 29.
Earl of Hol-
land.

heritances were the more strengthened, and he acknowledged as their Prince, in Henault, Holland, Zeland, Frizeland, &c. It were needlesse here to relate, the following molestations of John of Bavaria the bishop, to his piece Jaqueline, taking on himselfe the title of Earle, and therefore, (by some) ranked among the Earls of Holland, or the after marriages of Lady Jaqueline; to the Duke of Gloucester, Uncle to Henry the first, King of England; the fourth and last time (in great privacy) to Frank of Borstelle, Lieutenant of Zeland, or her (no meane troubles) by the Duke of Burgundy, to whom she resigned by all her Countries: Let it suffice, that she lived in continuall verations 19. yeares, and dying at the Hage, was buried in the Chappell of the Court of Holland.

1436

The Titles
of Phillip
Duke of
Bourgogne.

The order
of the gol-
den Fleece
instituted.

30 Phillip Duke of Burgundy, being (both by father and Mother) rightfull yeire and successor to the fore-named Countesse Jaqueline; was thus entitled: Phillip Duke of Bourgogne, Brabant, and Lembourg; Earle of Flanders, Artois, Bourgogne, Henault, Holland, Zeland, and Namur; Marquesse of the holy Empire; & Lord of Frizeland, Salins and Macklyn. He had three Wives; by the two first hee had no Children, but by the last, named Isabel (daughter to John K. of Portugall) he had three sons; Anthony & Iosic, who died young, and Charles Martin, Earle of Charolois, and successor to his father. This Phillip of Bourgogn instituted the order of Knight-hood of the golden Fleece, & had much discontent with his

Don Charles, whom (at length he married to the Lady Margarer, Sister to Edward the fourth, K. of England. The Rebels of Gaunt and Bruges dearly felt the valour of this Phillip; he besieged Callis, surprized Luxemboug, subdued Liege; and overcame the Hamecons; Hee exceeded all his predecessors (Dukes of Bourgogne) in riches, Seigneuries, height of Power and State. He died the first of June 1467. having governed about forty yeares. In his time was the famous Art of printing first invented, the men of Harlem in Holland do challenge the first hono^r thereof, but it was reduced to perfection at Mentz, by one John Faustus, who had ben Seruaunt to Laurence Ianfon of Harlem, as they constantly as-
sume it.

1467.

The Art of
printing first
invented.

31 Charles, Sur-named the Warlike Duke of Bourgogne, succeeded in all his fathers Titles and Dignities. The Inhabitants of Gant resisting him, he brought them under obedience, & defeated the Liegeois in battaile, which enforced Liege to yelde to him. He made peace with the French King, who doubted to be betrayed at Peronne by Duke Charles. Upon a fresh rebellion of the Liegeois. The Duke forced king Lewes to go with him to the sieges of their town; which hee ruined, and practised the like of the House of Brederode. He warred against the Frizons; and carried many Princes in hope of his daughters marriage. The French K. and the duke sought to deceiue each other, and the Constable of S. Paul (waring hatefull to them both) they resol-

Ce 4

ned

The Earle
of Campo-
bachio.

1477

ued his ruine, and (on a truce taken for 9. years, between the King and Duke) the Constable was beheaded at Paris. The Duke warred against the Swisses, and was defeated by them, both at Granfon and Morat, wherewith the Swisses were enriched. The Duke besieged Nancie, and was there slain in battel, by the Treason of the Earle of Campobachio, an Italian: where being engirt with a great troupe of Lanciers, he received three wounds, one in the head, the second in the thigh, and the third in the fundament. He left one onlie Daughter and heire.

The Duke
of Gueldres
slaine.

32 Mary, Daughter and Heire to Duke Charles, the warlike Duke of Bourgogne, succeeded her father in al his Countreies: being but 18. yeares old when he was slaine before Nancy, wherefore shee remained under the charge of the Duke of Cleues, and his Brother the Lord of Rauestein. The French King seized Piccardie and Arthois: she happening into the Ganthois power, endured much trouble, by putting her chiefest servants and Councellers to death: the Flemings were defeated, and the young Duke of Gueldres slaine. Afterward, a marriage was concluded between Maximilian Archduke of Austria, Son to the Emperour Frederick, and the Lady Marie of Bourgogne. albeit shee would more gladly have matched with the house of France.

33 Maximilian, Archduke of Austria, and Son to the Emperour Fredericke, marrying the Princess Mary of Bourgogne, was thereby wedded to much war and trouble. For first the Guel-

Gueldres revolted from the house of Bourgogne; next, happened the battel of Guinegate, where in the Archduke was the Conquerour: Then, Turnay yielded to him, truce was taken between him and the French King, and the new tumults of the Cabillaux and Hoecks, were likewise by him pacified. Dordrecht was surprized by the young Lord of Egmont; also, many Townes in Guelders yielded to the Archduke: and (not long after) followed the death of the Archduchesse Mary; who had (the first yeare of her marriage, a Sonne, named Phillip (father to Charles the first) the second yeare a Daughter, called Margaret, betroathed in her infancy, to Charles the Dolphin of France, Sonne to King Lewes 11. and the third year, a Sonne named Frances, according to the name of Fraunces Duke of Brit-

Newe tumults of the
Cabillaux
and Hoecks

1482

Engelbert,
earl of Nassau.
lawe. 1491

34 Phillip, second of that name, being but 16. yeares old, and succeeding his father Maximilian

1494

an

The Titles
of Phillip.
Arch. Duke
o. Austria.

an, Emperour in the Netherlandes, had these Titles. Phillippe Arch. Duke of Austria, Duke of Bourgogne, Lothier, Brabant, Styria, Carinthia, Leimbouurg, Luxembourg, and Guelders; Earle of Haspourg, Flaunders, Arthois, Bourgogne, Ferrette and Kiburch; Palatine of Henault, Holland, Zeland, Namur and Zutphen: Marquesse of the Holie Emperre, and of Bourgan; Landtgraue of Elsatzen, Lorde of Windis-marke, Portenau, Salynes, and Macklyn. Upon his full possession of the Netherlandes, peace was made between him, & Charles the 8. King of France, warre happening betwixt the Arch. Duke and the Duke of Guelders, great inconueniences followed thereon: but Duke Albert beeing slaine before Groningen, the Arch. Duke inherited the realme of Spaine by his wife, being made King of Castile, and George Duke of Saxonie (being then made gouernour of the Netherlandes, for the Arch. Duke Phillip) continued the warres in Frizeland. For, upon the death of Isabell D. of Castile, Iane her daughter, being onely heire, and married to the Arch. Duke Phillip; she heere by inuested him in the Realmes of Spain, Leon, Granado, &c. as absolute King. But he enioyed that dignity not long, for in the yeare, 1506. the 27. of September, hee died (suddenly) in the City of Bourgos, suspected to be poisoned. After the death of Phillip King of Castile, the Emperour Maximilian tooke vpon him the gouernement of the Netherlandes, as Guardian vnto Charles and Ferdinand his Grand children, being

1497

1503

Iane, daughter
to Isabell
married to
the Arch.
duke Phillip

1505

1506

ing the Sons of Phillip and Iane, King & Quen of Castile.

35 Charles of Austria, second of that name, succeeded rightfully in all his fathers Landes and Seigneries, and by the Emperours appointment his daughter the Ladye Margaret (Dowager of Sauoy, and Aunt to the Princes Charles and Ferdinand) was Regent of the low countries. Afterwarde, Prince Charles took possession of the Netherlandes, and being crowned K. of Spain and Arragon, soonie after followed the death of the Emperour Maximilian, and in an assemblye at Francfort, for choise of a new Emperour, Charles King of Spaine had free election, by the name of Charles the fift. Then was Ladye Margaret, (widow both of Castile and Sauoy, and Aunt to the Emperour Charles) accepted as sole Gouvernesse of the Netherlandes, in her Sephewes absence. Troubles happened in Spaine, by reason of the Kings departure thence, and not onelie warre in Frizeland, but likewise betweene the French and Bourguignons, as also the warre of Bores or Peazants in Germany: and the Groningeois reiecting the Du. of Guelders, did yeild themselves to the Emperour: then, hapned the 2. bloody edit fro the Emp. against the Netherland protestants, & then was the imperial diet at Aulbourg, wher the protestant princes presented the confession of their faith. After followed the deuouring inundation in the Netherlandes, & the death of the Ladye dowager Margaret, whereby Mary of Austria, 2. daughter to K. Phillip, and D. Iane of Castile

1508

1515

1519

1520

Lady Margaret sole
Gouvernesse.

1526

1538. Castile, succeeded in the government of the Netherlands. Warre happened betwene the Emperour and the French king, but upon the coming of Quene Elenor of Fraunce to the Emperour her Brother, peace was concluded betwixte them.

1549. 36 While Mary of Austria governed the Netherlands, for the Emperour Charles her brother, great troubles happened to the Protestantes, by opposition of the Pope and Emperour against them. The Emperour affected the Emprye for Prince Phillip his Sonne, which bred a quarrel betwixt the Emperour, and his brother Ferdinand king of Hungary, to whome the Princes of the Empire were more enclined, then to Phillip; and then the Protestantes denied their coming to the Counsell of Trent. Phillip king of Spaine married Mary Quene of England: And not long after, the Emperour resigned the Netherlands to his Sonne king Phillip (whereby he was reckoned the 36. Earle of Holland, Zeland, &c.) and the Empire to his Brother Ferdinand, k. of the Romans and Hungary, departing out of the Netherlands, to end his daies quietly in a Monastery, not far from Placentia. He reserved 100000 Crownes yearely to himselfe, employing 4000. for his diet and maintenance, appointing the rest to young maides marriages, and the releefe of Widowes and Orphanes, he not living above two yeares after. When not onely happened his death, but likewise the deaths of the Quens Dowagers of France and Hungarie, as also of Mary

Mary Quene of England, after whom succeeded her Sister Elizabeth, in which time, Emanuell Philebert, Duke of Sauoy, and Prince of Piemont, was Gouvernour and Lieutenant General of the Netherlands, for king Phillip: till the king of Spaines marriage (being turned into tears, by the untimely death of the French king) caused Margaret of Austria, Bastard to the Emperour Charles the fift, and Dutchesse of Parma, to succede the Duke of Sauoy in the Netherlands regiment. King Phillip returned then home into Spaine, it being his last departure out of those Countries: whereon (not long after) ensued the subtle bringing of the Spanish Inquisition into the Netherlands, by the creation of new Bishops, and such was the power and priuiledge of the Inquisitors, as none were able to withstande them, in confiscation both of body and goods at their owne pleasure.

Spain, albeit the Tyrannie of the Dutchesse government in the Lowe Countries, was more then the people could well endure, yet (to putte a sharper Snaffle in their mouthes) king Phillip removed his Bastard Sister Margaret, and sent Don Ferdinando Aluares, Duke of Alua, who quickly brought the Netherlands into a most pitifull estate: making himselfe sure of Gaunt, and Count Horne and Count Egmont (abusiuely) made Prisoners: he builded the Castle of Antuerpe, where he erected his owne proud Statue, and proceeded to apprehend the prince of Orange by Commission, setting downe Articles by the

Elizabeth
Q. of Eng-
land.

1559

The Spa-
nish Inqui-
tion.

1565

1568

Spanish

1574
Wil. Prince
of Orange
The Com-
maunder of
Castile.

1575

Don Iohn
of Austria.

Spanish Inquisition (which were confirmed by the King) to ruinate the Netherlandes, vpon which, some followed the execution of the sons of Batembourg at Brussels, as also the Carls of Egmont and Horne. William of Nassau, Prince of Orange, was made Gouvernor of Holland, Zealand & Vtrecht for the States, and proued verie fortunate in many attempts against the Duke of Alua, which made him labor his repeale home into Spaine, with Don Frederick his son. Don Lewes de Requesens, the great commander of Castile, was sent to spoil the Dukes place in the Netherlandes, for the king of Spain, to whom Aluaes former behaviour serued for an example, in his proceeding, and notwithstanding his besieging of Middlebourg (nere hande to samthment) yet was his fleet defeated before his face, & the Town yeilded vnto by Collonell Mondragon, to the Prince of Orange. After many dangerous tumults, on both sides, the States sent to require succour of Elizabeth Quene of England, and some after dyed Don Lewes de Requesens at Brussels; in whose roome succeded Don Iohn of Austria (Bastard sonne to the Emperour Charles the fifth) as Gouvernor for King Phillip in the Netherlandes, all the Prouinces whereof were united at the pacification of Gand, whereupon, the Castle was yeilded vnto the States, and all the Spaniards departed out of Antwerp castle, which was also deliuered into the States handes. Don Iohn being receiued as Gouvernor, he sought occasions how to renew warre against the Prince of Orange,

Orange, and diuers discontentmentes, as also treacherous practises, being noted in Don Iohn, the States grew iealous of him, and he was proclaimed the Countries enemye. Then was the Arch-Duke Mathias called to be Gouvernor, and while the heart-burnings helde betweene Don Duke Mathias and the States, the Duke of Aniou, and Duke Casimire also were required to succour them, but to little effect, for Arthois and Henault fell from the Netherlandes generall union, and then followed the death of Don Iohn, of the plague, in the Campe nere vnto Mamure. 1577.

Then Alexander Farnase, Duke of Parma and Placentia, bastard Nephew to the king of Spain, succeeded Don Iohn in the Netherlandes government: Whereupon, a stricter Union (then before) was made betwixt the Prouinces at Vtrecht. The Duke of Aniou was called to be Protector, and partly Lord of the Countreies in the Union, which made the King of Spaine prescribe the Prince of Orange, and set his life at sale, to which proscription the Prince (in euerie point) made his iust answere. Then were valiant and woorthye seruices performed by Sir Iohn Norris, and Captain (afterwards) Sir Roger Williams. In the yeare following, the Generall Estates of the vniited Prouinces, hauing declared Phillip K. of Spain, second of that name, to be saln from the Seigneury of the said prouinces, in regard of his extraordinary and too violent gouernement, against their priuiledges and freedoms (solemnly swozne by himselfe.) In way of

1580.

The Duke
of Aniou.

1581.

The States
for them-
selues.

1582

The prince
of Orange
shot.

1584

The Prince
of Orange
murdered.

1585

The Earle
of Leicester.

of right and Armes, tooke vpon them all the Go-
uernment of the politicke Citate, and of the Re-
ligion in those Prouinces, breaking the Kinges
Seales, absolving the Subiects of their Oath to
him, and causing them to take a new Oath, for
preseruacion of their Countrey, and obedience to
the saide States. Upon a bargaine made by the
King of Spaine, to kill the Prince of Orange, the
saide Prince was shot by one Iohn Iauvregui, a
banquerout, Merchants Seruant, who was pre-
sently slaine, but the Prince escaped that attempt
with life. Afterward, he was traiterously mur-
dered by one Balhazar Gerard a high Bour-
guignon, at Delft in Holland: whercon, Prince
Maurice (being his Sonne) succeeded his father
in the gouernment. Then followed the sieg of
Antuerpe, in which time, the States once more,
re-commended their cause to the Q. of England,
either to giue her the full Soueraignty of the Ne-
therlands, or els to succor and releue them with
her forces, vpon good conditions offered. Her
Majesty graunted to send them assistance, but no
soueraignty or protection of them, would she take
vpon her: whereupon, certain cautionary towes
and Skonces were deliuered vp to her, for repai-
ment of such sums of Money, as should be disbur-
sed by her, and Articles of couenant set down be-
twene them. Also, Robert Lord Dudley, Baron
of Denbigh, and Earle of Leicester, was appoi-
ned by the Quene of England, to be her Gouer-
nor generall, ouer the English powers in the Ne-
therlands.

In

In the time of the Earle of Leicester, a govern-
ment for the Quene, were sundry worthy ser-
uices performed by the Earle of Essex, Sir Iohn
Norris, the Lord Willoughby, Sir Phillip Sid-
ney, Sir William Russell, &c. beside the subtile
pretences of Sir William Stanley, Rowland
Yorke, Patton, and others, who held faire wea-
ther with the Earle of Leicester, and had the go-
uernment of Zutphen Sconce, and the strong
Towne of Deuenter (to the great dislike of the
States): yet performed no such matter, as the
Earles hope was perswaded of them. For, after
the death of that matchlesse Noble Gentleman,
Sir Phillip Sidney, he being shot before Zutphen,
and thereof dying; the Earle of Leicester (being
gone for England) both Deuenter and Zutphen
Stronges were deliuered vp to the Spaniards, by
base corruption of Money. And (not long after)
the Prince of Parma beleaguering Seluice; by
composition it was also yielded vp, after it hadde
endured 17000. Cannon shot and more. Beside,
vpon some discontentment, betwene the Earle
of Leicester and the States; the Quene called
home the said Earle into England, and the Lord
Willoughby remayned there Generall of the
English forces. The sundry worthy seruices, both
by him, and the English performed, with the
Spanish vndoubted hopes of Englands conquest,
in the vnbefall yeare of 1588. Prince Maurice
his entrante into the Netherlands regiment, and
the Duke of Parmas wars in France, all these
I passe over, referring such as desire farther sa-
tisfaction.

Sir Phillip
Sidney slain
1587

Slaine
by the Spaniards
obtained
the town

The Lord
willoughby

Prince
Maurice.

tification therein, to the large History of the Netherlands.

1592

Ernestus D.
of Austria.

The Prince of Parma dying at Arras (after his retreat from Rouen) the second of September 1592. Maurice of Nassau, borne Prince of Orange, Marquess of La Veste, and of Flushing, &c. was made great Captaine and Admirall Generall of the United Provinces of the Netherlands, by the Estates: And Ernestus, Arch-duke of Austria, was also made Lieutenant-Gouverneur, and Captaine Generall for Phillip King of Spaine.

1594.

Prince Maurice
should be murdered twice.

Sir Frances
Vere.

1595.

Prince Maurice proving very successful in his warlike attempts, a Renegade or Apostat Priest (in the habite of a Souldier) was corrupted (by the Arch-Duke Ernestus) to murder the Prince Maurice at Breda; and upon his owne confession thereof, he was executed at the Hage. Afterward, upon Prince Maurice his valiant surprisall of Gronning, Ernestus had dealt in like manner with a Souldier, named Peter du Four (who had sometime served in the company of the Garde to Prince Maurice) to undertake the murdering of him at Lillo: the which treason beeing confessed by the man himselfe, he was executed in the Towne of Berghen vp-200m. Here might much be said of the honorable services of Sir Frances Vere, and others, but our purposed breuitie is the onely imbarment; and the Netherlands History (at large) may thereof discharge me. The Arch-Duke Ernestus dyed the twenty one day of February, 1595.

Mon-

More dragons forces defeated by Prince Maurice, and La Motte Raine before Douvraus; the Estates (under the King of Spaine) gladly sought peace with the United Provinces, and sent Articles in writing to Prince Maurice, for consideration of their motion. This was not done but, upon good advise in the King of Spaine, perceiving the Netherlands, and Prince Maurice his great fortunes against him, adding every daie, (more and more) to his utter abolition thence. Whereupon, Albertus the Cardinall, brother to deceased Ernestus, & Arch-Duke of Austria, was sent (by the King) to governe there for him; many Castles and Netherlands ships, which had bin staied in Spain to meet the Indian fleet, were suddenly released; and Phillip of Nassau (who is now Prince of Orange and Earle of Buron, that had long time bene restrained of his liberty in Spain) for better countenancing & intended business, he likewise was sent along with the Cardinall Albertus.

Albertus
Arch duke
of Austria.

The Cardinall being made Gouverneur for the King of Spaine, tooke Calice from the French King, as his first peece of service, but for losse thereof, he recovered La-vere from the Spaniards. Whereupon, the Cardinall besieged Hulst in Flanders, which yielded in the end: but it was a deare purchase to the Cardinall, for this siege, (continuing some two months) cost him the lives of above the scope halfe an appaies, besides other Commanders, Collonels, and men of mark, and above five thousand well approued souldiers.

Hulst be-
sieged.

ff 2

Then

1597

Tournhout

Then did the king of Spaine dispenſe with himſelfe for payment of his debtes, which made many Merchants in Spaine, Italy, Antwerp, Amſterdam, and Middlebourg, to become Banquerouts. A league was made between the French King, the Queene of England, and the States, againſt the Spaniards, and then his Prince Maurice goe to Tournhout, where the Earle of Varax was ſlaine. Amiens alſo was ſurprized by the Spaniards; but ſone beſieged and recovered by the French King, albeit the Cardinall offered ſuccour, which proved in vaine. Prince Maurice beſieged and took the Townes of Alphen, Meurs, Rhinberg, Groll, Brefort, Enſchede, Oldenzeel, Otmarſom, Goor, and Lingen, all which ſervices he performed in three monthes.

1598

The Ieſuits
conſpire the
death of
Prince
Maurice.

Then hapned another treacherous plot, againſt the life of Prince Maurice, by perſwaſion of the Ieſuites at Doway, and undertaken by Peter Panne, a Copier by Trade, but being then a Broker or Banquerout Merchant; who having received the Sacrament, to performe the deed either with knife, Poyard, or Piſtoll, the Provinciall of the Ieſuites made a long Sermon, to encourage him in the action, and aſſuring him of Paradiſe, if he performed it, ſaid theſe wordes to him beſides: Goe in peace, for thou ſhalt go like an Angell, in the guard of God. But the man (being terrified in conſcience) diſcovered the whole Treason, without any compulſion, and was therefore executed at Leyden in Holland. The King of Spaine growing weake and ſickly, gaue

gaue his Daughter the Infanta, named Iſabella Clara Eugenia, in marriage to the Arch-duke & Cardinall Albertus, with tranſaction of the ſpetherlands and Bourgogne: whereupon hee left his Cardinals habit, & went to ſetch the Infanta. Soone after died the King of Spaine, on the 13. day of September, Anno 1598. being ſeventy one yeares old, add ſoure monthes.

The death
of K. Phillip

1599

The Arch-Duke and the Infanta being come into the ſpetherlandes, had their inſtalment at Bruffels, Louaine, Antwerp, &c. The Emperour ſent to the States, concerning a peace, but theiſe resolution held to make warre in Flanders. Then happened the ſiege and memorable battaile of Nieuport, where Prince Maurice tooke many Fortes from the Spaniards, and overthrew the Arch-dukes Army, he being there in perſon: but gladly fled away, leaving his Armes, Horſe of Combate, all his Houſhold, Artillerie, and baggage behind him, and loſt 6000. men, beſide 800. taken Priſoners, among whom was Don Francisco de Mendoza, Admirall of Arragon, Marqueſſe of Guadaleſte, and Lieutenant Generall of the Arch-Dukes Army, who was led to Ooſtend; Don Baptiſta de Villa noua, led to Horne in Holland; Don Alonzo Ricquell, to Delft, Don Gonzalo Hernandes de Spinola, to Vtrecht; Don Pedro de Montenegro, to y Hague; Don Pedro de Valaſco, to Berghen, with Don Francisco de Torres, & Don Antonio de Mendoza, & Don Pedro de Leufina, to Encheuiſe: beſides the Arch-dukes three Pages, Count Carlo Rezi,

1600
The battaile
of Nieuport

Don Diego de Guzman, and Mortier; Don Pedro de Monte-maior, his chiefe taster; likewise his Whistion, Barber, Harbinger, Rider, Cook, Porter, the Grooms of his Chamber; most of the Archers and Halberdiers of his Guard, and (in a manner) all his household; with three Priestes or Monkes; 40. Auncients, and 37. Pensioners, learned (by them) Anciant and Sergeants reformed. He lost also sixe pieces of Ordnance, 136. Ensignes of foot taken, and five Cornets of horse, comprehending the Dutiners Standerd, and the recovered lost Colours. Moreover, on the Arch-Dukes side were slaine, the Earle of Saume, the Earle of La Fere, the Seneshall of Montelimar, the Baron of Pimereull, Chasly Ottigny, Son to the President Richadot; Don Gaspar de Sapeña, Colonel, who dyed at Dost-end, Don Diego de Torres, Don Gaspar de Loyazo, Don Gonzalo d'Espinola, Don Ioan de Pardo, Don Garcia de Toledo, Don Lopode Capeta, Don Alouzo Carcamo, Don Louis Faccardo. Sebastian Velasco, Sebastian Doteloa, Christianall Verdugues, Mattheo d'Otteuille, Ioannettin de casa nueua, the May-Dauffer Alines, and many other neuer knowne.

Prince Maurice and the States loste

Prince Maurice and the States, at the first encounter in the morning, and lastly in the battell, lost about 2000. men, among whom were Bernard, Coutelet, and Hamelton, Captaines of Horse, and some twenty Captaines of foote, but no man of name by speciall note. In this braue exploit at Neuport, the vertue and valour of Sir Frances

Frances Vere Generall, and Sir Horatio Vere, his Brother Colonell, will for ever be remembered.

The occurrences in the following yeares, as the besieging of Dast-ende; The enterprise on Flefigne; The practise to sacke Antwarpe again; Graue yielded vp to Prince Maurice; Also his honourable offers to the Town of Sluice, and it being yielded to him vpon composition, euen in the viewe of the Arch-Dukes Army; They require a larger field of discourse, then by this breuitie can be admitted. Proceed we then to speake of the long continued siege at Dast-end, which lasting three whole yeares, and eleauen weekes, was at last compounded withall, and on the twenty two day of September 1604. yielded to the Arch-duke.

What numbers were slaine in this long continued siege of Dastende, can hardly be gathered, albeit, a note was found in a Commisaries Pocket (who hadde bene slaine the seauenth of August 1604. before Ostend) wherein were dyuers good obseruations; especially concerning the Arch-Dukes Campe, and what number (of each degree) dyed and were slaine therein, during this siege, vntill the yielding vppon thereof, (viz:) Maisters of the Campe, seauen; Colonnels, fiftene; Sergeant Maiors, twenty nine Captaines, 565. Lieutenants 116. Ensignes, 322. Sergeants 1911. Corporals, 1160. Lan- spitzers, 600. Soldiers, 54663. Mariners, 611 Women and Children, 119. all amounting to 72124. persons. f f 4

1601

1602.

1604

The long
siege at
Ostend.

The Arch-
dukes losse
at Ostend.

To continue the memory of this long siege, as also the winning of Sluice, Counters (of Silver and Copper) were made in the united Provinces, bearing (on the one side) the figure of Oostend, & on the other, the Lions of Rhinberke, Graue, Sluice, Ardenbourg, with the fforts of Isendyke and Cadfane, with this inscription round about; *Plus triennio obsessa, hosti rudera, Patrie quatuor ex me vrbes dedi.* Oost-end being more then 3: yeares besieged, gaue the Eneiny an heape of stones, and to her native Countrey four Towns. Another Counter, concerning Sluice, had these words on the one side, *Traxit, duxit, dedit.* Anno 1604. And with the Armes of Zeland on the other side, were these words: *Beatus populus cuius administrator Deus.* For the following yeares, from 1604 to 1608. I finde no especiall or memorizable accidents; but an enterprise by prince Maurice, on the River of Scheld & Antwerp, with the taking of the Castle of Wouwe, next to Berghen Vp-Loorne; Spinholas taking of Linghen, with an attempt on Berghen, and Groll, taken by composition, &c. For a treaty of peace hapning between England and Spaine, the like also chanced to be talked on, concerning the Netherlands, and many meetings were made to bring it to effect. At length it was brought to passe. by the labor and endeuor of a Friar (as was reported) who made many errands between Spaine and the Netherlands, until it was accomplished. Since when, nothing hath hapned of any consequence; but the taking in of the Towne of Guliche in Germany, where the prince Maurice behaved himself very honorably.

1605.

1606

1607

1608

1609

1610.

Of the Kingdome of Ireland.



Woyding all nice and scrupulous curiosity, about the first name and Originall of Ireland, I purpose to follow these best received authors, as Giraldus Cambrensis, Flat-

bury, Henry of Marleborow, and others, that therein do give the best direction. They say and affirme, that the Hispaniards the Originall of the Spring of the Irish, because Hispanie, in those ancient daies was called Iberia, after the name of Iberius, the Sonne of Iubal, and in regard also, that the famous River Iberus was then their habitation, did entitle this land Iberia, as Leyland, and some other Chroniclers write, of Ibernia, with addition of the letter (n) to expresse a kinde of variation. From which Ibernia, it may easily be presumed, that Iberland, or Iuerland received first sound, and so Ireland, by contraction or corruption in common phrase. It is said likewise to be called Scotia, at the very same time, in reuerend respect of Scotach, or Scota, wife to Ga-thelus, an ancient Noble Captaine of those Iberians, she being Mother, others say Grandmother, to Hiberus and Hermon, the Sons of Metellus, reigning then in Hispanie. Five brethren men of no meane merit and valour (being sons to one Dela) all woorthy Sea-men, and skilfull Pilots, rigging a flete, arrived in Ireland, and perceiving it to be but slemberly peopled, concluded

The Originall of the Irish.

Leyland in 15. Cant.

Scotach or Scota the wife of Ga-thelus.

An. mund.
2. 33 Cam-
b. 1. Lib. 1.
dict 3. rub.
5, 6.

ded (by casting lots, for severall shares) to divide the Country among themselves. The foure elder brethren, who were named Gandius, Genandius, Sagandus or Gangandus, Rutheragus or Rutheranus, having cast the whole Island into four partitions, and finding their yonger brother Slanius to stand quite exempted from any abyding, sucraying more advisedly their severall portions: (which were thus squared, Lagenia, Leinster, lying East: Connatia, Connaght, west: Ultonia, Ulster, North: & Momonia Mouuster south, each made an abatement of his proportion, & amongst them laid out a fift part, named Media, Meeth, which afterwarde, from being the lesser share (by his manly carriage) proved to be the largest, & he obtained the whole monarchy of Ireland, appointing Meeth to serve for his monarchs diet or table.

The first K.
of Ireland.

It appeareth then, that Ireland was thus divided into foure severall territories or kingdoms, and that the Spaniards, or Hispaniades first peopled the same. There are also accounted 130. petty kings of that Nation, from Hermon, that slew his Brother Hiberus (of whose name the Irish received theirs) to Laogirius, the Son of Nealus Magnus, in whose daies Ireland was converted to the Christian faith, by that holy man S. Patrick. About which time came Roderick a Scithian

Roderick K.
of the Picts.

Prince, with no great number of men, who were the Picts, & he their king, and there they sought to make their abiding: but the Irish perswaded thence, and then they betooke themselves to the South part of Brittain, where, both Rodericke and

and the more number of his followers, were slain by Marius King of Brittain. In no long while after, one Turgesius, a notable Pyrat of the Norwegians, came thether likewise, with a strong power, and made himselfe King or Conquerour of Ireland, using much tyranny, and despoiling all the other Kings daughters: till by the policie of Omalaghilen, King of Meeth, whose daughter also the tyrant would needs ravish, a company of young youths were disguised like faire pimps, with shorte sharpe skewes hidden under theyr Garments, and the faire young Lady her selfe, Daughter to Omalaghilen, was theyr chiefe conductor to the lascivious Tyrants bed Chamber. Turgesius, his onely companions at that instant, were a few dissolute young men, affected like himselfe, whom the King had made acquainted with this amorous purchase, promising, that (his lust being satisfied) where he liked to make election, the rest should remaine at their free disposition. So sooner were these disguised yong Gallantes entered the Chamber, and the king preparing himselfe to embrace the Kinge of Meeths Daughter, but, drawing forth the theyr skewes, they first cooled the Tyrants heate in his owne bloude, and afterwarde his opinions were in like sort served. The fame of this valiant acte being quickly shorne thorough Ireland, and the Princes rising in Armes on so apte an advantage, they resolved to free themselves from such servility: as indeede they did, and made Omalaghilen their chiefe King or

Turgesius
the Tyrant.

The iust punishment of
a lascivious
Tyrant.

commander, in hono^r of this their great deliue-
rance.

*Saxo Gram-
mat. Albert.
Crantz.* Concerning diuers other inuasions of Ireland
afterwarde, by the Danes, Norwegians, Swe-
dens, Normans, &c. reported by Saxo Grammati-
cus, Albert Crantzius, and others: they are mat-
ters no way incident to our present purpose, but
referred to our generall determination, more
capable of such plenty of discourse. Wherefore,
passing ouer those former yeares of trouble and
disturbance, let vs come to Syluester Giraldus
*Syluest. Gi-
rard. Cam-
brensis.* Cambrensis, his history of the conquest of Ire-
land, when Dermon Mac Morogh, K. of Leyn-
ster, fled out of Ireland, to crase succo^r of Henrie
the second, King of England, who was then in
Aquitaine, busied with very serious affayres,
wherein I will be so brieue as I may.

*O Der-
mon Mac
Morogh.* This Dermon Mac Morough, King of Lein-
ster, hauing bin (from his youth and entrance in-
to the Kingdome) tirranous ouer his Nobilitie,
and full of oppression to all the Gentrie, became
highly hated and despised, and so much the rather
fo^r raniſhing the wife to Ororike p^rince of Meth,
in the absence of her husband. Ororike not b^yo^w-
king such an indigⁿity, procured Rotherick (K.
of Connagh, and Monarch of all Ireland ouer
the other Kings) to giue him aid, with al the fo^r-
ces that either of them could make. Dermon vn-
derstanding this main opposition, fled into Aqu-
taine, where he found Henry the second, King of
England, and such was his distressefull tale to
him, with Oath of allegiance sworne vnto him,
to

to be his true vassalle and subiect: that King Hen-
ry made kind acceptance of him, and took him in-
to his protection, graunting him his Letters pat-
ents into England, to vse the aide and meanes
of his Subiects, fo^r recovery of his right in Ire-
land. Being returned from King Henry into
England, he came to Bristow, where his letters
Patents were many times publickely read, and
liberall wadges and offers made, to such as in
this extremitie would giue him assistance. All
proued in vaine, till Richard, sonne to Gilbert,
Earle of Chepstone (being promised Dermons
Daughter & heire in marriage, with inheritance
and succession in his Kingdome) was bounde to
visit him with aide in Ireland, at the following
Spring: Robert Fitz-Stephens, and Maurice Fitz-gerard,
Fitz-gerald, had promise also of the Towne of
Wexford, being the chiefest Towne in Leinster,
and sixe Cantreds of land to them and theirs fo^r-
euer, to come likewise (with their best help) at the
Spring ensuing. Upon hope of this assistance,
Dermon ventured home among his enimies, but
in very priuate manner fo^r his owne safety. At
time appointed, Robert Fitz-Stephens accompa-
nied with Maurice Fitz-gerald and with thirtie
seruiceable Gentlemen, all of his kindred, beside
thre hundred bold Archers, the best chosen, and
onely men of Wales, sailed in thre sundry barks,
and landed in the Calends of May, at the Banne
in Ireland. Whereby, an old Prophecy of Mer-
lins was said to be fulfilled, (viz.) A Knight by-
parted, should enter first with force in Armes,
and

Dermon
swearth al-
legiance to
K Henry.

Gilbert Earle
of Chep-
stone.

Robert Fitz
Stephens, &
Maurice
Fitz-gerard,

Fitzstephens
& his men
passe into
Ireland.

A prophe-
cy of Merlin

Richard
Strongbow
Earle of
Chepstone
and Pembroke.

and breake the bounds of Ireland. Their landing there, proued so successful to Derman, that he kept his word with Fitz-Stephens & Fitz-gerald, for the town of Wexford, & territories thereto appertaining with the cantreds of land: he sent also for Richard Strongbow, Earle of Pembroke, son to Earle Gilbert of Chepstone, who, byppon Derman's letters, and intelligence of Fitz-Stephens great fortunes (with his followers) there desiring earnestly to make one in so worthy an imploiment made suite to k. Henry for his passage thither. But whether he obtained leaue or no, he being of very noble parentage, greater in spirit, then possessions, & aiming at the fairest fortunes: dreddles of the kings displeasure, with such power as hee could provide, he landed at Waterford in September. Where it shall not differ much from our purpose, to report those noble mens names, who before any other of the English assisted this worthy Earle Richard Strongbow for Derman, in subduing Ireland to the Crowne of England, according as they are recorded in the chancery of Ireland, & as the learned M. Camden hath also obserued them.

Robert Fitz-Stephens.	Miles de Cogan.
Haruey de Mont-marish.	Gualter de Ridensford.
Maurice Prendergest.	Gualter, & Alexander, sons
Robert Barr.	of Maurice Fitz-Girald.
Meiler Meilcrine.	William Notte.
Maurice Fitz-Guad.	Robert Fitz-Bernard.
Redmund, nephew of Fitz-	Hugh de Lacie.
Stephens.	William Fitz-Adelm.
William Ferrand.	VVilliam Marcarell.

Hum-

Hunfray Bohun.	Raulfe Fitz-Stephens.
Hugh de Gundeulle.	VValtende Barry.
Phillip de Hasting.	Phillip VVallsh.
Hugh Titell.	Adam de Hereford.
Dauid VVallsh.	John Curcy.
Robere Poer.	Hugh Conulon.
Osbert de Hattlor.	Redmund Cauchmore.
William de Bendenges.	Redmund Fitz-Hugh.
Adam de Geruez.	Miles of S. Dauids.
Griffin Fitz-Stephens.	VVith diuers other be-

phesies. When also was it generally noised, that Celidons prophesie was fulfilled, (viz) A little Fire-brand Celidons shall go before a great fire, and as the sparks kindle the lesser wood, so shall the same set the great wood on fire. There was another prophesie also, Merlins, viz. A great fore-runner of a greater follower, shall come, & he shall tread down the heads of Desmond & Leinster, & the waies (before opened and made ready) hee shall inlarge. Dublin, Leinster, & diuers other places were immediately won, & Earle Richard married to Eua, Derman's daughter.

By which marriage, he enjoyed but one daughter onely, who enticed VVilliam Marechall with the Earldome of Pembroke's Title, faire Lands in Ireland, five hundred, all dying childlesse, and as many daughters, who honored their husbands (viz. Hugh Bigod, Earle of Norfolk, Guarin Montcheney, Gilbert Earle of Gloucester, VVilliam Ferrars Earle of Derby, and William Breose, with childzen, goodly honours, and rich possessions.

Upon

King Henry
offended
with Earle
Strongbow

Upon the newes in England, of Earl Strongbow and his followers daily preuailing in Ireland, King Henry grew offended with him, and made a proclamation against him, that none of his Subiectes shoulde further assist Demmon of him. But, vpon the Earles private passage into England, and conference with the King at Newham, nere to Gloucester, all displeasure was forgotten, and the King (hauing then an Armie in readines) shoulde passe forthwith into Ireland, where all shoulde be deliuered vp into the Kings possession. King Henry landed at Waterford, on Saint Lukes day, in the seventh yeare of his raigne, the 41. of his age, and of our Lord, 1172.

The princes
of Ireland
swear feal-
ty to King
Henry.

Dermon Mac Morogh being deade some short while before. The King being Royally welcommed into Ireland, Dermon of Mac Carti, Prince of Corke, Donald O Bren, Prince of Limerick, Donald O Carel, Prince of Ossorie, and Macleighlin O Felin, Prince of the Decies of Ophalie, O Roike, K. of Meth, & O neale, King of Vister. With Rotherick O Conor Dun, the Bzoton Monarch of Ireland, came al & submitted themselves to K. Henry, swearing fealty & to be tributaries to him. All matters being ordered in Ireland to the Kings good liking, he departed thence to England, hauing made Earle Strongbow Earle of Pembroke, the first Lord Governor of Ireland, ioyning Reimond le Grace in Commission with him, in the yeare, 1174.

The

The names of the Gouvernors, Lieutenants, Lord Iustices, and Deputies of Ireland, since the conquest thereof, by King Henry the second.

The yeares
of our Lord

Richard Strongbow, Earle of Pembroke, Governor, Reimond le Grace being ioyned (for his more ease) in commission with him.

1174

Reimond le Grace, Lieutenant by himselfe.

1177

William Fitz Adelme, Lieutenant, hauing John de Curcy, Robert Fitzstephans, and Miles Cogan ioyned in Commission with him.

Hugh Lacie, Lieutenant.

John Lacy, Constable of Chester. } Gouver-
and Richard de Peche. } nors.

1182

Hugh Lacy, againe Lieutenant.

Hugh Lacy the younger, Lord Justice.

Henry Loandoris, Arch-bishop of Dublin, Lord Justice.

1207

Maurice Fitzgiralde, Lord Justice.

1228.

John Fitzgeffery, Knight, Lord Justice.

1253

Alain de la Zouch, Lord Justice.

Stephen de Long Espe, Lord Justice.

1258

William Deane, Lord Justice.

Sir Richard Rochell, of Capelk, Lord Justice.

1267.

Dauid Barry, Lord Justice.

1267

Robert Vfford, Lord Justice.

1268

Richard de Excester, Lord Justice.

1269

James Lord Audley, Lord Justice.

1270

Maurice Fitzmaurice, Lord Justice.

1272

Walter, Lord Genuille, Lord Justice.

CG

Robert

1281	Robert Vfford, againe lord Justice. Fulborne, Byschoppe of Waterford, Lord Justice.
	John Stamford, Arch-Bishop of Dublin, Lord Justice.
	William Vescie, Lord Justice.
1295	VWilliam Dodingsels, Lord Justice.
	Thomas Fitz-Maurice, Lord Justice.
1297	John Wogan, Lord Justice.
1314	Theobald Verdon, Lord Justice.
1315	Edmund Butler, Lord Justice.
1317	Roger Lord Mortimer, Lord Justice.
	Alexander Bignor, Arch-Bishoppe of Dublin, Lord Justice.
1319	Roger, Lord Mortimer, the second time Lord Justice.
1320	Thomas Fitz-Iohn, Earle of Kildare, Lord Justice.
1328	Iohn Birmingham, Earle of Louth, Lord Justice.
1323	Iohn, Lord Darcy, Lord Justice.
1327	Roger Outlaw, Bpior of Kilmainan, Lord Justice.
	Anthony, Lord Lucy, Lord Justice.
1328	Iohn, Lord Darcy, second time Lord Justice.
	Iohn, Lord Chatleton, Lord Justice.
1338	Thomas, Bishop of Hereford, Lord Justice.
1339	Iohn, Lord Darcy, ordained Lord Justice by Parliament, during his life, by King Edward the third.
	Raphe Vfford, Lord Justice.
1346	Robert Darcy, Lord Justice.

Iohn

	Iohn Fitz-Maurice, Lord Justice.	
	VValter, Lord Birmingham, Lord Justice, his Deputies were Iohn Archer, Bpior of Kilmainan, and Baron Carew, with Sir Thoroakesby.	
	Maurice Fitz-Thomas, Earle of Desmond, had the Office of Lord Justice, for tearme of his life, by the graunt of King Edward the third.	
	Thomas Rokesby, Knight, Lord Justice.	1355
	Almericke de S. Amand.	1357
	Iohn Butler, Earle of Ormound.	appointed Lord Justices by turnes.
	Maurice Fitz-Henry, Earle of Kildare.	
	Lionell, Duke of Clarence, Lord Justice.	1361
	Gerald Fitz-Maurice, Earle of Desinond, Lord Justice.	1367
	VWilliam, Lord Windsor, the first Lieutenant in Ireland.	1369
	Roger Ashton, Lord Justice.	1372
	Roger Mortimer.	Justices and Lieutenants especially recorded, in the dayes of King Richard the second.
	Phillip Courtney.	
	Iames Earle of Ormound.	1381
	Robert Vere, Earle of Oxford, Marquesse of Dublin, created Duke of Ireland.	
	Roger Mortimer, Earle of March, Lieutenant.	1394
	Roger Mortimer, Earle of March and Vflter, lieutenant.	
	Roger Grey, Lord Justice.	
	Iohn Stanley, Knight, Lord lieutenant.	
	Thomas of Lancaster, brother to king Henry the fourth,	1401.

fourth, lord Lieutenant; whose Deputies at sundry times, were Alexander, Bishop of Meth, Stephen Scrope, knight, & the Bishop of Kilmainan.

1403

James Butler, Earle of Ormond, Lord Justice.
Gerald, Earle of Kildare, Lord Justice.

1407

James Butler, Earle of Ormond, Son to the fore-
said James, Lord Justice.

1413

John Stanley, againe Lord Lieutenant.
Thomas Cranley, Arch-Bishop of Dublin, Lord
Justice.

1414

John, Lord Talbot of Sheffield, Lieutenant.

1420

James Butler, Earle of Ormond, the second time
Lieutenant.

Edmund, Earle of March, James,
Earle of Ormond, his Deputy.

John Sutton, Lord Dudley, Sir Tho-
mas Strange, his Deputy.

Sir Thomas Stanley, Sir Christo-
pher Plunket his Deputy.

Lion, Lord Welles, Deputy to the
Earle of Ormond.

James, Earle of Ormond, by him-
selfe.

John, Earle of Shrewsbury, the Arch-
bishop of Dublin (in his absence)
Lord Justice.

Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York, Father to
King Edw: the fourth, had the Office of Lieu-
tenant, by letters patents from King Henry the
first, for tenne years. His Deputies (at sundry
times) were the Baron of Deluin; Richard
Fitz-Eustace, Knight; James Earle of Or-
mond;

Lieute-
nants to
K. Henric
the first.

mond; and Thomas Fitzmoris, Earle of Kildare.

Thomas Fitzmoris, Earle of Kildare, Lord Ju-
stice in the daies of King Edward the fourth, un-
till the third yeare of his raigne. After whom,
George Duke of Clarence, brother to the King,
had the office of Lieutenant during his life, and
made his Deputies (at sundry times) these open
following;

Thomas, Earle of Desmond.

John Tiptoft, Earle of Worcester.

Thomas, Earle of Kildare.

Henry, Lord Gray of Ruthine.

Sir Rowland Eustace, Lord Deputy.

Richard, Duke of Yorke, younger son to King
Edward the fourth, Lieutenant.

Edward, Son to K. Richard the 3. Lieutenant,
his Deputy was Gerald, Earle of Kildare.

Iasper, Duke of Bedford, & Earle of Pembroke,
Lieutenant; his Deputy was Walter, Arch-
bishop of Dublin.

Edward Poynings, Knight, Lord Deputy,

Henry, Duke of Yorke, afterward King, by the
name of Henry the eight, Lieutenant; his De-
puty was Gerald, Earle of Kildare.

Gerald Fitz-gerald, Earle of Kildare, L. Deputy.

Thomas Howard, Earle of Surry, afterwarde,
Duke of Norffolke, Lieutenant.

Piers Butler, Earle of Ossorie, Lord Deputy.

Geralde Fitzgeralde, Earle of Kildare, againe
Lord Deputy.

The Baron of Dublin, Lord Deputy.

Piers Butler, Earle of Ossorie, againe L. Deputy.

Edg

Willi-

Deputies
to the duke
of Cla-
rence,

1470

1494

1501

1530

1523

1529

440 A brieve Chronicle

William Skeffington, Knight, Lord Deputy.
Gerald Fitzgerald, Earle of Kildare, 3rd time
Lord Deputy.

William Skeffington, againe Lord Deputy.

1534. Leonard, Lord Gray, Lord Deputy.
1540. Sir William Brereton, Knight, Lord Justice.
1541. Sir Anthony Sentleger, Knight, Lord Deputy.

¶ The names of all the Lordes, Deputies, and
Iustices in Ireland, since the death of King
Henry the eight, who died
in January 1546.

1546. Sir Anthony Sentleger, knight,
by Patent, dated 24. Martij,
Anno primo Edw. 6.
1547. Sir Edward Bellingham,
Lord Deputy, 22. Aprilis An.
eodem.
1548. Sir Francis Brian, Lord Justice.
1549. Sir VWilliam Brabeston, Lord Justice.
1550. Sir Anthony Seutleger, the third time Lord de-
puty, 4. August.
1551. Sir James Croftes, Lord Deputy, twenty nine
Aprilis.
1552. Sir Anthony Sentleger, the fourth time Lord
Deputy, September 1. Anno primo Reg.
Marie.
1555. Thomas, Lord Fitzwalter, Lord Deputy 27.
Aprilis.
1556. Sir Henry Sidney. 2 Lordes Justi-
Dotoz Coren, 02 Corwen. Jces.

Sir

Of the Successe of Times. 441

Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Justice alone, eighteen
January. 1556.
Thomas Earle of Suffex, Lord Lieutenant, 19.
Martij. 1557
Sir William Fitz-Williams, Lord Justice. 1558
Thomas, Earle of Suffex, Lord Deputy, 6. Maij
Anno primo R. Elizab. 1559
Sir Nicholas Arnold, Lord Justice. 1564
Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Deputy the third time. 1565
Dotoz Weston, Lord Chancellour.
Sir William Fitzwilliams. 1567
Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Deputy the fourth
time. 1568.
Sir William Fitz-williams, Lord Justice. 1570.
Sir William Fitzwilliams, Lord Deputy, 11.
Decemb. Anno. 14. Elizab. 1571
Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Deputy the fift time,
August 3. 1572
Sir William Drury, Lord Justice, 14. Septem.
by patent, 18. May. 1579.
Sir William Pelham, Lord Justice. 1580.
The Lord Arthur Gray. 1580.
Adam Arch-Bishoppe of } Lordes Justices.
Dublin. 1582
Sir Henry Wallop. }
Sir Iohn Perot, Lord Deputy. 1584.
Sir William Fitz-Williams, Lord Deputy. 1588
Sir William Russell, Lord Deputy. 1595
Thomas, Lord Burrough, Lord Deputy. 1597
Robert, Earle of Essex, Lord Lieutenant. 1599
Charles Blunt, Baron Montioy, Lord Deputy. 1600
Sir George Carew, Lord Deputy. 1602.

G g 4

Sir

1604.

Sir Arthur Chichester, Lord Deputy, who yet to this day continueth in that honourable office.

¶ Of the Kingdome of Scotland.



According to the ancient Historiographers of Scotland in description of their Nations first off-spring and originall (after Brutes first division of Brittain to his Sonnes)

Gathelus a noble Grecian.

they make relation of a noble man among the Grecians, that was named Gathelus, the sonne of Cecrops (in the iudgement of some) who builded Athens: but, according to the conceite of others, the Sonne of Argus Nealus, fourth King of the Argines. This Gathelus, being banished by his Father, for some matter of disobedience, departed thence into Egypt, in the thirty three yeare of Pharaos Orus, then King of that Countrey, and there carried himselfe with such valiant and extraordinary successe, against the Countreys Enemies, (in the company of Moses, Generall vnder the King himselfe) that Pharaos bestowed his faire Daughter (named Scota) on him in marriage, hauing also then giuen him and his followers, the Citty Thebes (Ægyptiaca) reported to be taken from the Israelites. Upon iust occasion, Gathelus (after his Fathers in Lawes decrease) leauing Egypt, being provided of Shippes and other apt necessities, tooke his Wife, Children,

An. Mund. 2416.

Ioseph. Lib. 2 Cap. 7.

and a great multitude both of Greeks and Echyopians, and setting forth of Nilus, determined to seeke his fortune in other Countries. This was in the year of the worlds creation, 2453. and after his abiding in Egypt, about 39. years: what accidents befell him in this voyage, is needlesse to report, his first arriual was on the Coastes of Numidia in Affrick, now named Barbary: but being not able to settle there, he came into a part of Spaine, long after termed Lusitania. It is said that the place of his landing there, was called Port-Gathele, after the name of Gathelus, which afterwarde became (corruptly) to bee called Port-gale, or Portingale, the certainty whereof I referre to better iudgements. The people there inhabiting, gaue both him and his, at the first, a bold repulse, but in the end hee preuailed victoriously, and after further friendly conference with the Spaniards, he began to builde a Citty named Brachara, on the bankes of the Riuer Mundus, and so at the first did hee name the Citty it selfe. Gathelus by the Spaniards further persuasions & promise of assistance to their vttermost, whatsoever disasters should betide him and his: removed to the Southside of Spaine, on the Cantabrian Sea coasts, now called Galitia, where he builded likewise another Citty, named Brigantia, afterwarde called Nouium, and now Compostella.

Gathelus his departure out of Egypt.

He landed in Portingale.

The Citty Brachara builded.

Here did Gathelus bear the Title of king, and gaue lawes to his people, commanding that they should all be called Scottish-men, to honour the name

The Scots
foyleth the
spaniards.

Gathelus
his Marble
Stone.

name of his deare beloued wife Scota, as hee had alwayes so tearmed them, in the time of his trauailes. In time, they grew to be so great a passion, that the Spaniards warring with them for their owne safety, sustained the worst: & though victoꝝ remained to the Scots, yet such good Orders were agreed on, that both Scots and Spaniards should obserue their own lawes, without inuasion offered on either side. When did Gathelus liue in peace with his neighbors, sitting daily on his Marble Stone in Brigantia, administering Lawes and Justice to his people: which Stone was fashioned like a seat or chaire, hauing such a fate thereto belonging (as is said) that wheresoeuer that Stone should be found, there shoulde the Scottishmen raigne and hold dominion. Whereof it ensued, that there first in Spain, afterward in Ireland, and next in Scotland, the Kings ruling ouer the Scottishmen, receiued the Crowne sitting vpon that Stone, vntill the time of Robert the first, King of Scotland. On the Stone was this inscription engrauen.

The inscription on the
Stone of
Gathelus.

*Ni fallat fatum, Scoti quocunque locatum
Inuenient lapidem, regnare tenentur ibidem.*

Englished thus:

Except olde Sawes doo faile,
and Wizards wits be blinde:

The Scots in place must raigne,
where they this Stone shal finde.

Gathelus his
people doo
greatly a-
bound,

This quiet life of Gathelus, did so daily encrease the abundance of his people, that the bounds of his

his dominion was not able to containe them, and he being religious in cōsuetud with the Spaniards, auoiding all meanes of breach of the peace: hauing intelligence of an Island lying North o-uer against Spaine, and wherein was but few inhabitants: made readie his shipping, leuyed an Armie of his subiectes, and vnder conduct of his two sonnes, named Hiberus and Himecus, or Hermion (which hee had by his Quene Scota) conueyed them ouer into that Island, which afterwarde was named Hibernia, after the name of Hiberus. The History recoꝝdeth, that the Scottishmen offered no violence to the inhabitants, but sought all meanes to win them by gentlenesse, which in the end was easilie compassed, and all thinges appointed in decent order: which made Hiber leaue his Brother to gouerne there in Hilberland or Ireland, and returne backe to Spaine. There he found his father Gathelus to be dead, and hee (with the peoples ioyfull consent) was admitted to succed him as his son: but in regard of his admirable courage, & not satisfied with those bounds that pleased his father; he made conquest of other Citties & Townes nere about him, so that they were enforced to sue vnto him for peace, and agreed to such conditions, that a league concluded amity, and marriage contracts betwixen both Scots and Spaniards, causing them to become as one people, continuing their succession of Kings (after Hiberus death) in his posterity, amongst which were Metellus, Hermoneus, Ptolomeus, Hiberius, and Simon Brechus.

Gathelus his
two sonnes
come into
Ireland.

The death
of Gathelus
and valor of
his son Hi-
berus.

Scottes and
Spaniards
one nation.

passing

Simon Bre-
chus in Ire-
land, first K.
ouer the
Scots.

Passing ouer the contentions in Ireland, vnder the rule of the fore-named Himecus, the three sonnes of Metellus (viz) Hermoneus, Ptolomeus and Hiberius, being sent thither in defence of the iniured Scots; let vs speake of this Simon Brechus, lineally descended of the Scottish blood, who was the first King that reigned ouer the Scots in Ireland, he brought with him thither the fatal Harle Stone, and was thereon crowned, in signe of his full possession of that kingdome, & in the yeare from the worlds creation, 3270. after the flood, 1616. 55. from the building of Rome, after Brutes entrance into Brittain, 870. and before our Saviours incarnation, 697. He gouerned his subiects with great Justice fortie yeares, after whom succeeded Fandufus, from whom descended Ethion, that begate Glaucus, whose sonne (named Nottasilus) was the father of Rothsay, all which reigned successiuelly ouer the Scots in Ireland.

Fandufus &
his issue.

Rothsay
transporteth
his
Scots into
the western
Isles.

Rothsay, to auoide the superabounding increase of the Scottish Nation in Ireland, transported them (by diuers numbers) into the Isles anciently called Ebonides, afterward Hebrides, but now (by the Scots) the Westerne Isles, lying on the West halfe of Scotland, and named the Isle he first possessed them of, the Isle of Rothsay, after his owne name: this was 133. yeares after Simon Brechus was crowned King. For may we forget, & they also named those Isles (and an especiall part thereof) by the name of Argathelia, in memory of their first guide & Prince Gathelus,

Gathelus, and as yet to this day it is called Argathelia, wherein also, as all ouer the mayne and some land, called then Albion, and they Albion-Scots, they planted themselves, albeit it was a wast and very desert dwelling. Argathelia in remembrance of Gathelus.

Here could I enter into a necessary declaration, concerning the coming of the Pictes, into those partes of Albion, what people they were, their combustions with the Britains and Scots, and rule of their Kings, till their absolute destruction, according to an ancient Prophecie: That the Scots should in the end destroy all the Pictish progeny: But because I haue briefly spoken of them, and hauing referred their further relation to our generall History, we will now goe on with our matter of the Albion Scots. In the troubles of Ireland, among the Scots there inhabiting, one Ferguhardus, a very worthy and noble Prince, reigned there, who sent an armie to assist the Brittain and Albion Scots, vpon their request of aide, vnder the conduct of his son Fergusius, who was a young gallant Prince, yet an expert Warriour, and tooke with him the Harle Stone, because he went to a dangerous war, and hoped withall, that the issue of his paines should be the attaining of a kingdome: As indeed, vpon an assembly and parlement held at Arguile, and his high merit to exceed all others whatsoeuer, he was elected and sacred in that supream office, in the yeare after the worlds creation, 3640. before our blessed Saviours incarnation, 327. after the building of Rome 420. and after Brutes entrance

The Pictes
come into
Albion.

Ferguhardus in Ireland.

Fergusius
the first king
of Scotland

in

into Britaine, 790. This Fergusius, after he has raigned royally the space of 25. yeares, sayling into Ireland, to quiet a discontentment amongst the Nobility, was driven upon a Roocke, where he perished by drowning, and that Roocke hath euer since, euen to this day, bin called Rock-Fergus, otherwise Knock-Fergus.

Feritharis
the second
k. of Scot-
land.

After the much lamented death of Fergusius, because his sonnes were ouer young, to vndergo the waightry charge of gouernment, his Brother Feritharis was crowned King, being enthroned in his kingly Dynaments, with all solemnitie: his two edged Sworde, his scepter Royall, and his Crowne of Golde, made in forme of a Rampire, for preservation of his Countries libertie: which manner of inuesting continued (without any alteration) till the dayes of Achaius King of Scotland, who confirming a perpetuall league with Charlemaigne, Emperour and k. of France, to last for euer betwene Scots and French, added to the Crowne foure floure de Lices, with four Crosets, deuided in sunder with equal spaces, rising somewhat higher then the floure de Lices, that thereby, the obseruing of Christian Religion, and sincere faith (maintained by the Scottish Nation) might appeare the more apparant to al that behelde it. After Feritharis (who raigned worthy 15. yeares) not Ferlegus, the eldest sonne of Fergusius succeeded, but Mainus the younger sonne being then aged 24. yeares: and after him his son Doruadille, the following succession we will thus briefly relate.

Doruadill

Howe the
first kinges
of scottes
succeeded
each other.

Doruadil raigned 28. yeares.

Notharius, Brother to Doruadil, raygned two yeares.

Reuther, son to Doruadill, 26. yeares.

Reurha, the Unckles son to Reuther, seuentene yeares, and then entering into a priuate life, he resigned the Crowne to Thereus.

Thereus, the sonne of Reuther, who raigned 12. yeares.

Conanus, Lord of Galloway, who after the de- cease of Thereus in Brittain, yeilded the go- uernment to Iosina, Brother to Thereus, and raigned 24. yeares.

Finnanus, sonne to Iosina, thirty yeares.

Durstus, sonne to Finnanus, nine yeares.

Ewin, Unckles sonne to Durstus, xix. yeares.

Gillus, base sonne to Ewin, who being expelled, Ewin, second of that name, was crowned k. and rainging xix. yeares, resigned his state to Ederus.

Ederus, the sonne of Dothan, 38. yeares.

Ewin the third, son to Ederus, 7. yeares.

Metellanus, sonne to Carren, the Brother of E- derus, in the 12. yeare of whose raigne, our Sauour Iesus Christ was borne of the ble- sed Virgin Mary in Bethlein, which was 324 yeares, after the establishing of the Scottish kingdoms by Fergusius. This Metellanus di- ed in the 28. yeare of his raigne.

The birth
of our Sau-
our Iesus
Christ.

Caratake, son to Cadallan, and Nephew to Me- tellanus, raigned xxi. yeares.

Corbreid, pongst brother to Caratake, 34. yeares.

Dardan

54

58

71	Dardan, sur-named the Great, for his huge stature foure yeares.
75	Corbreid Gald, eldest sonne of King Corbreid, 35. yeares. This was a very worthy and famous King, and the Countrey where hee last fought with the Romaines, in memory of his owne name, was called Galdia, which (as some thinks) is that now named Galloway.
131	Lingthake, son to Corbreid Gald, two yeares.
133	Mogall, nephew to Corbreid Gald, six and thirtie yeares.
162	Conarus, son to Mogall, 14. yeares.
176	Ethodius, Nephewe to King Mogall. In this Kinges raigne, Lucius, King of the Brittaines, with a great part of his people, receyued the Christian faith, being according to the Scottish Chronicles, in the yeare after our Saviours birth, 187. This Ethodius raigned 33. yeares.
207	Sarrahell, or Serrahell, Brother to Ethodius, raigned foure yeares.
211	Donald, Brother to Sarrahell, 21. yeares. In this Kings time, the Scots receiued with him the Christian faith, 330. yeares after the erection of the Scottish Kingdome. And this Donald was the first that caused Golde and Siluer to bee coyned in his Realme, stamping a Crosse on the one side. and his face on the other.
216	Euthodius the second, beeing Sonne to the former King Euthodius, raigned 16. yeares.
242	Athirco, son to Euthodius, 12. yeares.
252	Natholocus, a Noble man of Argile, 11. yeares.

Findock

Findocke, sonne to Athirco, ten yeares.	
Donald, Brother to Findock, being named Donald of the Isles, twelue yeares.	272
Crathlint, Son to King Findock, twenty foure yeares.	287
Fincomarke, the Uncles sonne to Crathlint, 47. yeares.	322
Romacus, Nephewe to King Crathlint, foure yeares.	328
Angusianus, Nephewe to King Crathlint, two yeares.	360
Fethelmachus, Cousin to Angusianus, thre yeares.	363
Eugenius, the Sonne of King Fincomarke, thre yeares.	369
Fergus, Sonne to Erthus, who was Sonne to Ethodius, Brother to Eugenius, and bozne in Denmarke, 16. yeares.	424.
Eugenius, the Son of Fergus, in whose time the Wall, called Adrians Wall, was undermined and ouerthrowne; Also the Brittaines were made tributary to the Scots and Pictes: which was about fise hundred yeares, after that Iulius Cæsar had brought them in subiection to the Romaines; after our Saviours birth 446. and the seauenth of Eugenius his raigne. When was the Isle of Albion soze infected with the Pelagians Heresie, and Paladius (learned by some the Apostle of Scotland) was sent by Pope Celestine to the Scots and Picts. This Eugenius raigned 30. yeares, and advanced the State of his Countrey to more wealth and felicity, then any of his Predecessors had done before him.	440
Th	Don-

The Brittaines tributary to the Scots and Picts.

470 Dongard, brother to Eugenius, reigned 5. yeares.
 481 Constantine, Brother also to Eugenius, 17. yeares.

501 Dongall, or Congall, Nephew to Constantine, and son to his Brother Dongard, 20. yeares.

521 Conranus, Brother to Congall, in whose time the great *I.* Arthur was borne, and *S.* Germane preached among the Soldiers in the Camp, and bare the Kings Standard in the field, when with the cry of Alleluia they sung together, the Saxons were miraculously discomfited. This Conranus died in the 20. yeare of his reigne, the 16. of Arthurs over the Brittaines, and first of the Emperour Iustinian, An. Christi. 531.

531 Eugenius, his Nephew, and son to his brother Congall, in whose time was the bloody battell betwixt the Brittaines, Scots, and Picts, wherein about 20000. men were slain, with Mordred, *I.* Arthur, & Gawan or Gawan, brother to Mordred, and most part of the British Nobility. This Eugenius reigned 38. yeares.

The death of King Arthur, Mordred, &c.
 578 Conuall, Brother to Eugenius, in whose time *S.* Colme, or Colombe, came from Ireland into Scotland. This Conuall reigned ten yeares, and then Kinnatill his Brother, being enthroned at Argile by free election, lived but twenty dayes after his Coronation.

588 Aidan, Sonne to King Conran, was crowned by the holy Father Saint Colme, and reigned thirty seven yeares. In this Aidans time, the Saxons having driven the Brittaines into Wales, and insulting over their lands and Countreies;

tries; divided the kingdom into seven parts or divisions, ordaining seven severall Kings to rule over them. In this King Aidans rule, died Saint Colme, at Dune in Ireland, whereon his tomb these verses were found engraved.

*Hi tres in Duno, tumulo tumulantur in uno,
 Brigida, Patricius atque Columba pius.*
 Saint Colme, Saint Patrick, and Brigetta pure,
 These three in Dune lies in one Sepulture.

Kenethus Keir, Son of Conuall, or Conuall, reigned four months. 606

Eugenius, fourth of that name, Son to King Aidan, and (by some) called Brudus, according to *S.* Colmes prophecy of him, was crowned King of Scotland. He reigned 15. yeares. 610.

Ferquhard, Son to Eugenius, 13. yeares. 632

Donald, or Donwald, the third son of Eugenius, 15. yeares. 645

Ferquhard the second, Nephew to Donwald, 18. yeares. 664

Maldwin, Sonne of King Donwald, in whose time was a grievous Pestilence through most part of the World, consuming a greater number of Men before it ceased, then were left alive, for it continued the space of three yeares together. He reigned twenty yeares. A generall Pestilence.

Eugenius the first, Nephew to Maldwin, four yeares. 688

Eugenius the first, the Sonne of Ferquhard, ten yeares. 697

454 A brieft Chronicle

Strange vi-
sions in Al-
bion.

In this kinges raigne were many wonderfull
visions seen in Albion. In the River of Humber
(to the apparant view of a multitude of men) a
number of Ships appeared vnder saile, as ready
furnished for the war. In the Church at Came-
lon, a noyse was heard like the clattering of
Armour. Milke was turned into bloud in dy-
uers places of Piceland, and Chese conuer-
ted into a bloudie Masse or Cake. Come, as it
was gathered in Harvest time, was all bloudie,
and it rained blood in the further partes of Scot-
land, as the Scottish Chronicles doe make men-
tion.

649

Ambirkeleth, Nephew, or Son (as some say)
to Eugenius the first, reigned not fully two years.

716

The Histo-
ries of the
Kings lives
written.

Eugenius the seauenth, Brother to Ambirke-
leth, who caused the Histories of his Ancestours
lives to be written in Books and volumes, for ex-
ample to posterity, appointing these Monuments
to be carefully kept in the Abbay of Iona, now
called Colmekill; he reigned 17. yeares, and dy-
ed much lamented.

734

Mordacke, Nephew to Eugenius. In whose
time (according to venerable Bede) foure seuerall
people lived in peace and quietnesse within the
boundes of Albion, though differing in man-
ners, language, lawes, and ordinaunces: Sax-
ons, whom hee called English-men, Brittaines,
Scots, and Picts. In which time also, Bede con-
cluded his history, with the ending of King Mor-
dacks life.

762

Ethfinc, Son to Eugenius the seauenth, who
had

Of the Successe of Times. 455

had foure Gouvernores vnder him in his Realme:
Donald, Treasurer of Argile, Collane of Athol,
and Morlake of Galloway his Lieutenants, &
Conrath the Thane of Murreyland. He reigned
50. yeares.

Eugenius, the eight Son of King Mordacke, 767
three yeares.

Fergus the third, Son of King Ethfinc, three 769
yeares.

Soluathius, Son of Eugenius the eight, sixteen 788
ty yeares.

Achais, Sonne of King Ethfinc, in whose
time was a perpetuall league confirmed between
him and the Empero Charlemaigne of France.
And then had Hungus, the Pictish King, the vi-
sion of Saint Andrew and his Crosse, as is repo-
ted, whereby S. Andrew, became Patron both
of the Scots and Picts. This Achais reigned 32
yeares.

Conuall, the Brother of King Ethfinc, five 814
yeares.

Dongall, Sonne of King Soluathius, five 830.
yeares.

Alpine, the Sonne of King Achais, four 833
yeares.

Kenneth, the Sonne of Alpine. This is that
famous and renowned King, in whose time the
Pictish Nation were utterly destroyed, the Cit-
tie of Camelon cast downe, the Castle of Gai-
dens forsaken by the Picts, and none, or verie
few of them left living in Albion. Which hap-
pened after their first beginning to raigne there,

h 3

1173.

The viter
Inbursion
of the Picts.

Translation
of the Mar-
ble Stone.

1173. yeares; 1166. from the enterance of Fergusius; eight hundred thirty nine after our Saviours birth, and from the Worldes Creation, 4806. In memorie of this his famous victorie, King Kenneth brought the Marble Stone out of Argile (where till then it hadde bene kept) into Gourie, and placed it at Scone, nere to the place where he preuailed against the Picts. This roiall K. died in the yeare 856. hauing raigned 20. yeares in great renoune and glory.

860.

Donald, Brother to King Kenneth, died in the first yeare of his raigne, which was much mollified by the Danes, vnder Cadane King of Denmarke, pretending a Title to the Picts lands.

874

Constantine, the Sonne of King Kenneth, a very worthy and famous King, who redressed all disorders in his Land, appointing Priests to apply their vocation, and not to meddle with any secular businesse, going to warre, or keeping any Horses, Haukes, or Hounds. The youth of his land (to auoide wantonnesse and idlenesse) were appointed but one meale a day; and drunkennes, either in man or Woman, was punnished with death. He raigned 12. yeares.

A vertuous
King.

876.

Ethus, brother of Constantine, who was a man of such swiftnesse of foot, that he could match and make way in running, with Harts and Hounds. Whereupon he was fir-named Light-foot. He governed scarce two yeares.

891.

Gregory, the son of Dongall, that raigned before Alpine; in whose time liued Iohn Scot the famous Clerke. This Gregory raigned 18. yeares.

Do-

Donald the first, Sonne of Constantine the second, in whose time Gormond and his Danes were baptized, and Gormonds name was changed to Athelstane. He raigned almost 11. yeares. 903.

Constantine the third, Son of Ethus & Swift, 40. yeares. He gaue ouer his kingly dignity, and entred into Religion, as Hector Boetius affirmeth. 942.

Malcolme, the Sonne of Donald, 15. yeares. 959.

Iudulph, Sonne of Constantine the third, and prince of Cumberland, he raigned about 9. yeares. 968.

Duffe, the Sonne of King Malcolme, foure yeares. 972.

Culene, Prince of Cumberland, and Sonne of King Iudulph, raigned not fully fift yeares. 976.

Kenneth, Sonne to King Malcolme the first, 25. yeares. 1000.

Constantine, the Sonne of King Culene, not thre yeares. 1002.

Grime, Nephew to King Duffe, not fully nine yeares. 1010.

Malcolme the Son of Kenneth, and Prince of Cumberland, 25. yeares. 1034.

Duncane, Nephew to Malcolme, 6. yeares. 1046.
In his time was Banquho Thaine of Lochquaher; of whō the house of the Stuarts is descended, euen to his Maiesty now raigning. And then was England deuided, betwene Canutus King of Denmarke, and Edmund Ironside, after a valiant Combate fought betwene them.

Mackbeth, son to Sinell, Thaine of Glamis, raigned 17. yeares. 1057.

Wh 4

Mal-

1092
Thaines
were as Ba-
rons.

Malcolme Cammore, Sonns of King Dun-
cane, hee changed the name of * Thaines into
Carls, being then the first that euer were among
the Scots, according to their owne Histories. At
this time did William the Bastard, duke of Nor-
mandy, make his Conquest of England. This
King Malcolme reigned 36. yeares. And after
some difference for the Crown betwene Donald
Bane, Brother to King Malcolme, and Duncane
a Bastard Son to King Malcolme (which usur-
pation continued for the space of three yeares) Ed-
gar the rightfull Prince attayned to his due
claime.

1101

Edgar, Son to King Malcolme, was the first
that euer was annointed King in Scotland: now
was the generall passage to the Holy land, vnder
Godfrey of Bullen, and many other Christian
Princes. This King Edgar reigned nine yeares.

1109

Alexander, Brother to Edgar, being sir-named
Alexander the fierce, for his stearne valiancy in
pursuing Thæurs and Robbers. Dauid, Bro-
ther to King Alexander, being in England, mar-
ried Maude, Daughter to Waltheof, Earle of
Huntingdon and Northumberland, & (in right of
his wife) was made Earle of Huntingdon and
Northumberland, with inheritance of the lands
to them belonging. In this King Alexanders
time (who reigned 17. yeares compleate) the or-
der of the Knightes of Rhodes, being formerlie
Knightes of Saint Iohn of Hierusalem, tooke
beginning, and the order of the white Monkes.
Then liued also the Holy Man Richard de
sancto

The begin-
ning of the
Knightes of
Rhodes.

sancto Victore, being a Scot borne, but lyving
(the more part of his time at Paris in Fraunce)
where hee died, and lieth buried in the Abbey of
S. Victore, hee being a Brother of the same
house.

Dauid, Brother to Alexander, succeeded as
lawfull heire, and ruled 29. yeares, and two mo-
neths. It is recorded of this King, that he excel-
led in Noble Vertues, and sober conuersation of
life, being very pittifull to the poore, and some-
what ouer-bountifull to the Church. For when
King Iames the first, came to his Tomb at Dun-
firmling, he saide, That hee was a sore Saint for
the Crowne, leauing the Church ouer-rich, and
the Crowne too poore. He purged his Court so
cleane of al vicious behauiour, and disordered cu-
stomes, that it appeared to be a schole of vertue.
No riotous banquetting, sursetting cheare, or
lasciuious word could be herd there, or any wan-
ton signes, inhereby to kindle lust or idle concu-
piscence. All the words, workes, and whole be-
meano of his seruants, tended euer to some good
conclusion, farre from mouing strife, or a thought
of sedition: the Kings owne life and example, ser-
uing for their guide and direction. He builded 15
Abbeys (viz) Holy-Rood house, Kells, Jed-
burgh, Melrosse, Newbottell, Holmcultrane,
Dundranane, Cambuskenneth, Kinlois, Dun-
firmling, Holme in Cumberland. Also two Hun-
neries, one at Carleill, and the other at Forthe
Berwike; with two Abbeys beside New-Ca-
stle, one of S. Benedicts order, and the other of
white

1153

The vertu-
ous life and
raigne of K.
Dauid.

white Monks. He erected likewise foure Bishop-
pricks in his Realme Rosse, Brechin, Dunkeld, &
Dublane: endowing them with rich rents, faire
lands, and very commodious possessions.

1165

Malcolme, Sur-named Malcolme the Paid,
because his conuersation & delight (both in minde
and body) was so chaste from his verie infancie,
that he liued single al his daies, and without ma-
riage. Hee was Son to Prince Henry, that was
sonne and heire to King David, and raigned not
fully twelue yeares.

1174

William, Brother to King Malcolme, and for
his singuler Justice Sur-named the Lyon. In
this kings time, Richard King of England, sur-
named Cueur de Lyon, went his voyage to the
Holy-Lande: King William raigned nine and
forty yeares.

1149

Alexander the second, Sonne to King Willi-
am the Lyon, who caused his fathers death to
be mourned for thow his whole kingdom: hee
raigned 35. yeares.

1190

Alexander the third, sonne to the former King
Alexander, in whose time was a generall Coun-
sell at Lyons in France. He raigned 42. yeares,
and by reason of his dying without any issue, the
controuersie betweene Iohn Ballioll, and Robert
Bruse then happened: which was heard and cen-
sured by Edward the first, king of England, albe-
it they maintained both their claimes, vpon their
Titles seuerally, Ballioll descending of Marga-
ret, eldest Daughter to David, Earle of Hun-
tington, Brother vnto William the Lyon; and

The seuerall
claimes of
Iohn Ballioll,
and Robert
Bruse,

Bruse

Bruse comming of Isabell, second daughter of the
saide Earle David, and the next heire male to
William the Lyon, for want of succession in the
right line. By which Title (how euer Ballioll is
saide to be crowned King) Robert Bruse inioyed
the royal dignitie, in the year, 1305. He had issue,
David, that left no posterity, and Margery, ma-
ried to Walter, Greate Steward of Scotland,
(descended lineallie from the Princes of Wales,
by Nest, Daughter to Griffith ap Llewelyn,
Mother to V Walter, the sonne of Fleance, made
Greate Steward of Scotland by Malcolme the
fourth.) Of whom came Robert the second, first
of the sur-name of Stuart, that bare dominion in
Scotland.

Robert Stuart, being called Robert the second,
was crowned King with Royall solemnitie at
Scone, in the 47. yeare of his age, on the Annun-
tiation day of our Lady in Lent, 1370. he raigned
ten yeares. It is recorded of this K. Robert the 2.
that his Captaines & commanders were alwayes
fortunat in war, neuer returning but with spoils
and victories. He was a Prince of such constancy
in promise, that he seldome spake the word which
hee not performed. Such an obseruer of Justice
was he also, that he would not remoue from any
place; but Proclamation was first made, that if
any of his men or officers did take any thing un-
paid for: the partie to whome the debt was due,
should come in, and immediatelie satisfied; he wil-
linglie heard the complaints of the poore, and was
as diligent in seeing their wrongs redressed.

1270

The first
comming
of the Stu-
arts to the
Crown,

Iohn

1390

The Kings
name chan-
ged.

John Stuart, Earle of Carrike, and sonne to King Robert before named, was crowned king: but because John was iudged to bee an vnfortunate name for kings, they changed it, and called him Robert, after his ffathers name, and so hee was King Robert the third. Then was the first creation of Dukes in Scotland, for the king made his eldest Sonne Dauid, Duke of Rothsay, and his Brother Robert, Duke of Albanie; yet neither of these sonnes succeeded their father, but another son, who was named Iames. This King Robert reigned 16. yeares.

1424

Iames, Sonne to King Robert, succeeded his Father in the kingdomes of Scotland: his Quēn was deliuered of two Sonnes at a birth, named Alexander and Iames; Alexander dyed in his infancy, but Iames liued, and succeeded bys ffather. This King Iames the first, reigned thirtene yeares. Of whom it is writton, that he was a very seuer and vpight Justicer, yet so milde and swete of nature, that not any of their Princes did more reuerently embrace peace at home among his subiects, or more willingly conclude it abroad with strangers, then he. His Wisedome appeared so manifestly, in many very great and especiall affaires, that Kinges of other Nations did louingly ioyne in league and friendship with him. He had bin so wel educated in all Sciences and Gentlemanly actiuitie, by the carefull diligence of the best Schoole-maisters, that it coulde not be easily iudged, in which hee was most perfect: for hee was an excellent Musitian, a rare Poet,

Poet, a most elequent Orator, & so exactly (both in minde and memory he comprehended & depth of Diuinity and Lawe) that for all these (in his time) he gaue not place to any one. Lastly, he was not onely a beauty to his Countrey, in providing his peoples quiet at home, but fought also for their defence against their enemies abroad. The inuention of Gunnes happened in his time, and he caused diuers pieces of Artillery to be made in Flanders, one of which being a great and goodly piece, he called the Lyon, whereon these verses he caused to be engrauen.

The inuen-
tion of guns
in this kings
time.

*Ilustri Iacobo Scotorum Principi digno,
Regi magnifico, dum fulmine castra reduce,
Factus sum subito, nuncuper ergo Leo.*

Iames the second, son to King Iames the first, being but six yeares olde, succeeded his ffather in the Crown, and was the 103. King of Scotland from Fergusius the first. In this Kings time was the famous Art of Printing inuented, in the City of Mentz in Germany. This King reigned 24. yeares, & among his Subiects in the Camp, hee carried himselfe so gently towards all men, that they seemed not to feare him as their King, but reuerenced and loued him like a father. Hee would ride vp and downe amongst them, and eat and drinke with them, euen as if hee had bin fellow-like with the meanest.

1436.

The Arte of
Printing
found out.

Iames the third, Sonne to King Iames the second, being but seauen yeares of age, succeeded his Father

1461

father in the kingdome, and raigned 29. yeares.

1488. James the fourth, son to King James the third, was crowned King of Scotland, the 24. day of June, 1488. he being then aged xvi. yeares. This King James the fourth, married the Princesse Margaret, eldest Daughter unto Henry the seventh, King of England, and raigned five and twenty yeares, deserving to be ranked and numbered amongst the best princes that euer there gouerned, for his politicke rule, and administration of Justice.

King James married the eldest daughter to Henry 7. King of England.

1513

James the fifth, being a Child, aged one yeare, five moneths, and ten daies, and sonne to King James the fourth, was Crowned King of Scotland, the one and twentieth day of September, 1513. his Mother the Queene being appoynted Regent of the Realme. This King raigned 32. yeares, being an obseruice of Justice, a defender of the Law, and a sound shield for the poore and innocent, in which regard (of his Nobility) hee was called King of the Commoners. He would set at libertie the poore oppressed with the tyranny of the rich, and repress the rich from spoiling the poore. All which he did with a kinde of scueritie, but yet in such sort, as therein appeared a wonderfull gentlenesse in his naturall disposition: because he seldom did put any of them to death, but did eyther by imprisonment, or mulct, punish the offence. For it was his vsuall saying, That he would neuer take life from any, but onelie to keepe the Lawe sound, for example to others, and to keepe downe their boldnesse, that dwelt about

about the borders. His death was great lamented of his subiects, to whom he was a perfect Patron, and a louing Father.

Mary, Daughter and heire to King James the fifth, began her raigne ouer Scotland, the 18. of December, 1542. She was but seauen daies old when the King her Father died, and left her his kingdome, his mother then lying in child-bed, in the Castle of Lithquo, of which place the Lord Leuingston being then Captaine, had the charge both of mother and daughter committed to him, with the mothers good liking, & free consent. This Mary married Frances the Dolphin of France, who after his fathers death was King of France: but King Frances dying, Mary Qu. of Scotland, Mary Dow. and Dowager of France, returned home againe ager of France re- into Scotland, where his Mother had bin Regent al the time of his absence, I meane untill the 1. of June, 1560. on which day the Queen Mother of Scotland died. Afterward, Mary Q. of Scots married Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley, Earl of Rosse, Duke of Albanie, & son to the Earle of Lennox, who was proclaimed King at the Market Crosse in Edinburgh, the 28. of July, 1564. and on the tenth of February, 1566. he was made Knight of the Order of S. Michael, in the Chappel of Holyrood house, with great reuerence and solemnitie. In the month of June next following, the 19. day, and between the houres of 11. and 12. before none, Quene Mary was deliuered of a goodlie young Prince, who afterwarde was crowned King of Scotland, by the name of James the sixth.

1542

Mary Dow. ager of France re- turneth backe into Scotland.

James

1567

James the ſixt, Sonne to King Henry and M. Mary, being about a yeare old, began his raigne ouer Scotland, and was crowned King thereof, the 19. of July, 1567. Hee ſucceeded alſo in his rightfull inheritance of the Crowne of England, (after the deceaſe of Queen Elizabeth, of famous memory) the 24. day of March, 1602. gloriouſly uniting thoſe kingdomes in one, which formerly (by Brute) had bin long time deuided.



¶ Of the Iſland of Albion, before Brutes arrivall there, and tearming it Brittain, after his owne name; Alſo, what Kinges raigned there before he came thither.

¶ To the Worſhipfull, Maſter William Dios, Eſquire, Remembrauncer of the Honourable City of London.

Geog. Com.
lib. Berof. ant
Lib. 1.



Whether this Lande were peopled before the flood or no, it is no part of my purpoſe to argue heere thereon, albeit Dominicus Marius Niger, and Beroſus do affirme, that well as this Iſlande was inhabited with people, long before the dayes of Noah, as any other Countrey or part of the world beſide.

beſide. But after the flood, according to Anniius de Viterbo, Beroſus and others, when Noah deuided the earth among his three Sonnes, that part which is now knowne by the name of Aſia, fell to the lot of his eldeſt Sonne Sem; Affrica to his ſecond Sonne Cham; and Europe (withall the Iſles thereto appertaining) to his third Son Iaphet, among which, this Iſland (now called Brittain; with other Iſles thereto belonging) was certainly numbred. Iaphet, Noahs third Sonne (by ſome called Iapetus; by others, Atlas Maurus, becauſe hee died in Mauritania) in the iudgement of Bodinus, auouching the conſent and authority of the Hebrew, Greeke, and Latine Writers, was the firſt that peopled the Countries of Europe, deuiding it alſo (by the Grand-fathers example) among his Sonnes, of whom Tuball (according to Tarapha) had the rule of Spaine, Gomer the Italians, and Samoths was the founder of Celtica, which contained in it (as Bale teſtifieth) a great part of Europe, but eſpecially thoſe Countries now called Gallia and Britannia, which peopling of this Iſland (by Iaphets Children) is affirmed to be 200 yeares after the flood.

Samoths, being the firſt Sonne of Iaphet, and called (by Moſes) Meſech, by others, Dis; had for his portion (as Wolfangus Lazius auoucheth) the Countrey betwene the Riuer of Rhine, & the Pyrenean Mountaines, where hee founded the kingdom of Celtica. tearming his people Celæ: which name was as indifferent to them of Gallia,

Anniius de
Viter. in Cō-
ment. ſup. 4.
Lib. Berof.
de ant. Lib. 1

Iohannes Bo-
din ad ſect.
hiſt. cogn.

Franciſcus
Tarapha.

Samoths,
firſt King of
Celtica.
Wolfang.
Lazius de-
migr. gen.

as to the Inhabitanes of the Isle of Britaine. This King Samothēs, is reported to bee a Man excellling all other (in that age) in learning and knowledg, & that (at him) the arose a sect of Philosophers, both in Britaine & Gallia, which were cald Samothēi, & as Ariltotle and Secion do say, were surpassing, both in the Law of God & man, and therefore greatly addicted to religion: especially them of Britaine, which not onely made the whole nation to take name of them, but, as Bale and Doctor Caius affirme, the Island it selfe was named Samothea, which was the first peculiar name it had, before the arrivall of Albion.

Lib. de Magic. succ. ff. Lib. 22.

De ant. Cāt. cent. Lib. 1. Script. Brit. cent. 1. Magus second King.

Magus, the Sonne of Samothēs, was second King of Celtica after his Father. This Magus was likewise so famous for his learning, that the Persians Magi, or Divines, are said to come of him.

Sarron third King.

Sarron, succeeded his Father Magus, in the Countrey of Gallia, and the Isle Samothea, of whom Diodorus Siculus reporteth, that a sect of Philosophers descended among the Celtes, who were called Sarronides.

Druis 4. K.

Druis, or (after Seneca) Dryus, raigned after his Father Sarron, indifferently over the Celtes and Samotheans. Of him came the Philosophers, called Druides, whom Caesar anoucheth, to have the charge of common and private sacrifices, the discussing of pointes of Religion, the education of youth, the determining of matters in variance, and full power to interdict so many from the sacrifices to their Gods, and societie of men,

De bellis Gallicis. Lib. 9. & Lib. 6.

as

as disobeyed their award. If any doubt arose in the Countreies, about matters of Discipline; they alwayes resorted to these Druides, who, (as Humphrey Llloyd witnesseth) made theyr chiefe abode in the Isle now called Anglesey, and there (at all times) received their resolution.

Ani. Lib. 5

Bardus, the Sonne of Druis, was the fifth King over the Celtes and Samotheans: a man much renowned for invention of Musique and Ditties, and he made an order of Philosophicall Poets, or Herauldes, calling them Bardi, after his owne name. Of these Bardi, Nonnius; Strabo, Diodorus, Stephanus. Bale, and Sir John Price doe thus record. That they used to Register the noble exploits of auncient Captaines, and to draw the pedegrasses and Genealogies of such as were living. They did so excell, in singing swete Songes and Ditties to theyr Harpes, that, if two Armies had bene ready to joyne battaile, and any one of these Bards (by fortune) entred among them; they had not the power to strike, untill he left singing, and went from the Armies.

Bardus fifth King.

When Bardus was deceased, the Celts began to affect liberty, and (adding themselves to pleasure and volensse) would live no longer under the strict orders of their auncient Kinges: which brought them the sooner under subiection to the Gyant Albion, who straited Celtica and the Celtes, within the boundes of Gallia, tearing this Island (formerly called

The Celtes subiect by Albion the Gyant.

Samotheca) Albion, according to his owne name; and subdued the people; albeit the Title of Samotheans (according to the iudgement of diuers Writers) had continued from Samothec to Albion, the space of 310. yeares. This Albion was the fourth Sonne of Neptune, whom Moyſes calleth Nepthuin, and who did put his ſaid ſon in poſſeſſion of this Iſland, by conquering the Samotheans, as he did the like to his other Sonne, named Bergion, in Ireland and the Orkenies, which were brought vnder his obeſſance. Concerning the Hiſtozie of Hercules Lybicus, (whom Moyſes nameth Laabin) his Conqueſts in Spaine, his paſſage into Italy againſt Leſtrigo, and laſtly his killing Albion and his Brother Bergion; it being nothing incident to my preſent purpoſe, I leaue it. Alſo the ſtoze of Danaus Daughters, being fifty in number, that they ſhould arrive in this Iſland (after the ſlaughter of their Huſbandes, the fifty Sonnes of King Egyptus) and that one of thoſe Ladies ſhould bee named Albina, of whom this Land ſhould bee called Albion: I paſſe it over likewiſe, and will now procede to the knowne Hiſtoze of Brute. Yet not daring to enter into ſo rich a Mine of hidden treaſure, till being guided by the Light of Brittain (the learned labour of a worthy Gentleman and Antiquarie, Maſter Henry Lyte of Lyteſcarie, Eſquire, and which (with his owne hand) hee preſented to our late Soueraigne Quene and matchleſſe Miſtreſſe, on the day when ſhee came in royall manner to Pauls Church

Bergion ruled in Ireland.

(Church) I be guided therein for my better direction, using his owne words.

The Light of Britaine.



Britannia Maior (the Countrey of the bright Britona, called Britomartis, the preſident of Britaine) that is to ſay, the chaſt Diana of Calydonia ſylua: *Aſtrorum decus; Sylvarum dea; caſta et innupta; cuſtos, et cultrix nemorum; metuenda Virago; terror ſylveſtribus apriſ.* This Britannia maior, was firſt found by Brute of Albania; the Conqueror of the Grecks; the mightie deliuerer of the Troyans, and firſt founder of the Noble Britaines. Who by the Oracle of the bright Britona, called Diana of Calydonia ſylua (*Aſtrorum decus*) brought the remaines of the Albanian Troyans of Aſia, from Albania Calydonia ſylua, & Aetolia in Greece; to Albania Calydonia ſylua, and Aetolia in Britaine. Before whoſe moſt happy and fortunate arrivall, there was neither Towne, Citie, Countrey, River, Region, or place of name in Britannia: for Britannia (at Brutes arrivall) was no Britannia, but a rude and ſolitary Deſert or wildeerneſſe, without name, *Ferarum altrix*, a beie nursery or place of ſtoze for wilde Beaſtes. The Countries and Regions of Britayne, were then all over-grown with Woodes, replenished with all kindnes of ſavage and cruell beaſts; as Lyons, Beares, Wolves, Foxes, wild Boares,

Britania of Britona, and Britomartis

Diana Britonas Oracle.

Albania. Calydonia. Aetolia.

Britannia a Wilderneſſe. *Ferarum altrix.*

Wilde Bulls
and Kine.

and all other game belonging to the Chase. Beside diuers other kind of wilde Beastes and Cattell; especially a certaine kinde of white monstrous wilde Bulls and Kine, with long shagge curled haire and maines, which kind of Cattell were as fierce and cruell, as Lyons, and could neuer be tamed by mans art; as you may finde it registered and recorded in our ancient Chronicles, and noted in the very common Dictionaries, vpon these wordes Caledonia, and Caledonia sylua Britannia, alwayes mistaken, and corruptly written Caledonia, for Calydonia: because the reason why our Countrey was first called Caledonia sylua, was no better knowne to the auncient Romaines in Iulius Cæsars time, then it is (at this day) knowne to owners of our Antiquaries and Chronicles of Britayne. For one describeth Caledonia sylua, from Calden, and another fetcheth Calydonia sylua, from Kaled: But the ones faire Daughter Kaled, is too young to be the Mother of Calydon, or Calydonia sylua Britannia; And the others Calden, or Hazell-sicke, is as weake to be the Mother of Calydon.

Calydon
was the son
of Etolus.
Mars the fa-
ther of Etolus,
Parthaon &
Britona.

For Calydon, of whom Calydonia sylua, by Etolia in Greece tooke name, was the Sonne of Etolus, who was the Sonne of Mars, the God or Patron of battaile. Mars was the father of Etolus, of Parthaon, & of the bright Britona called Britomaris, the president of Britayne.

Etolus, the Sonne of Mars, and Brother to bright Britona, was father of Calydon, of whom Calydonia sylua, by Etolia in Greece, (Mother

(Mother of our Calydonia sylua, the generall name of all Britayne) tooke name: but especially of Calydonia sylua secunda, which is Scotland, called Britannia secunda. In which part of Britaine, at this day, is the most ancient Towne of Parthaon, now called Perth; and Saint Johns Towne, the principall Towne of Etolia, now called Atholl, a Region or Countrey of Britania, Albania, or Calydonia sylua secunda, where the great Calydon Wood, which beghineth at Striueling (called the Dolorus Mount) runneth forth thorough Mentieth and Stratherne, to Etolia (that fruitfull Region of Grampius Mount) which reacheth to Lochquhaber, and to Calydonium Promontorium, which is Cathnesse or Orcha, the angle, point, cape, foreland or land end of Scotland.

Parthaon,
now Perth
in Actolia.
Actolia,
now Athol.

Cal deniu
Cathnesse.

This Calydonia sylua Erytannia, was the daughter of Calidonia sylua, by Etolia in Greece Calydon, who tooke his originall from Calydon the Sonne of Etolus. Etolia, now called Atholl in Britayne, is the Daughter of Etolia, a City of Albania, and Calydonia sylua in Greece, so called of Etolus the Sonne of Mars. Parthaon, now called Perth, or Saint Johns Towne, the principall Towne of Etolia in Scotland, tooke his glorious name of Parthaon, the Brother to bright Britona, called Britomaris, the president of Britayne: Of whome, all Britannia (containing all the Countries and Regions of England, Scotland, Wales, and Cornwall, called by Alexander Necham, in his book De diuina sapientia,

Parthaon.

Bruti (thus) took the most glorious name of Britaine.

Britannia of
Britona.

Albania of
Albania.

For Brute of Albania, the Founder of Britaine, came to this Isle by the Oracle of Britona, called Diana of Calydonia sylva; therefore hee called this Isle of Britannia, of the bright Britana, &c. The same Brute also, who was borne in Albania, bannished to Albania, and the first founder of Britayne called Albania; called all our Countrey of Britayne, Albion, seu Albania: not of the White Rocks and Cliftes, as some men suppose, but of Albania in Asia, and Albania Epiri in Greece, the Countrey of Helenus and Andromache, Quene of Albania Epiri, from whence, Brute of Albania brought the Albanian Trojans, the founders of Britayne.

Chronicles
and written
Records of
Brute.

To approue what formerly hath bene sayde, without any neede of repetition, we haue a multitude of most glorious Records and Chronicles, written and printed, confirmed by the Testimony of Iulius Caesar, by Pope Eleutherius; by a Parliament holden at Northampton Twede; and another at Lincolne, in the time of King Edward the first, who, by his Letters sent from Lyncolne to Pope Boniface, dooth approue Brutes Historie to bee no fable: as some Criticks of our time haue done, who will not beleeue our ancient written Records, although confirmed by Emperors, Kings, Popes, and Parliamentes, neyther the Testimony of Strangers. Wherefore, by the Oracle of Diana, called Briomartis, the President of Britayne,
and

and by the Oracle of Diana Lucifera, that is to say, Venus, called Bosphorus, the bright Quene of Phrygia, and Caria, Mother of Eneas, and the Graces, of whom came Brute of Albania, founder of Britaine, who brought in Carus, a Noble Prince of Lydia and Caria, with the people of Caria, and Swannes of Carie in Britaine: By the Oracles aforesaid, the Swans of Carie in Britaine, are now stirred vp to maintain the verity of the Brittish History. The Goddess of the Gentiles, whose Temples our fore-fathers (of the Trojan race) erected in diuers Countries and regions of Britaine: especially at Troia-noua, now called London in Britaine, where the Troynouants did sometimes sacrifice Bulls, Bullocks, and Stags, to Diana Tauropolia, whome the Gentiles called the Quene of Heauen: whych was the same Diana, called Bellona, whome the Brigantes honoured at Yorke, Brigantium Ciuitas. And what were these Brigantes, I pray you? Herodian saith, that the Briges, Phryges, and Brigantes were all one. Whereupon I conclude, that the Brigantes, that is to say, our Northerne Britaines, were Phrygian Trojans. The Brigantes of Britaine, are the people of Yorkshire, Richmondshire, Lancashire, Durham, westmerland and Cumberland, hard to the Pictes Wall, where the Abij and Picti Agathyrfi dwell, about Abus Aestuariū, now called Humber. And what were these Abij, but Albanian Trojans, that came also from Abus, a Miner of Albania Epiri? And the auncient Brittaines, called Picti Agathyrfi

Dianas
Temple at
Troia noua

Diana Tauropolia,
Theontea
Dea.

Diana Bellona of
Yorke.

Briges.
Phryges.
Brigantes.

Abus Aestuariū.

by Alba-
ni Agathyrs

thyrsi, what were they? Euen Scythian Troy-
ans of Albania, who sprang of Scythes and Aga-
thyrsus, the Sonnes of Hercules, that sometime
raigned in Troy: for the famous Cittie of Troy
in Phrygia, the head of all Asia, was in Scythia.

Troians,
called Tau-
rini, & Tau-
roschyti.

The noble Troyans were called Taurini, and
Tauroschyti, of a famous mountaine of Asia, cal-
led Taurus Mount, which runneth thorough all

Taurus the
manshon of
Venus.

Asia; a great part of the Mountain Taurus end-
eth in Caria. which is a countrey of Asia belong-
ing to Troy. Venus, called Bosphorus, the mother
of Eneas and the Graces (of whome came Brute
of Albania, the founder of Britaine) was Queen
of Phrygia and Caria. The famous River of
Mxander is in Caria, which river hath Golden
sands and singing Swannes, that sometime ser-
ued Venus, Queen of Phrygia and Caria: where-
fore the Swans of Caria, and Signets of Troy
in Britaine, must alwayes sing of Troy & Troy-
ans. The daughters of heauen and earth, Isis,

Rivers of
Britaine, are
Records of
Brute.

Themis, Rhea, Thetis, Abus, Arius, Alanus, Ax,
Tameres, and all our famous Rivers of Britain,
with the Deucalion Sea, and Ilandes of Brit-
taine, especially Archadia, Aemonia, & Arachne
are glorious records of Brute and the Troyans,
the founders of Britaine. Diuers our most an-
cient Citties and Townes of Britaine, as Oxford
vpon Isis and Themis, Troia-noua vpon Isis,
Themis, and Rhea Albanorum; Yorke, Bri-
gantium ciuitas; Antandros, turned to S. An-
dros; Parthaon, Perthe, turned to Saynt Johns
Town, Albanum ciuitas, turned to S. Albanes,

Towns and
Citties, Re-
cordes of
Brute.

Chester

Chester, and Doriscestria, with the ancient
Townes of Derby and Leicester; and Tyanton
vpon Tamares River of Britaine, with diuers
other Townes and Citties of Britaine, are Re-
cordes of Brute and the Troyans, founders of
Britaine.

The diuers Nations and people of Britaine,
as the Troy-nouants, Brigantes, Scotobrigan-
tes, the people of Albania, Calydonia, and Acto-
lia; the Iberi, the Albani, and Georgij, the peo-
ple of Derby and Leycester, the people of Che-
ster, that came from Cestria Epiri, with the
Dores, Ioues, and Cares, and the Tamarites of
Tyanton, commonly called Tanton: All these
are Records of the noble people of Grece and
Asia, the remaines of the Troyans that came in-
to Britaine with Brute.

Diuers Na-
tions and
people of
Britain, Re-
cordes of
Brute.

To these, adde a Catalogue or Register, of the
ancient Princes, Noblemen, and Gentlemen of
Britaine, whereof there are some remaining to
this verie day, beginne wee then thus. Brute,
Corineus, Locrine, Camber, Albanacte, Ma-
dan, Mempricius, Ebranke, and his twentie
Sonnes, Brute Greensheild, Assaracus, and
Cecilius, &c. Belinus and Brennus, Cambra, or
Cambria, Antenors Wife, Cambra, Belinus
Daughter, Conidagus King of Albania, Netue
Morgan at Glammorgan, Conidagus builded a
Temple of Minerva at Bangor in Wales, & the
temple of Mars at Parthaon, now S. Johns town
of Actolia in Scotland. Aruiragus, in whose
dayes

Princes, No-
blemen, and
Gentlemen
Records of
Brute.

dayes, a Ioseph of Aramithia, preached in Brit-
taine. Leile, Androgeus, Brother to Cassibela-
nus; this Androgeus let Iulius Caesar into Brit-
taine. Pirhus, Alexander Arcadius, Alexander
Audax, Achaius, Etolus, Helena, Coile, Con-
stantine; Graye, Persie, Dercie, Carie, Busir,
or Boufir, Cicell, Cydne, Dennis, Bridgis, An-
dros, Carowe, Caros, Tracie, Rhese ap Rhesus;
Oen, or Owen, King of Calydon, Brent the son
of Hercules. Thinn, Euance, Bryce, Hil, Drake,
Calais, Nele, Gryne, Dorill, Hodie, Crane, &c.
These and infinite more beside, whiche Brute
brought with him from the Countreies of Isis and
Themis, and from Albania, Calydonia Sylua,
and Etolia in Greece, to Albania, Calydonia
Sylua, and Etolia in Britaine, are vndoubted re-
cords of him and the Troyans, Founders of Bri-
taine.

Thus much out of Maister Lytes Light of
Brittaine, which worthy Gentleman being de-
ceased, his son Maister Thomas Lyte, of Lytel-
carie, Esquire, a true imitator and heire to his
fathers Vertues, hath (not long since) presen-
ted the Maiesty of King Iames, with an excellent
Mappe or Genealogicall Table (contayning the
bredth and circumference of twenty large sheets
of paper) which he entitleth Brittaines Monar-
chy, approuing Brutes History, and the whole
succession of this our Nation, from the very Ori-
ginal, with the iust obseruation of all times, chan-
ges and occasions therein happening. This wor-
thy worke, having cost aboute seauen yeares la-
bour,

bour, beside great charges and expence, his high-
nesse hath made very gracious acceptance of, and
to witnesse the same, in Court it hangeth in an es-
peciall place of eminence. Pity it is, that this
Phoenix (as yet) affordeth not a fellowe, or that
from priuacie, it might not bee made more gene-
rall: but, as his Maiesty hath graunted him pri-
uiledge, so, that the world might be woorthie to
enioy it, whereto, if friendship may preuaile, as
he hath bin already, so shall he be still as earnestly
solicited.

Brute, the sonne of Siluius, hauing unfortu-
nately slaine his father in hunting, as he shot his
Arrow at a Deare, was therefore bannished his
Countrey, wherupon he went into Greece, where
a great number of the Troyans (living before in
seruitude) resorted to him, and by his valour hee
gaue them liberty, by conquerring Pandrasus,
King of that Countrey, who was descended of the
poble Achilles. Hee compelled him also, to let
him haue his faire Daughter Innogen in marri-
age, with furniture, money, victuals, and ship-
ping, wherewith (after many hard aduentures)
passing along the Straits of Gibraltar, and coa-
sting along the shore on the right hand: hee met
with Corineus, and another company, that came
with him from Troy likewise with Antenor.
Joining then their powers together, they sayled
on, til arriuing within the riuers mouth of Loire,
which deuideth Aquitaine from Celtike Gallia,
(supposed to bee Gascoigne) they landed in the
Dominions of a King, called Goffarius, and
Burna

Brute slew
his Father
Siluius.

Brute met
with Cori-
neus.

Brutes resistance in Gallia.

Brutes landing in Albion.

The building of London.

The deuision of Brittain by Brute, to his sonnes.

Surnamed Pictus, by reason he was descended of the people of Agathyrsi, who were other wise termed Picts. King Goffarius with his men dyd sharply resist these new commers, but sustayned the worst twice, & in the last conflict, Brutes nephew (named Turnus) was slaine; in whose memory Brute builded there a City, which (to this day) is called Tours in Touraigne. Departing thence, he and his traine came to the Isle of Brittain, and landed at the haven, now called Torneffe, Anno. 2855. and after the destruction of Troy 66. before the building of Rome, 368. years which was before our Saviours natiuity, 1116. almost ended. He found this land desolate, sauing a few Giants, who in short time were vanquished: so Corineus wastled with the strongest of them, named Gogmagog at a place beside Doner, where hee cast him headlong downe from one of the rockes in regard whereof, the place is called Gogmagogs Leap or fall. Brute builded London, calling it Troy-newydd, or Troia-noua. He begate on his wife Innogen, 3. sons, among whom he deuided his kingdome before his death. To Locrine, who was the eldest, hee gaue the middle part, calling it Loegria, or Loegiers. To Camber his second sonne, he gaue the west part of the Island, calling it Cambria or Cymbry, deuided from Loegria, by the riuer Seuerne. To his third son Albanaet, he gaue al the south part, entitling it Alban or Albania, according also to his name. To Corineus his dearest friende and companion, hee gaue that part

part of the Land, which (after him) to this day is called Corinwall. Lastly, when he had gouerned this land 24. yeares. Hee died and was buried at that new City which he had builded. Anno ante incarnat. Christi, 1132.

Locrine, after his father Brutes death, was king of Loegria, and Lord Paramount of the whole Island of Brittain. In his time, Humber or Humyr, King of the Hunnes entered into Albania, and slew Albanaet. But Locrine and Camber, to reuenge their brothers death, met in Arms with Humber, neere to an arme of the Sea, that parted Loegria and Albania: where killing him in the fight, they threw his body into the water, which in memory of his name, is yet called Humber. Locrine married Guendolen, Daughter to Corineus, but falling in loue with Estrilde, a strange Lady in King Humbers Camp: hee retracted his wife, which caused her to raise an army against him. In triall of that fight, Locrine was slaine, and Guendolen drowned Estrilde, with her Daughter Sabine, or Hauren, in the Riuer of Seuerne, so called after her name. Locrine reigned twenty yeares, and left a Sonne, named Madan.

Madan, sonne of Locrine and Guendolen, began his raigne ouer the Britons, an. mundi, 2909. He vsed great tyzanny among his people, & builded Madancastre, now called Dancaester. Having ruled this land 40. yeares, hee was deuoured of Wolves & other wild beasts, as he was abroad in hunting. He left 2. sons, Mempricius & Manlius.

The death of Albanaet

The death of k. Locrine

Madan deuoured by Wolves.

Mem-

2949

Memprici-
us deuou-
red by wild
beasts.

Mempricius, eldest sonne of Madan, succeeded his Father, and slew his Brother Manlius, for better confirmation of his gouernement. He fell into vnlawfull lusting after women, so that hee forced his peoples wiues and daughters: and albeit he had a wife and many Concubines, yet he vsed the abhominable Sinne of Sodome. So that becomming hatefull both to God and man, being one day lost of his people, as he was hunting, hee (as his father) was eaten of wilde beastes, after he had reigned 20. yeares.

2969

The build-
ing of York

Ebranke, sonne of Mempricius by his lawfull wife, succeeded in rule ouer the Britons. Hee had one and twenty wiues, on whom he begat twenty Sonnes, and thirty Daughters. He was the first Prince of this Land, that euer inuaded Gallia, now called France, from whence he returned with great riches and triumph. Hee builded the Citty of Caerbranke now called Yorke, about the 14. yeare of his raigne: & in Albania or Scotland, hee builded also the Castle of Maidens, and the Cittie of Alclud. He gouerned Brittain very nobly forty yeares, and lieth buried at Caerbranke or Yorke.

3009

Brute Tarianlas, or Greeneshield, Sonne of Ebranke, succeeded his Father in the regiment of Brittain. Hee sought to bring all Gallia vnder his subiection, and (some do auouch) that hee performed it, albeit Brinchild gaue him a great foile in Henault. He reigned twelue yeares, and was buried by his father at Yorke.

3021

Leill, the sonne of Brute Greeneshield, reigned after

after his Father. He builded the Citty called Carleil, that is to say, Leill his Citty, or the Citty of Leill, and repaired also Carleon, now called Chester, which is saide to bee built before Brutes entrance into this land, by a Gyant named Leon Gaue. Leill reigned 25. yeares, and was buried at Carleil.

Lud, or Ludhurdibras, the Son of Leill, ruled Britaine after his Father. He builded the Citty of Kaerkin, now called Canterbury; the Citty of Caerguent, now called Winchester, and Mount Paladour, now called Shaftsbury: Aquila, a Prophet or Bardh of the British nation, wrote diuers Prophecies concerning the building of Shaftsbury. Lud reigned 29. yeares, and was buried at Canterbury.

Baldus, or Bladus, son of Lud-hurdibras, succeeded his Father in the rule of Brittain. Hee was skilfull in the Sciences of Astronomy and Pigromancy: he builded the Citty of Caerbran, now called Bath, and made there hot Bathes; though William of Malmsbury is of y^e mind that Iulius Caesar made those baths: which cannot bee so, because Iulius Caesar neuer went so farre that way into the Land. This Bladud was so proud of his art, that he would needs presume to fly in the aire: but hee fell on the Temple of Apollo in Troy-nouant, and was there torne in pieces, hauing reigned twenty yeares.

Leir, the Son of Bladud, followed his Father in Britaines gouernment, being a Prince of most Noble Nature, and gouerned his Subiectes very

B k

roial.

The building of Leir celler, on the River of Sore.

royally. He builded the Towne of Caerleir, now called Leircester. And because the Wiffoz of his three Daughters, Gonorill, Regan, & Cordeilla, with their severall marriages to Henuinus, Duke of Cornewall, Maglanus, Duke of Albania, and Agauippus prince of Gallia, is very wel known, and all the fortunes thereto belonging; I am the easier induced to passe it over, with all the troubles happening to King Leir, through his otone weaknesse. Leir reigned forty yeares, and was buried at Leircester.

3155

Cordeilla, youngest daughter to K. Leir, succeeded as Queen and Gouvernesse of Britain; but her two Nephewes, Cunedagius and Morgan, sons to hir, as unkind Sisters, made short hir time of government, after the decease of her Husband Aganippus. For they imprisoning her, and she being a Lady of unconquerable courage: griefe, and despaire of liberty, made her there to slay her selfe, after she had ruled five yeares.

3170
Britainc divided the second time

Cunedagius and Morgan, divided the whole land between them, after Cordeillas death. But enuy and covetous desire in either, to rule alone, raised them in armes against each other, & Morgan was slaine in Cambria by Cunedagius, and the place of his death is yet called Glan-Morgan, Morgans land, he not having reigned above two yeares with his Brother: who afterward builded three temples, one to Mars, at Perth in Scotland, another to Mercury, at Bangor in Cambria, and the third to Apollo in Cornwall. He reigned 33. yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant.

Cunedagius builded 3. Temples.

Riual-

Riuallus, Son of Cunedagius, next ruled Britaine, in whose time it rained blood 3. daies together, which blood engendered such multitudes of Hostilities, that many people were strung to death by them. In his time was the City of Rome builded: he reigned 46. yeares, & was buried at York.

3203.

The building of Rome.

3249

3287

Gurgustius, son of Riuallus, reigned 37. yeares. Syllius, or Cecilius, Brother of Gurgustius, 49. yeares.

Lago, or Lago, Cozin to Gurgustius, twenty eight yeares.

3336

Kinimacus, or Kinmarus, Son of Syllius, 54. yeares.

3364

Corbodug, Son of Kinimacus, 43. yeares, or (by some) 62. yeares.

3418

Ferrex and Porrex, Sons of Corbodug, reigned jointly, till ambition divided them, & Ferrex being slaine in battaile, the Mother of them both brought (afterward) the death of Porrex. After which, great troubles endured for the space of fifty yeares, for the sole Monarchie of this land became then a Pentarchie, as divided betwixt five Kinges or Rulers: And here ended the line of Brute.

3476.

The Pentarchie of five Kings.

The Pentarchy.

- | | | |
|--------------------|---------|-------------------|
| 1. Rudacus. | King of | Cambria or Wales. |
| 2. Cloton. | | Cornewall. |
| 3. Pinnor. | | Loegria. |
| 4. Staterus. | | Albania. |
| 5. Yewan, or Owen. | | Northumberland. |

kk 2

Mul-

3529

The building of Blackwell hall. Malmesbury and the vies builded. Mulmutius Lawes.

The 4 high waies of England. The beginning of lan- guary.

Waights & measures to buy and sell by.

3574

Britaine againe diuided.

Mulmutius Dunwallo, the Sonne of Cloton, who was allowed for most rightfull Heire, hee succeeded as Sole-Monarch of Britaine, after his Father. This Mulmutius builded a Temple in Troy-nouant, cald the Temple of Peace, which some do hold to be that ancient monument, called Blackwell-Hall. He builded also two Townes, Malmesbury and the Vies, and was the first king that was crowned with a Crowne of Gold. He made diuers good Lawes, which long time after were called Mulmutius lawes, being turned out of British into Latine, by Gildas Priscus, & (long time after) translated out of Latine into English, by Alfred K. of England, and mingled among his statutes. He began to make the foure great high waies of Britain, and gaue priueleges to Temples, Bloughes, Citties, & high waies leading to them, so that whosoever fled to them, should be in safety from bodily harme, and thence he might depart without prejudice to his person. In regard that he was the first king crowned with a golden Crowne, most writers giue him the name of the first King of Britaine. And among his other ordinances, he first appointed weights and measures whereby men should buy and sel, and deuised be- ry severe punishments for Theft. He reigned 40 yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant.

Brennus and Belinus, the Sonnes of Mulmutius, had (in their Fathers life time) the Land once more deuised betwene them: Belinus en- toyng Loegria, Wales, & Cornwall: and Bren- nus all the Countreies ouer and beyonde Hum- ber.

ber. But when Brennus grew couetous to exceed his portion, and sought to compasse it by forraine assistance, he was enforced to flight, and Belinus quietly seated in the whole possession. Then finished he the foure high waies of Britaine, which his Father had begunne, which were called, the Fosse, Watling-streete, Erming-streete, and Hiknel-streete, confirming to them the priue- ges which his Father had formerly granted. He builded the Hauen called Belines-gate, and a Belmes- Castle also Eastward from that Gate, called (long time after) Belines Castel, but is the same, which we now call the Tower of London: He reigned twenty six yeares, and was buried in Troy-nouant.

The names of the foure high waies of England.

The building of the Tower of London.

Gurguintus, the Son of Belinus, succeeded in Britaine after his Father. He subdued Denmark, and made them pay tribute to Brittain: In his daies was the Towne of Cambridge, with the University, first founded by Cantaber a Spany- ard, according to Caius. He reigned 19. yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant.

3596

The foundation of Cambridge.

Guintholinus, Sonne to Gurguintus, reigned after his Father, being married to a vertuous Lady, named Mertia, who deuised certaine Lawes, which afterward were tearmed Mercian Lawes. He ruled 27. yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant.

3614

Sicilus, Sonne to Guintholinus, reigned af- ter his Father, albeit hee was then but seauen yeares old, but his Mother Mertia had both the gouernment of his person, and of the Realme,

3657

488 A brieſe Chronicle

in which time theſe deuiled thoſe Lawes before mentioned. It is ſaide, that then the Brits arrived in Brittain, and poſſeſſed thoſe partes, which now are the Marches of England and Scotland: hee raigned ſeauen yeares, and was buried at Troy-nouant.

The arrival
of the Brits.

3663. Kimarus, Sonne of Sicilius, raigned three yeares.

3669 Elanias, Sonne of Kimarus, raigned ſeauen yeares.

3670 Morindus, Baſtard Son of Elanias; In his time came a wonderful Monſter out of the Iriſh Seas, that deſtroyed many people, and the King in fighting with the ſaid monſter, was deuoured by him: hauing raigned ſix yeares.

3676 Gorbouianus, firſt Sonne of Morindus, who builded the town of Grantham, raignd 10 yeares.

3686 Archigallus, Elidurus, Vigenius, and Peridurus, being all likewiſe the Sonnes of Morindus, raigned ſeuerally in Brittain, by great contentions, all their times ſcarcely reaching to 27 yeares, yet Elidurus was crowned King three times, each after other. But no ſooner died Elidurus (a King of moſt milde and princely nature) but there paſſed about 185 yeares, betwixt the ſaid Elidurus, and the beginning of King Luds raigne, in which time there raignd 33. Kings: of whoſe names and rule, Authours doe ſo diſagree, that I paſſe them over, and come to King Helic, who was the laſt of thoſe 33. Kings, who gave name to the Iſle of Elie, builded a goodly palace there, with reparations of the Sluces, Ditches, & Cau-

33. Kings
betwixt Eli-
durus and
Lud.

The Iſle of
Ely.

Of the ſucceſſe of Times. 489

ſes about the Iſle, for comapanance away of the water, yet he raignd not fully a yeare.

Lud, eldeſt ſon to King Helic, ſucceeded in Brittaines government. He enclosed Troy-nouant with a wall made of lime and ſtone, and fortiſied with diuers ſarre townes; building alſo a gate in the weſt part of the wall, which he cald Luds-gate. He erected likewiſe a goodly Palace, ſomewhat nere to Luds-gate, which is now the Biſhop of Londons Palace, and (in more affection to the City) hee altered the name thereof from Troy-nouant, & called it Caer-Lud, that is Luds Towne. ſince when, corruption hath teard it London. R. Lud raignd 11 yeares, & was buried nere Lud-gate. He left two ſons, named Androgeus & Tenancius, whoſe minority in yeares made them incapable of government.

Caffibalne, Brother to R. Lud, was admitted King of Britaine, or rather Ruler and Protector of the Land, during his nephewes nonage. In the 8. yeare of his raigns, Iulius Cæſar (with his Romans) came into Britain, who being wearied (at firſt) with a ſharp battell, & (after that) his navy well-nere deſtroyed by a ſudden tempeſt; hee returned back into Gallia or France. But ſhort ſpring (being the year before Chriſt 51.) he croſſed the ſeas againe with a greater army, and compelled Caffibalne to conſent, that Brittain ſhould become tributary to the Romans. Then raignd foure Kings in Kent, Cingetorix, Taximagulus, Caruilis, & Segonax, all whoſe power could not withſtand Cæſar: whoſe preuailling thus in Brit-

3605

Luds-gate.

Troy-nouant altered
to Luds
Towne.

3608

The Romans
coming
into Britain
with Cæſar.

Four Kings
in Kent.

R. R. 4

tainc,

taine, was Anno mundi, 3913. and after Brute, 1060. Cassibelane reigned 17. yeares.

3911

Tenantius, Luds youngest Sonne, succeeded as lawfull King of Brittain, because his Brother Androgeus had assisted Caesar, against Cassibelane: He reigned 23. yeares, and was buried at London.

3944

Kymbeline, or Cimbeline, Son to Tenantius, succeeded after his fathers decease. In his time was the Saviour of the World, our Lord Jesus Christ, borne of the ever-blessed virgine Marie: Kymbeline reigned 35. yeares.

The birth of
Jesus Christ

The year of
Christ

17

Guiderus
slaine at
Portchester.

Guiderus, eldest Sonne to Kymbeline, was King of Britaine, in the yeare of our Lord after his incarnation 17. Hee, iudging the Romaines tribute to be uniuert, denied to pay it. This Guiderus was slaine at Portchester, valiantly resisting against Claudius & his Romaines, where one Hamo, who was on the Romans side, attired himselfe like a Brittain, changed his shield and armour, and so entering the thickest of the British host, came at last where the King was, and so slew him. But Aruiragus, Brother to Guiderus, perceiuing this villainy, caused himself presently to be clad in the kings coat, armour, and other furniture, whereby the kings death was scarcely discerned. He renewed the fight with such vndaunted courage, y^e Claudius was beat backe to his ships, & Hamo to the next adioyning Woods, whether Aruiragus pursued him, and slew him ere he could get off the haven, casting him peece-meal into the sea, which Haven (in memory of his name) was ever after called

called Hamans Haven, afterward by corruption) How South Hampton Haven, and now (at this day) commonly called Southampton. Guiderius reigned 23. or (after others) 29. yeares.

Aruiragus, youngest Sonne to Kymbeline, succeeded his Brother, as King of Brittain. In his time, Vespasian came into Britaine, landing at Sandwich or Richborough. Also, about the yeare of Christ, 53. and while this Aruiragus reigned, Ioseph of Arimathia was sent by Philip the Apostle into Brittain: and one Simon Zelotes came then thither also. When began Brittain to be gouerned by Romaine Lieutenantes and Treasurers. Aruiragus reigned 28. yeares, dyed in the yeare of Grace, 73. and was buried at Gloucester.

46

Ioseph of
Arimathia
came into
Brittain.

Brittain go-
uerned by
Romaine
Deputies.

Marius, Sonne of Aruiragus, succeeded his father in the State, and then came the Picts, with Roderick their King, into this land: but Roderick was slaine by Marius, and his people vanquished. In memory of which victory against the Picts, Marius erected a Stone, where the battell was fought, whercon was engraven Marij victoria. The Stone was set vpon Stanefmoore, and the whole Country thereabout, taking name of this Marius, was also Westmaria, now Westmerland. Marius reigned 53. yeares, and was buried at Carleill.

73

The Picts
comming
into Brittain

Westmaria,
Westmer-
land.

Coilus, Sonne of Marius, was (after his fathers death) King of Brittain, hauing bin educated among the Romaines, which made him pay them the tribute all the time of his raigne. Hee builded

125

Colchester
builded.

builded the Colone of Colichester in Essex, now
called Colchester: he reigned 55. yeares, depar-
ted this life at Yorke, and lieth there buried, as
some say, but others, at Colichester.

169

Lucius, sonne of Cossus, succeeded him after
his father, being a very goodly and vertuous
Prince. And because since the coming of Io-
seph of Arimathea into the land, there was much
talk of Christ, and Holy Religion, whereby
many had begun to embrace, he sent to Pope E-
leutherius, that hee would send some more lear-
ned men to him, whereby both he and his might
fully be instructed in the faith of Christ. Eleuthe-
rius sent unto him Dunianus and Faganus (by

Britain con-
verted to
the Christi-
an faith.

Arch-by-
shops & Bi-
shops ap-
pointed in
Britaine.

some called Fugarius and Damianus) two woode-
the learned Clearkes, who at theyr coming,
converted the King and his people from Paga-
nisme. There were in those dayes (within the
bounds of Britaine) 28. Paganines, and 3. Ach-
flamines, that were as Byshoppes and Arch-by-
shoppes of the Pagan Religion: in whose place
King Lucius appointed the 28. Byshoppes, and
three Arch-Bishops of Christian Religion. One
of which Arch-bishops held his See at London,
another at Yorke, and the thirde at Caerleon
Arswike in Glaumorganshire. To the Arch-by-
shop of London was subiect Cornwall, and all
the middle part of England, even unto Humber.
To the Arch-Bishoppe of Yorke, all the north
parts of Britaine, from the River of Humber, to
the furthest parts of Scotland. And to the Arch-
Bishop of Caerleon, was subiect all Wales, with

in

in which countrey were then seauen Byshoppes,
where now there are but foure. This King Lu-
cius is saide to builde the Church of Saint Peter
at Westminster, and Saint Peters Church of
Cornhill in London. This Lucius reigned 12.
yeares, and dying without issue, the Brittaines
fell at variance, by which meanes, the Romaine
Lieutenants go on againe with their Conquer-
ment, the Emperour Adrian coming in person
into Britain, & then the wal of Adrian was built,
from the mouth of Tine, to the water of Eske,
containing thirty miles in length. Adrian having
quieted all disturbances in Britain, Lollius, Vr-
bicus, Calphurnius Agricola, Vlpus Marcellus,
Pertinax, Clodius Albinus and Heraclius, suc-
ceeded each other as Lieutenantes (over the
Brittaines) to the Romaines, which manner of
Government so continued, to the yeare of our
Lord, 267.

S. Peters
Churches at
Westmin-
ster & Lon-
don in
Corne-hill

The Wall
of Adrian.

Seuerus, Emperour of Rome, did now beginne
his rule in Britaine, causing a Trench to be cast
from Sea to Sea. Hee reigned not fullye five
yeares, and was buried at Yorke. His sonnes
Gera and Bassianus contended for the Govern-
ment, Gera was slaine in battell, and Bassianus
ruled five yeares: but hee was likewise slaine by
one Caranlius, a Britaine of unknowne Byth,
whom the Brittaines accepted as their King. till
Alectus was sent from Rome with his Legions
of Souldiours, who conquered Caranlius in field,
and slew him.

307

A Trench
cast in Brit-
taine from
sea to sea.

Aesclepio-

Wallus
Brooke,
Walbrook.

The martir-
dome of S.
Alban.

Werlam-
chester, S.
Albanes.

John Rossus
Martirizans,
in Lib. de vi-
gora. Epif.

Lichfelde,
why it was
so called.

Asclepiodotus, Duke of Cornwall, menay-
ling in fight against Alecius, and Liuius Gallus,
or Wallus, whom (when he had slaine, he threwo
into a Brooke, which toke name of him, and was
called Wallus Brooke, now Walbrooke) was
admitted to raigne ouer the Britaines. And dis-
cord being afterward raised, betwene the King,
and one Coell, Earle of Colchester, they met in
a fiede of battails, where Asclepiodotus was
slaine, after he had raigned thirty yeares. At this
time was Britaine in cruell persecution, vnder
the bloody tyrants Dioclesian and Maximus; Al-
ban, a Cittizen of Werlamchester, being the first
that suffered martirdome in Britaine, hee being
conuerted to Christian faith by zealous Amphi-
bilas, and because he would not sacrifice to their
false Gods, he was beheaded on the top of the hill
ouer against VVerlamchester, where a Church
and Monastery was builded in memoxy of his
martrydom, and VVerlamchester being destroy-
ed, the place toke name of him, and is to this day
called S. Albanes. A number of Christians were
likewise assembled at another place, to heare the
word of life preached by that vertuous man Am-
phibilaus, but they were all there slaine by the
Pagans, and the place (in their memoxy) named
Lichfield, The fiede of dead bodies. It is also
recozded, that in the dayes of these Tyrants, Di-
oclesian and Maximus, of godly men and wo-
men, professing the faith of Iesus Christe, there
were martired in sundry place, aboue 17000.

Coell, Earle of Colchester, began his rule ouer
the

the Britaines, in An. Dom. 262. But Constan-
tius being sent from Rome to suppress him, hee
covenanted to pay the tribute, & gaue his daugh-
ter Helena (a noble and learned Lady) in mar-
riage to Constantius. King Coell raigned 27.
yeares, and is said to be buried at Colchester, or
rather at Glocester.

Constantius succeeded in the rule of Britain, af-
ter Coell, and had by his wife Helena a Sonne,
named Constantine, that was afterwarde Em-
peroz, and sir named Constantine the Great. In
this Constantius dayes, Amphibilaus was ap-
prehended, and suffered martrydome at Red-
burne, nere to VVerlamchester, fiftene yeares
after the death of S. Alban: Constantius raig-
ned eleuen yeares.

Constantine, sonne of Constantius and Hele-
na, and sir named the Great, was King after his
father, and created Emperoz in Britaine. His
mother Quene Helena went to Ierusalem, where
she found the Crosse that our Saviour was cru-
cified on, and the spailles, which she gaue to her
Sonne Constantine; who did set one of them in
the Crest of his Helmet, another in the bzidle of
his horse, and the thurd he threiw into the Sea, to
alluage a rough Tempest.

Octavius or Octavian, beganne his raigne ouer
the Britaines in Anno 329. being called Duke of
VVindsore. He assembled a great companie of
people, and fought with the Gouvernours of the
Land which Constantine had heere appoynted:
yet was he expelled by Traherne into Norway,

and

Constantius
married He-
lena, daugh-
ter to King
Coell.

The martir-
dome of
Amphibi-
laus.

Q. Helena
found the
Crosse and
the Nailles.

Octavius
put to flight
by Traher-
nes

Helena wal-
leth Lon-
don & Col-
chester.

and Traherne being slaine by treason afterward,
Ostavius sent Maximianus, Cousin to the Empe-
ro; Constantine, to whom he gaue his daughter
in marriage. Ostavius reigned 54. yeares. About
this time, the Emperesse Helena, Mother to Con-
stantine, for loue she bare to Colchester and Lon-
don, did newly engirt them both with Wallles
rourke about, causing great Wycke and huge
Wyles to be purposely theretofore made, which are
yet to be seene in the Towne and Castle of Col-
chester.

383

Little Britain

Maximianus, or Maximus, usurped in Brit-
taine the Title of the Emperre, and assembling
all the men of Warre, and youth of the Realme,
he went into France, expelled the French-men
out of Armorica, and placed Brittaines there
under Conon Meridoc, Duke of Cornewall,
whereon it was euer after called Britayne the
Lesse. This Maximus or Maximianus, hauing
slayne the Emperour Gratian, at Lyons in
France, was slaine himselfe at Aquileia, by the
Emperour Theodosius, after he had gouerned the
Brittaines eight yeares.

390

The Saxons
first ente-
rance into
Britaine.

Gratian, a Britaine, taking on him-selfe
the Rule of Britaine, for his stearne and rough
Gouernement was quickly slaine. About this
time, did the Saxons first enter into this Lande,
and the Romain Emperre greatly declining, their
rule in this kingdome, and payment of Tri-
bute (which hadde continued for the space of
four hundred eighty three yeares) now quite
ceased.

Con-

Constantinus, Brother of Aldroemus, King
of little Britaine, at the sute of the Arche-
shoppe of London, in Name of all the Brit-
taines, accepted the Gouernment of this Lande,
and was Crowned at Cicester. Hee had three
Sonne, Constantius (who was made a Monk) <sup>Constanti-
us crown
at Cicester.</sup>
Aurelius Ambrosius, and Vter, sur-named
Pendragon. This Constantinus was Tray-
terously slayne in his Chamber, by a Pict, and
then one Vortiger, a Britaine, a man of great
power amongst the Brittaines, tooke Constan-
tius out of the Abbey of Winchester, and Crow-
ned him King. But causing him soone after to
bee murdered, and the murderers strangled, least
hee should bee discouered, hee got himselfe to bee
chosen King, Aurelius Ambrosius, and Vter
Pendragon, (Brethren to the murdered king)
being glad to flye into Brittain Armorica. Hen-
gist the Saxon, and his Brother Horsa, bring-
ing great store of Saxons into the Realme, by
marrying his Daughter Rowen to Vortiger, <sup>Hengist the
Saxon & his
Brother
Horsa.</sup>
grew into no means fauour, filling still the
Land with three sortes of Germane people,
(to witte:) Saxons, Iutes, and Angles, who
at length, made such spoyle and harocke of the
Brittaines, that from Sea to Sea, the whole
Realme, was most pittifully wasted and mi-
ned: the Brittaines being enforced for to flye
out of the; stone Countrey, and the Saxons
enioyed their possessions. Vortiger was deposed,
and Vortimer his Sonne crowned King, who <sup>Vortiger
deposed, &
Vortimer
Crowned.</sup>
had foure principall Battailles with the Saxons,
and

and preuailed very worthily against them, til (by the meanes of Rowen, Daughter to Hengist) Vortimer was poysoned after hee had gouerned the Britaines seauen yeares and odde moneths. Then was Vortiger restored to his kingdom againe, and Hengist performed his bloody treachery on Salisbury plaine, on a May day, murdering 460. Noble Britaines with Ianiues, which he and his Saxons had closely hid in their pockets. There was Vortiger taken prisoner, and could not gaine his liberty, till hee had graunted Hengist thre Provinces or Countreys of his Kingdome, to wit, Kent and Essex, or (as some write) Suffex, where the South Saxons afterwards inhabited, and Norffolke and Suffolke, where the East-Angles planted themselves. At this time was the Heptarchie or seauen Kingdomes of this Lande, Aurelius and his Brother Vter, returned out of Brittainne Armorica, with a powerfull Army, and marching into VVales against Vortiger, assailed him in his Castle, which they consumed with fire, where perished Vortiger, and all else there with him.

The Britain Nobles murdered on Salisbury plaine.

The death of Vortiger.

481.

The death of Hengist.

Stone-heng

Aurelius Ambrose was made King of Brittain, anno 481. He gaue Hengist bataille, who flying for safety, was taken by Edoll Earle of Chester, & beheaded at Conningsborow. In memory of the Britaines slaughter on Salisbury plain, stones were fetcht out of Ireland, and set vp in the same place, and called to this day Stone-heng. Aurelius reigned nineteene yeares, was poysoned by a counterfeit Monk, and buried at Stone-heng.

Vter

Vter, sur-named Pendragon, because Merlin likened him to a Dragons heade, which (at his birth) miraculously appeared in the firmament, at the corner of a blazing Starre. He lived saye Igrine, wife to Gorlois Duke of Cornwall, on whom he begot the valiant Prince Arthur. Vter reigned 18. yeares, and was buried by his Brother at Stone-heng.

500

The birth of Arthur.

Arthur, Sonne of Vter Pendragon, succeeded his Father in the Kingdome. Hee fought twelue battailes against the Saxons, returning Conqueror in euery one of them: yet coulde he not drive them out of the land, but still they possessed Kent, Sutherie and Norfolke. He instituted the order of the round Table, was deadly wounded in a battell which he fought with his cozen Mordred; and hauing reigned 26. yeares, was buried at Glasterbury betwene two Millers, where his body was afterwards found, in the dayes of King Henry the second, about the yeare, 1191.

506.

Arthur had 12. battailes against the Saxons.

Constantine, Cozen to Arthur, and Sonne of Cadur, Duke of Cornewall, succeeded next in government: But Aurelius Conan warred against him, and slew him in the fildes, when hee had reigned foure yeares, and was buried at Stone-heng.

542

Aurelius Conan, was next King of Brittain, albeit his Uncle had most right thereto. Whom he imprisoned, and cruelly murdered his two sons; after which himselfe liued not long, but died before he had reigned two yeares.

546

Conan murdered his Nephewes.

Vortiporus reigned after his Father Aurelius

548

41

Conan

Conan foure yeares, and left no issue to succede him in the kingdome.

180

Malgo, nephew of Aurelius Conan, reigned five yeares.

Careticus ruled Britain three yeares, and the English and Saxon kings (remouing the Brittaines) enlarged the boundes of theyr owne Dominions: so that beside the kinges of Britayne, there reigned eight kings of the English & Saxons, as Ethelbert in Kent, Cissa in Suffex, Ceauline in Westsex, Creda or Crida in Mercia, Erkenwine in Essex, Titala in East-Angles, Ella in Deira, and Alfrid in Bernitia. The Brittaines

Eight kings
of the Eng-
lish & Sax-
ons.

The Britains
loose theyr
ancient seats

Augustine
the Monke
sent into
Britaine.

613

The Britains
24. yeares
without a
King.

lost possession of the more part of their auncient seats, and the faith of Christ was thereby greatly decayed, for the Churches were destroyed, and the Arch-Bishoppes of Caerleon Arfwike, London and Yorke, withdrew (together with theyr Cleergie) into the Mountaines and Woodes in Wales. Now was Augustine the Monke, and others sent to preach the Christian faith in Britaine, and was made Arch-bishop of Britaine, for the English nation, and king Ethelbert (with his people of Kent) were conuerted to the Christian faith.

Cadwan was elected king of the Brittaines in Anno 613. For (after Careticus) they had remained (for about the space of 24. yeares) without any especiall Governo, being led by sundry Rulers: this Cadwan had before bin Duke or Ruler of North-wales. He gouerned two and twentie yeares.

Cad-

Cadwallo or Cadwalline, Sonne of Cadwan, succeeded as king of the Brittaines, after his father. He reigned 48. yeares, and being dead, his body was balined with sweete confectiōs, and put into a Brazen Image, by meruailous Arte melted and cast, which Image was also mounted on a gaily brazen horse, and so set vp aloft on the West gate of London, called Ludgate, in token of his Conquests, and for a terro, to the Saxons. The Church of Saint Martine vnder the same Gate, was then also builded by the Brittaines.

635

S. Martins
at Ludgate
built.

Cadwallader, Sonne of Cadwallo, succeeded him in the Brittaines gouernment, whose raygne lasted but three yeares, for hee was constrained (with his people) to forsake their native Countrey, and by Sea to flye ouer into Britaine Armorica, thereto seeke releefe for their languishing bodies. In this Cadwallader ended the line and gouernment of the Britains, now called Welchmen, which name they tooke of their Leader Wallo or Gallo, or else of a Queen of Wales, called Gales or Wales. The Brittaines had the greater part of this Lande in rule (reckoning from Bruce to this time) 1822. yeares, and now the whole Dominion of the Lande, came to the Saxons.

673

The ending
of the Bry-
taines Go-
uernment.

Egbert, the Son of Alcmund, a petty Prince, the son of Offa, of the blonde of Ina, king of the West-Saxons, hauing bin banished by k. Bright-ricke into France; after Brightricks death, was repealed home, and succeeded as the seauententh king of the West-Saxons. He subdued the Cornishmen,

800

11 2

The victo-
ries of King
Egbert.

The first in-
vasion of
England, by
K. Egbert.

The first in-
vasion of
the Danes.

nishmen, and seuerely punished the vnquiet Welch-men. Bernulfe King of Mercia, was ouerthrowne by him, and Kent, Essex, Southerie, and Suffex, with their seuerall Kings, al brought vnder his obeysance, and the kingdome of Northumberland yeelded vnto him. When subdued he North-wales, and tooke the Citty of Chester. Afterward, assembling a Counsell at Winchester, he was there crowned King and Soueraign Lord of the whole land: which he chaunged from the name of Britaine, and from the seuerall appellations of the Deptarchie, and called it Engle-land, or Angles-land, that is to say, The Englishmens Land, wherof in Latine it was termed Anglia, a name taken from the Angles, whych, of the three people then possessing it, to wit, the Iutes, Saxons, and Angles (being indede all but one Nation) were the most valiaunt and populous. In his time was the first inuasion of the Danes, and hee had an ouerthrowne by them at Carrum: which successe causing them to aduenture the like attempt the yeare following, landing theyr flet in Wales, and ioyning with the Welch-men, they were ouerthrowne by K. Egbert, at a place called Hengistenton, and a great number of them slaine. This glorious Prince, hauing greatly enlarged the bounds of his kingdome, and reigned seauen and thirtie yeares, died, and was verie Royally buried at Winchester.

837.

Ethelwolphe, eldest sonne to the most victorious King Egbert, succeeded next in the kingdom of

of England. All the time of his raigne, hee was grievously troubled with the Danes inuasions; but he had a worthy victory ouer them at Ockley in Southrey, such as the like hath hardly bene heard of in the English Dominions. He deuised the kingdom betwixt himself, & his son Ethelbald, & hauing reigned twenty yeares, was honourably buried in the Cathedraall Church at Winchester.

A worthy
victory ouer
the Danes

857

Ethelbald succeeded his Father Ethelwolphe by inheritance, but to his second sonne Ethelbert (in his life time) he had giuen the kingdomes of Kent and Essex, which he had conquered. This Ethelbald presumed to defile his Fathers bedde, and married his Stepmother Iudith: he reigned five yeares, and dying, was buried at Shirbourn.

Ethelbald
defiled his
fathers bed.

862.

Ethelbert, second sonne of King Ethelwolphe, succeeded after his Brother Ethelbald in the regiment. This Ethelbert drove the Danes out of Kent, many times ouerthrowing them, & put them to flight: He reigned five yeares, and was buried by his Brother Ethelbald at Shirbourn.

Ethelred, third Sonne to King Ethelwolphe, reigned next after his Brother Ethelbert. Hee fought nine battails with the Danes in one year, bearing still the victory away with him; but dissention among the Saxon Kinges, furthered the Danes in conquest of their kingdomes. Ethelred was slaine in fight with the Danes; hauing reigned five yeares, and was buried at Winbourne Abbey.

867

Nine Batt
fought with
the Danes
in one year

Alfred, or Alured, sur-named the Great, youngest

87.

gest Sonne to Ethelwolp, succeeded his Brother in the Kingdome. Hee was very greatly troubled with the Danes, who invading diuers parts of the Land, did most cruelly wast it: yet had he (in one yeare) seuen battailcs with them, and ouerthrowing them at length, recovered his kingdome. He builded 3. Monasteries, one at Edlingsey, afterward called Athelny, nar Taunton in Sommerfet-shire; the second at Winchester, called the New Minster; and the third at Shaftsbury, where his Daughter Ethelgeda was Abbesse. But, by perswasion of Neote, a famous Learned Monke, he built the University of Oxford, being himselfe a good Grammarian, Rhetorician, Phylosopher, Musician and Poet, as also a most perfect Architect. Hee reigned 29. yeares, and six months, and was buried in hys New-Minster, at Winchester.

K. Alfred
builded 3.
Monasteries

Oxford
built by K.
Alfred.

900

The East-
Angles co-
quered by
K. Edward

K. Edward
great build-
er.

Edward, sonne to King Alfred, and surnamed the Elder, succeeded in the kingdome after his father. Hee subdued the Kingdome of the East-Angles, and so enlarged the boundes of his Kingdome, that he had most part of Great Brittain vnder his obedience; he built a new Town at Nottingham, on the South-side of Trent, and made a Bridge ouer betwene the old Town and new. He repayed Manchester in Lancashyre, (accounted then the Southend of Northumberland) and built a Towne, called (by ancient writers) Thilwall, nere to the Riuer of Mercia, placing therein a Garrison of Soldiours. Diuer other Townes and Castels also he builded, as two at Buck-

Buckingham, on either side the Riuer Ouse, against the Danes incursions, and another at the mouth of Auon: he repayed the Towns of Tocceter and Wigmore, and hauing raygned 24. yeares, was buried in the New Minster or Monastery at Winchester.

Athelstane, or Adelstane, eldest Son of King Edward, succeeded his father, and (as his Ancestors) was crowned at Kingston on Thames. A great army of the Danes, Scots, and Irish, was ouerthrowne by King Athelstane; Northumberland, Westmerland, and Cumberland yielded vnto him. Hee was the first of the English Kinges, that obtained the gouernement of the whole Kingdome, which continued so 140. yeares after, though not without some interruption, the Danes (in the meane time) vsurping the Crown by the space of thirty yeares. The Welch & Cornishmen were subdued by him. He builded two Monasteries, one at Wilton, in the Diocesse of Salisbury, and another at Michelme in Somersetshire, founding also a Colledge of Priests, at S. Edmundsbury. There were seime famous Monasteries in this land, but he beautified them either with some new piece of building, Jewels, Bookes, or Lands, and caused the sacred Scriptures to be translated out of the most pure Fontaine of the Hebrewes, into the English Saxon tongue. He reigned 16. yeares, and was buried at Malmesbury.

Edmund, Brother to King Athelstane, succeeded next after him, and banquishing the Danes,

924

King Athel-
stane the
first monark
of England.

940

114

114

was afterward unfortunately slain, having reigned five yeares, and was buried at Glattenbury.

946

Eldred or Eadred, Brother to King Edmund, succeeded next in the royall Dignity, being crowned also at Kingstone upon Thames. Edwin and Edgar, Sonnes to King Edmund, were put by from ruling, in regard of their tender age. Eldred subdued the Northumbers, repayed the Abbey of Abington, built by King Ina, but ruined by the Danes. And having reigned nine yeares, was buried in the olde Monasterie at Winchester.

945

Edwine, eldest Sonne to King Edmund, succeeded his Uncle Eldred, and was crowned at Kingston. This Edwin was wholly addicted to sensuality and pleasure, banished Dunstan, Abbot of Glattenbury, for reprooving his Rape of Algiua, his neere Kinswoman, even when his Lords were sitting in Counsell. He having reigned foure yeares, was deposed, and dying with griefe, was buried in the new Abbey at Winchester.

959

Edgar, Brother to King Edwine, was appointed and crowned King at Bathe, and afterward at Kingstone. He was a great fauourer of Religious men, and had a flecte of three thousand and six hundred shippes alwayes in readinesse, and sayled therewith (once a yeare) about all great Britaine. He had the whole Isle, and all the Kinges thereof in subiection to him, and was rowed vp and downe the Riuer of Dee, by seauen Kings his battailes: Luduall, one of those Kings,

K. Edgar his
flect of ships

Kings, did pay him a yearly tribute of Wolues. A tribute of he reigned 16. yeares, and was buried at Glattenbury.

Edward, eldest Sonne to King Edgar, succeeded his Father, being crowned at Kingston, but by Counsell of Elfrith, his Step-mother, he was treacherously murdered, when hee had reigned three yeares, and was buried at Shaftesbury.

975

Ethelred, or Egelred, second Sonne to King Edgar, was crowned at Kingstone; but because his coming to the Crown was by his brothers murder, he could neuer obtaine his peoples affection. All the Danes in England (by the command of King Ethelred) were murdered in one night. He reigned 38. yeares, and was buried in Saint Pauls Church in London.

979

The Danes
murdered in
one Night.

Edmund, Son to King Ethelred, and Burnamed Ironside, was immediately proclaimed King after his Fathers death; as the Clergy and Nobility did the like to Canutus, because they hadde sworne fealty to his Father Swaine, or Sweno: whereon three great battailes were fought between King Edmund and Canutus, the Danes both proclaimed King. The first at Otford in Kent, beside the great battell at Ashdone in Essex, neere Saffron walden; where the Englishmen were foyled by the Danes, and the Land once againe deuided, between Canutus and King Edmund, who was treacherously slaine at Oxford, having reigned but one yeare, and some few months, and was buried at Glattenbury.

1016

Edmund Ironside and
Canutus
both proclaimed
Kings.

Canutus the Dane, challenging all England to

1017.

to himselfe, was crowned King in Saint Pauls Church in London, and married Queen Emma, the widow of King Etheldred: hee reigned xx. yeares, and was buried at Winchester.

1035.

Harold, surnamed Harefoot, being the power of the Danes in England, invaded the Realme, while his brother Hardi-kenutus Governed in Denmarke. Hee reigned foure yeares, dyed at Oxford, and was buried at Westminster.

1041

Hardikenutus, or Hardy-Canutus, Sonne of King Canutus, and his Quene Emma, obtaining his Fathers Kingdome; sent for his mother from exile. He died with the cup in his hand, as he sat merrily disposed at his Table, in the third yeare of his raigne, and was buried at Winchester. With this Hardy-Canutus, ended the domination of the Danes in England, who had grievously oppressed this nation, for the space of 250. yeares.

The ending
of the Danes
gouernment
in England.

1042

Edward, the sonne of Ethelred and Emma, was next crowned King at Winchester, all the Danes being then quite expelled the land. This Edward was surnamed the Confessor, for his vertuous life and worthy Lawes: also he is saide to be the first that cured the Disease, called, The Kings Euill. Hee reigned three and twentie yeares, and was buried at Westminster, which (in his life time) hee had most sumptuously repaired.

The Kings
Euill.

1067

Harold, sonne of Earle Goodwin, took upon him the gouernment of the kingdome: but William, Duke of Normandy, came into England with

with a powerfull Army, and (in battell) Harold was shot through the brynes with an Arrowe, hauing reigned but nine months, and was buried in the Monastery of Waltham in Essex, by whose death, Duke William obtained his Conquest of England.

England
conquered
by D. Wil-
liam.

1067

William, Duke of Normandy, base Sonne of Robert, Duke of Normandie, and Stephen to King Edward the Confessor, whom he perceived more addicted to vertue, then policy, and through debility of body not like to live long: contrived his owne attaining to the crowne of this land, after the decaie of the aged King. For hee placed diuers Normans, in the cheefest roomes about him while he lived, and when he was dead, leuied an Army of diuers Nations, and there with pretending the Patronage of England, agaynst Harold, Earle Godwins Sonne, who usurped the Kingdome; first fought with him, and slawe him at a place now called Battell, in Suffex, and then tooke the Crowne on him, by election of the Estates. Seeking next to barre Titles, he imprisoned Edgar Etheling, the onely true heire of the Saxons blood, and by means of Ethelbert, Arch-bishop of Hamborow, procured Sweno, King of Denmark (for money) to cease the Danes claime. Hee builded foure strong Castles: one, at Nottingham, another at Lincoln, the third at York, and the fourth nere to Hastings, where he landed at his first arrivall in England. Hee deuised the Couer le feu Well, to bee rung nightly at eight of the clocke, in all Citties, Townes, and Villages,

Duke Wil-
liams policy
to get the
Crowne.

Edgar Ethel-
ling, true
heire of the
Saxons
blood

Rake vp the
fire.

The four
Termes.

Villages, for prevention of mighty tumults. He ordained the Termes, and that they shoulde be kept foure times in the yeare, and Judges to sit in severall Courtes, for deciding controuersiall matters betwixt party and party, as is used vnto this day. He appointed Sheriffes in every shyre, and Iustices of the peace, to see offenders punished, and the Countreies kept in quiet. He ordained the Court of Erchequer, with the Barons, Clarke and Officers thereto belonging, as also the high Court of Chancery, with the Booke then called, The Rowle of Winchester, now, The Doomesday Booke, whereby the whole Land was taxed, and every mans estate, and wealth thoroughly knowne. He reigned twenty yeares, ten months, and 26. dayes, and was buried in the Abbey of Saint Stephen, at Caen in Normandy, which he had founded. And this is well worth by memory, that hee being so great a Conquero, yet after his death, coulde not haue so much ground to bury his dead body, without wronging some other, vntill that (by his Executors) it was bought for him.

K. William
destitute of
a Graue,

1087

William Rufus, second sonne to the Conqueror, by his fathers appointment succeeded him in the kingdom, and was crowned at Westminster. Robert, elder Brother to King William, & Duke of Normandy, went with Godfrey Duke of Buxen, and other Christian Princes to the Holy Land, to recouer it from the Sarazins. This King William Rufus, caused new Wallles to be builded about the Tower of London, and layed the

the foundation of Westminster Hall. He reigned thirteene yeares, and was slain with an Arrow, by one Sir Walter Tyrel, a French knight, in the New Forrest in Hampshire, his body being buried at Winchester. In which Forrest, not many yeares before, had stood 36. Parish Churches, diuers faire Colones, Villages, and Hamlets, containing thirty miles in circuite: all which was laide wast by the Conquero, the poor inhabitants expelled thence, and it was made a place for wilde beastes to liue in. It was some what strange, that in that very place, the King should be so vnfortunately slaine; Richard his Brother blasted to death, and Henry the Conquero's Nephew, by his eldest Sonne Robert, as hee ouer-earnestly pursued the game, in the bushes (like to another Absolon) straungely strangled to death; vengeance from God (as was thought) punishing the fathers offence in his posterity.

The founda-
tion of
Westmin-
ster Hall.

511

New forrest
in Hamp-
shire, and
strange ac-
cidents ther
happening.

Henry, sur-named Beauclerke for his Learning, and youngest sonne to the Conquero, succeeded his Brother King William, & was crowned at Westminster. Robert, Duke of Normandy, being returned from the Holy Land, warred with his Brother Henry, for his right in the crowne of England, and after much contention, being taken and committed Prisoner vnto Cardiffe Castle in Wales, after 26. yeares imprisonment, hee there dyed, and was buried at Glocester. Maud, King Henries Daughter, was married to the Empero Henry: but his other children,

1100

Robert D.
of Nor-
mandy.

King Hen-
ries Chil-
dren drown-
ed,

children, William, Duke of Normandy, his Sister Marie, Countesse of Perch; Richard, Earle of Chester, with his Brother Otwell, Governour to Duke William, and the saide Earle of Chester his wife, the Kinges spouse, with diuers others, to the number of 140. persons, beside 50. Parriners, following the king out of Normandie, were all drowned. King Henry reigned 35. years, died in the Forrest of Lyons in Romaniais, and was buried in the Abbey of Reading, which he had founded. In this king Henry first of that name, ended the line of 5. Norman kings, concerning their heires male, who had reigned about 69. yeares: and then began the French, by Title of the heires generall.

1135

K. Stephen
vsurped the
Crown.

Stephen, Earle of Bullen and Mortaigne, son to Stephen Earle of Bloys, by Adela, Daughter to king William the Conquerour, vsurped the crowne from Maud the Emperesse, and her young sonne Henry, which caused great Warres betwixt her and her, and very miserable times to the people; till by an assembly of the Lordes at Winchester, Articles of peace and agreement were concluded. King Stephen reigned eyghtene yeares, ten moneths, and three and twenty dayes, and was buried in the Abby of Feuersham in Kent.

1154

Tho. Becket
Archbishop
of Canterb.

Henry, sur-named Fitz-Empresse, and Shortmantle, succeeded next in the crown of England. He expelled strangers out of the Land, and had a long and troublesome contention, with Thomas Becket, Arch-Bishop of Canterbury. Hee

crov-

crovned his sonne Henry, as fellow-king with him, which procured him much mollestation, by meanes of his Quene, and his other sonnes. In his time, was the conquest of Ireland, Dublin, and Waterford, being won by Earle Strongbow. He had diuers Concubines, but especially fayre Raimond, whom he kept in a Labyrinth at Woodstock, where she was poisoned by M. Elianor. King Henry the second reigned 34. yeares, nine months and two dayes, and dying, was buried at Font-Euerard in the Dutchy of Alanson. In him ended the raigne both of the Normans and French-men, ouer the Realme of England.

Richard, Earle of Poitiers, and second Son to King Henry, was crovned king at Westminster. He went to the Holy-land, and performed many worthy seruices there: his brother Iohn (in his absence) aspired to rule the whole land, being prouoked thereto by the French king. As King Richard besiedged the Castle of Chalus Cheu-

1189

Ki. Richard
went to the
holy-Land,
he was cal-
led Cueur-
de-Lion.

rel; he was wounded with an impoisoned quarrell, shot at him by one Barturam de Gurden, or Peter Bazile, whereof he dyed, having reigned nine yeares, nine moneths, and odde daies, and was buried at Font-Euerard.

1199

Iohn, Lord of Ireland, Earle of Mortaign and Gloucester, & brother to king Richard, was crovned at westm. He had long & tedious contentions with his Barons, as also with the pope, by whose meanes, Lewes the French kinges sonne, was aduanced into the businesse, & had the crowne offered

red

red him by the Lords, whereon he wrought great spoile in the Land. King Iohn raigned 17. yeares, six months, and 27. dayes, and dying by poyson, was buried at VVorchester.

1216

William
Marshall,
Earle of
Pembroke.

Henry, third of that name, and eldest Son to King Iohn, succeeded immediately after his father, albeit he was but nine yeares old: the Barons and French Lewes, being still very mollesuous, against whom VVilliam Marshal, Earle of Pembroke, was chiefe Generall of the Kings forces, and preuayled worthily. This King Henry, raigned 56. yeares, and 27. dayes, and was buried at Westminster.

1272

Wales con-
quered

Edward, eldest Sonne to King Henrie, and Surnamed Long-shankes, was crowned at Westminster, after his returne home from the Holy Land. This King conquered Wales, and deuided it into Shyres; and banished the Isles for euer out of England. Having raigned 34. yeares, seauen months, and twenty dayes, he dyed, and was buried at VVestminster.

1307

Pierce Ga-
uaston.

Edward of Carnarvon, sonne to King Edward the first, succeeded in the kingdome after his father. This king did ouermuch affect an Esquire of Gascoigne, called Pierce Gauaston, and dishonoured many of his Lords, to aduance him: as he did the like, by the two Spensers, the father and Sonne. At length, he was imprisoned by his Barons, with helpe of the Queene and Prince, and then deposed, when he had raigned nineteene yeares, six months, and seauenteene dayes.

Edward

Edward the third, son to king Edward the second, was crowned at Westminster in his fathers life time. Flanders, yeelded themselves & all their Townes to King Edward, and, laying claime to the Crowne of France (in right of his Mother Queen Isabell) he entred that land with a puissant army, and quartered the Armes of France, with his owne of England. He deuised the worthy Order of the Garter: and Prince Edward, Surnamed the Blacke Prince (beside his famous victories in Fraunce) defeated Don Peter king of Castile in his kingdom, which his bastard Brother Henrie usurped against him. He. Edward the third raigned fifty yeares, and six monethes, and dying at Sheene, was buried at Westminster.

1327

The Order
of the Gar-
ter.

Richard, second of that name, son to Edward the Blacke Prince, being about eleauen yeares old, succeeded after his Grand-father King Edward; the Duke of Lancaster, and the Earle of Cambridge, being protectors of the young kings person. The rebellion of Iacke Straw, and Wat Tyler, with the Essex and Kentishmen then happened, and the worthy act of William Walworth, Lord Maior of London, in arresting the traitors. Great stormes arose betweene the king and his Nobles, because he had let to farme the realme of England, to Lords that abused the king, and much misgouerned him, sending abroad blank Charters, &c. Whereupon, in the end, Articles were framed against the king, and he committed to the Tower of London: Henrie, Surnamed

1377.

Iack Straw,
& his rebels

Articles a-
gainst the
King.

Ed m

Bul-

Bullingbrooke, sonne to Iohn of Gaunt, being proclaimed king, and Richard quite depriued, when he had raigned 22. years, three months, & nine dayes. Dying, hee was buried at Langley.

1399. Henry Plantagenet, borne at Bullingbrooke, in the County of Lincolne, being Colin-Ver-
 The Crown
 entailed. mains to king Richard the second, succeeded next by Richards depriuation, and entailed the crown to him and his heires. Owen Glendoure, with his VVelchmen, entered into Rebellion against the king, and did put him in great danger of his life by Treason, by conueying a Caltrop into his bed. This king Henry raigned 13. years, and odde months, and was buried at Canterburie, with great solemnity.

1413 Henry of Monmouth, sonne and heire to king Henry the fourth, succeeded after his father. Hee urged his title to France, and fought the famous battell at Agincourt. Hee raigned nine yeares, five months, and foure daies, and dying at Boys de Vinciennes in France, was buried at West-
 The battell
 of Agin-
 court. minster.

1423 Henry of windfore, being but nine moneths olde, did yet succeed in his lawfull right. He was also crowned king of France at Paris, and had his time troubled with many grieuous combustions both abroad and at home, as also diuers foughten battailes, to the effusion of much blood. He raign-
 The houses
 of Yorke &
 Lancaster. ed 38. yeares, five months, and foure daies, and was buried first at Chertley, and afterwarde re-
 moved to windfore.

1461 Edward, Earle of March, tooke on him the gouern-

government of the Realm, being son to Richard Duke of Yorke, that was slaine at Wakefield. His raigne also was filled with many troubles, boyles, and Rebellions: yet hee gouerned 22. years, one month, and eight daies, and was buried at Windfore.

Edward the first, son to king Edward the fourth, succeeded after his father, being neuer crowned, but deposed by his Uncle Richard, Duke of Gloucester, when he had raigned two months, & eleven dayes, and with his brother, was murdered in the Tower of London, where both they bodies were obscurely buried.

Richard, Duke of Gloucester, vsurped the kingdome two years, two months, and one day: and was slaine in battell at Bosworth fiede, by Henrie Earle of Richimond, and buried at Leicester. In him ended the line of the Plantagenets.

Henry, Earle of Richimond, surnamed Tudor, son to Edmund of Hadham, Earle of Richimond, who was son of Owen ap Meredyth, and Queene Katherine the French kings daughter, wife to king Henry the first. This king Henrie, builded and repayed in his life time, many goodly houses, beside his Mannor of Richimond, and his Chappell at Westminster; as Baynards Castle in London; the goodly Hospitall of the Saviour, neere Charing-Crosse, to which hee gave lands, for releefe of an hundred poore people. Sir Religious houses for Franciscan Friars, of the Obseruant and Couentall orders, (viz.) at Rich-
 Edw. 5. ne-
 uer crowned
 Bosworth
 fiede.
 The me-
 morable
 buildings of
 king Henrie
 the seventh.
 In 2 mond,

mond, at Greenwich, and at Newarke, for his servants: at Canterbury, New-Castle, & Southampton, for Couentals. He gaue also manie summe of money, to good and godly uses. And for that one of the goodliest Chappelles in Europe, was (by his meanes) finished, formerly begun by king Henry the first, called the Kings colledge Chappell, in the Vniuersitie of Cambridge: I cannot omit the summe he gaue to accomplish the same, which was 10000.li. (viz.) 5000. pounds in his life time, and the rest by will at his death, vnder his great Seale of England, which was truly paide, as is yet to be seen in the same Colledge. He married his eldest daughter Margaret, to James the fourth, King of Scots: of which happy marriage, we enioy our dread Soueraign now reigning, King James the first. King Henric reigned 23. yeares, and somewhat more then 8. months, and was buried in his new Chappell at Westminster.

Kings Colledge chapel in Cambridge.

1509

Henry the eight, sonne of king Henry the seventh, succeeded next in the kingdome after his father. He banished the Popes authoritie out of England, and was proclaimed King of Ireland, because the former Kinges were onely called Lords of Ireland. He won Terwin, Tournay, and Bullen in Fraunce, and gaue the Church of the Gray Fryers in London to the Cittie, to bee a place of releefe for poore people; S. Bartholomewes Spittle, the Gray Fryers, and two parish Churches, the one called S. Nicholas in the Shambles, the other S. Ewin in Newgate Market

Lords of Ireland.

King Henries gifts, to charitable uses.

ket, were then made all one parish Church, and he gaue in Lands for maintenance thereof, five hundred Markes by the yeare for euer. He reigned 37. yeares, 9. months, and 5. daies, and was buried at Windfore.

Edward the first, onely son to king Henry the eight, was crowned king at Westminster. He caused the Idols to be utterly abolished, Images to be defaced in Churches, and the Lords supper to be ministered in both kinds. There was then good orders deuised for the poores reliefe, & poore people were distinguished by three severall degrees, in manner following:

1549

The Masse abolished.

Three degrees of poore.

1. The poore by impotency.
2. Poore by casualty.
3. The churchelesse poore.

1. The poore by impotency, were also diuided into 3 kinds

1. The fatherlesse poore mans child.
2. The aged, blinde, and lame.
3. The diseased person, by his infirmities, &c.

2. The poore by casualty, were also of three kinds.

1. The wounded Souldier.
2. The decayed Houholder.
3. The distressed by grievous disease.

3. The churchelesse poore were likewise of 3. kinds.

1. The Bitch, that continueth all.
2. The vagabond, that will abide in no place.
3. The idle person, as Strumpets and others.

1. Christs Hospitall was appointed for the innocent and fatherlesse child, to be trained up in

Christs hospitall.

¶ in 3

know.

knowledge of God, and vertuous exercises.

S. Thomas
Hospitall.

2 Saint Thomas Hospitall in Southwark, was appointed for reliefe of the aged, blinde, and lame.

Bridewell.

3 Bridewel was also appointed for the Magabonds, ydle strumpet, and vnthrift.

Of all which severall Hospitals, this Vertuous young k. Edward was the founder, and gaue the lands of the Sauoy (which then serued as a harbour to Loyerers, Magabonds, and strumpets, that lay all day in the fieldes, and at night were harboured there) to the maintenance of these houses: which Lands were of the yearelie value of fife hundred pounds, and he gaue 4000 Markes beside, of Lands taken in Mortmaine, so yearely valewed. This worthy young King raigned fife years, fife months, and eight dayes, and was buried at Westminster.

1553

Mary, eldest daughter to King Henry the eight, and Sister to King Edward, succeeded after her Brother. She married with the Prince of Spain, who was afterward king, and rainging 5. years, fife monethes, and tenns dayes, was buried at Westminster.

1558

Elizabeth, second Daughter to king Henrie the eight, and Sister also to king Edward, came next to her right in the Crowne of England To wife of the Princely life and raigne of that Virgin Empreffe, and matchlesse Queene, would requite large Volumes, yet all too little for her high deseruing merit. Having liued (well nere) threescore and ten years, and happily raigned 44. yeares,

yeares, 4. months, and od dayes: she died the 24 of March, 1602. & was buried at Westminster. The lines engrauen on her Tombe, may serue for her further memo^y.

A Sacrifice to Posterity.

HAuing restored Religion to the Primitiue sincerity, established Peace, reduced coine to the iust walew, reuenged Domestical rebellion, succored France, greued by ciuill war, supported *Belgia*, ouer-come the *Spanish* inuincible Nauy, pacified Ireland, by driuing out the *Spaniards*, and compelling the Rebels to yeeld to her pardon, increased very much the Reuenues of both Vniuersities, by a Law for their prouision of Victuall, enriched all England, & administring most prudently the Imperial state thereof 45. yeares in true piety, in the seauenty yeare of her age (in most happy & peaceable maner departed this life) leauing heere hir mortal parts, entered in this famous and renowned Church (by her conserued) til by the command of Christ, they rise againe immortall.

James, king of England, Scotland, Fraunce, and Ireland, first Monarch of the whole Islands of Countrey, was proclaimed king the 24. of March, 1602. being the onely inheritour to k. Henry the seauenth, and Elizabeth his Queene, issuing from Lady Margaret, eldest Daughter to them both. In whose happy marriage, ended

1602

the long ciuill diffentions, of the two deuided families of Yorke and Lancaster: And by his most rightfull succession, in the deuided kingdomes of England and Scotland, hath united them in one sole Monarchy of Great Britaine. Long may hee raigne, to Gods glory, and comfort of his kingdomes.

¶ A brieft Catalogue of the Princes of Wales, from the time that King *Edward* the first had conquered Wales, to this instant.

1. **E**Dward, borne at Caernaruon, & there called Edward of Caernaruon, being Sonne to king Edward of England, first of that name, was the first Prince of Wales of the English blood, after the death of Prince Llewelyn, and came to Chester, in the 29. year of his fathers raigne, where he receiued the homage of the free-holders of Wales.

2 Edward of Windfore, being eldest son to king Edward the second, in the 15. yeare of his fathers raigne, was created Prince of Wales, and Duke of Aquitaine, in a Parliament holden at Yorke.

3 Edward borne at Woodstock, & Sonne and heire to king Edward the third, in the 17. yeare of his fathers raigne, was created Prince of Wales at London. This Prince was surnamed the Blacke Prince, hee tooke Iohn the French king prisoner, and dyed in the 46. yeare of his age,

age, his father yet living.

4 Richard, Sonne to Edward the Black Prince, was created Prince of Wales at Hauerling in the Bolwer, in the fiftie yeare, of king Edward the 3. his Grandfather, and was afterward king of England, by the name of king Richard the second.

5 Henry of Monmouth, Sonne and heire to king Henry the fourth, was in the first yeare of his fathers raigne, created Prince of Wales at Westminster.

6 Edward of Westminster, Sonne and heire to king Henry the first, in the 31. yeare of his fathers raigne, was created Prince of Wales, and Earle of Chester, at Westminster.

7 Edward, eldest Sonne of king Edward the 4. borne in the Sanctuary at Westminster, in the 11. yeare of his fathers raigne, was created Prince of Wales, and Earle of Chester at London. He was afterward king of England, by the name of Edward the first, but neuer crowned, because both he and his Brother were made away, by the treachery of their Uncle Richard, Duke of Glocester, that vsurped the Crowne.

8 Edward, the onely Sonne of king Richard the third, being a child of ten years olde, in the first yeare of the said kings raign, was created prince of Wales at London.

9 Arthur, Sonnes and heire to king Henrie the seventh, in the first yeare of his fathers raigne, was created Prince of Wales at London: & dying at Ludlow Castle, in the 17. yeare of his fathers

fathers raigne, was buried with great Funerall solemnity at Worcester.

10 Henry, Duke of Yorke, son to King Henry the seauenth, and Brother vnto Prince Arthur, was after the saide Princes death, in the nineteenth yeare of his fathers raigne, created Prince of Wales: and was afterward King of England, by the name of King Henry the 8. In the 26. yeare of his raigne, the Principality and Countrey of Wales, was (by Parliament) incorporated and vnted vnto the Kingdome of England, and all the Inhabitants thereof made equall in freedoms, liberties, rightes, priuiledges, lawes, and in all other respects, to the naturall subiects of England.

11 Edward, sonne to King Henry the eight, and borne at Hampton Court, the Principality of Wales, being incorporated (as hath bin sayde) to the Crowne and kingdome of England, was no otherwise Prince of Wales, then vnder the generall Title of England, as the King his father was King of England, and (vnder y name) King of Wales, as it being a member of England. For do I read of any other creation or investiture, that he had in that Principality. He was King after his father, by the name of K. Edward 6.

Prince of
Wales by
general title

1. Princesse
of Wales.

2. Princesse
of Wales.

1 Marie, Daughter to King Henry the eight by the Princesse Katherine Dowager, Widow of Prince Arthur, was Princesse of Wales.

2 Elizabeth, Daughter also to King Henrie the eight, was in a Parliament, in the 25. yeare of

of her fathers raigne, declared Princesse and Inheretrix of the crowne of England, with all dominions to the same belonging; and therefore was (as her Sister) Princesse of Wales.

All these fore-named Princes of Wales, were created (solemnely) by and in Court of Parliament, except thre, which were Richard the second, Edward the fift, and Edward, Sonne to Richard the thyrde. Those that were created out of Parliament, were Princes, whose fortunes proued hard and disastrous: For Richard the second was deposed, and after murdered; Edward the fift was also murdered in the Tower of London; and Edward, sonne to Richard the thirde, dyed within thre moneths after, as a iust iudgement of God, for his fathers wickednesse.

12 Henrie, sonne and heire to our dread Soueraigne King Iames, in the eight yeare of his fathers raigne ouer England, &c. was created in the Court of Parliament at Westminster, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall and Rothesay, Earle of Chester, and Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter: The strong arme of Heauen be his continuall keeper and defender.

Prince of
Wales by
creation.

Briefe Obseruations, not vnfitly annexed
to this our short Summary of
England.

¶ Of Bishopprickes, and their circuites.

Jurisdiction
of Canturb.



Canterbury erected first by Augustine the Monk, in the time of Ethelbert, king of Kent, by prouincial regiment, reacheth ouer all the South and west parts of this Lande, and Ireland also, and there are few shippes, wherein the Arch-bishop hath not some peculiars. But in it selfe, as (from the beginning) was, and is proper to the Sec. It extendeth but ouer one parcell of Kent, which Rudburne calleth Cantwarland, the Jurisdiction of Rochester including the rest: so that in this one County, both the greatest Archbishopsicke, and least Bishoppsicke are vnted together. Canterbury hath vnder it one Arch-deaconry, that hath iurisdiction ouer 11. Deanries, or 161. Parish Churches. In time of popery, vnder name of first frutes, it payde to Rome (at euery alienation) 10000. Ducats or 120000. besides 5000. which the new elect did usually pay for his pall, each ducat being then worth an English Crowne.

Jurisdiction
of Roche-
ster.

Rochester, included within the limits of Kent, was erected also by Augustine, in the raigne of Ceolric, ouer the west-Saxons. It hath one Arch-Deacon, whose gouernement in spirituall causes, ruleth 3. Deanries, or 132. parish Churches.

ches, whereby appeareth, that in Kent are 393. parish churches, whereof the saide five Arch-deacons haue cure and charge. It paid to Rome at the bishops admission, 1300. Ducats or 120000.

London was erected at first by king Lucius, who made it an Archbishops See (as in due place hath already bin remembred) and so it continued till Augustine translated that title to Canterbury. It includeth Essex, Middlesex, and parte of Hertfordshire, containing (in quantity) the ancient Kingdome of the East-Angles, before it was vnted to the West-Saxons. It hath foure Arch-deaconries, (viz.) London, Essex, Middlesex and Colchester, that haue vnder them 363. parish Churches, beside peculiars. The Arch-deaconry of S. Albans, was added thereto by king Henry the eight, which hath also 25. parishes, whereof foure are in Buckingham, the rest in Hertfordshire. It payed to Rome, thre thousand 120000.

Jurisdiction
of London

Chichester beganne in the Isle of Seales or Seolfe, and was translated to Chichester in the time of William the Conqueror, when generall remoue of Sees was made, from small Villages to greater Townes. It hath Suffex onely vnder iurisdiction, wherein are 16. Deanries, and 551 parish Churches: and payde to Rome (at euery alienation) 333. Ducates.

Jurisdiction
of Chiche-
ster.

VVinchester, was giuen to Birinus, & his successors, by Kinigils & Oswald, of the Northumbers, in whose time it was erected. It gouerneth Hampshire, Surrie, Iardseie, Gardeseie, and the

Jurisdiction
of winchest.

the Isle of Wight; containing eight Deanries, 276. Parish-Churches, beside perpetuall Prelacy of the Honourable Order of the Cartier. It paid to Rome 12000. Ducates or Flozens.

Jurisdiction of Salisbury Salisbury was made chiefe See of Shirbourne, by Bythop Harman (Predecessour to Osmond) who brought it from Shirbourne to that Cittie. It governeth Barkshire, Wiltshire, and Dorsetshire. It paid to Rome 4000. Flozens.

Jurisdiction of Excester. Excester hath Deuonshire and Cornewall, sometimes two severall Bishoppicks, but (in the end) brought into one of Cornewall, and from thence to Excester, in the time of King William the Conqueror. It paid to Rome at every alienation, five thousand Ducates or Flozens.

Jurisdiction of Bath. Bath, the See whereof was sometime at Wels, before Iohn (the bishop there) annexed the church of Bath unto it, which was in An. 1094. it hath Somersetshire onely, and it paid to the Court of Rome, 430. flozens.

Jurisdiction of Worcester. Worcester, hath VVorcestershire, and part of Warwickshire; Before the Bishoppicke of Gloucester was taken from it, it paid to the Pope two thousand Ducates of Golde, at charge of euerie Prelate: It began in the time of Offa, King of the East-Angles.

Jurisdiction of Gloster. Gloucester hath Gloucestershire onely, where in are nine Deanries, and 294. Parish-Churches. It neuer paid any thing to Rome, because it was erected by King Henry the eyght, when he had abolished the Popes vsurped authority.

Jurisdiction of Hereford Hereford, hath Herefordshire, and part of Shrop-

Shropshire. It paid to Rome at euery alienation 1800. Ducates.

Lichfelde, had Couentry added to it, in the **Jurisdiction of Lichfield** raigne of King Henry the first, at the earnest sute of Robert, Bishop of that See: It hath Staffordshire, Darbeshire, part of Shropshire, and the rest of Warwickshire, boide of subiection to the See of VVorcester. It was erected in the time of Penda, King of the South-Mercians: And paid to the Pope three thousand Flozens, at every alienation.

Oxford, hath Oxfordshire onely, & neuer paid any taxation to Rome, being erected by King Henry the eight. **Jurisdiction of Oxford.**

Elie, hath Cambridgeshire, and the Isle of Elie, being at first a wealthy Abbey; it was erected by King Henry the first, in Anno 1109. It paid to the Pope at every alienation, 7000. Ducates. **Jurisdiction of Elie.**

Norwich, called in elder times Episcopatus Donnicensis, Dononiz, or Æstanglorum, was first erected at Felstow, or Felixstow; afterward remoued to Donwich; thence to Helmham; next to Theodford, or Thetford; and lastly (in the Conquerours time) to Norwich. It containeth Norfolke and Suffolke onely, but (at first) included Cambridgeshire also, and so much as lay within the kingdome of the East-Angles. It began vnder Cerpenwald, King of the East-Saxons; and paid to Rome 5000. Ducates. It contained sometime 1563. Parish-Churches, beside 88. religious Houses; but now wee heare of no more then 1200. **Jurisdiction of Norwich**

Peter-

Jurisdiction of Peterborow. Peterborow, sometimes a notable Monastery, hath Northampton and Rutlandshires, being a Diocese erected likewise by King Henrie the eyght, and neuer paid first frutes to the Pope.

Jurisdiction of Bristow. Bristow, hath Dorsetshire, sometime belonging to Salisbury: a See also erected by king Henry the eight.

Jurisdiction of Lincoln. Lincolne, of all other (of late times) was the greatest, and albeit that (out of it) were taken the Sees of Oxford and Peterborow; yet it still retaineth Lincolne, Leicester, Huntingdon, Bedford, Buckingham shires, and the rest of Hertfordshire, extending it self from Thames to Humber. It paid to the Pope at every alienation, 5000. Ducates: and began in the time of King William Rufus. Thus much of the Bishopricks in Lhoegres or England, as it was left to Loecrine; now goe we to VVales.

Jurisdiction of Landaffe. Landaffe, or the Church of Taw, hath Ecclesiasticall Jurisdiction in Glamorgan, Monmouth, Brechnoch, and Radnor shires, and paid 700. Ducates to Rome, at every exchange of Prelat. But it was a poore aunswere (vppon call) of the incumbent, in Court before the Lord President, when he said: The Dasse is here, but the Land is gone.

Jurisdiction of S. Davids. S. Davids, hath Pembroke and Caermardineshires, whose livery and first frutes to the See of Rome, was 1500. Ducates.

Jurisdiction of Bangor. Bangor is in North-wales, and hath Caernarvon, Angleseie, and Merioneth shires: and paid to

to Rome, 126. Ducates.

S. Asaphes, hath Prestholme, and part of Denbigh, and Flint shires, in ecclesiasticall Jurisdiction, and is the least in circuite in VVales, mounting (in all) not to one good Countie; yet it paid to Rome at every alienation, 470. Ducates. Hitherto of the Province of Canterburie, for so much thereof as now lieth within compasse of this Island.

The Archbishopps See of Yorke was restored about the yeare of Grace 625. in the time of Eadwin, king of Northumberland, Paulinus sitting as first Byschoppe there, by ordination of Iustus Arch-bishop of Canterbury. It hath Jurisdiction ouer Yorkeshire, Nottinghamshire, and the rest of Lancashire (not subiect to the See of Chester.) It paid to Rome 1000. Ducates, beside 5000. for the pall of the newe elect.

Chester vpon Dee, otherwise called Westchester, hath Chestershire, Darbeshire, the most part of Lancashire, euen to the Ribell, Richmond, & a part of Flint and Denbighshires in Wales. It was made a Byschoppicke by Henry the eyght, An. regni 33. Iuly 16.

Durham, hath the County of Durham, & Northumberland, with the Dales; the Bishops haue bin (sometimes) Carles Palantines, ruling vnder name and succession of Saint Cuthbert. It paid to Rome 9000. Ducates, at every alienation.

Caerleill, was erected Anno 1132. by king Henry the first, and hath Cumberland & VVestmerland in rule. It paid to the Pope a thousand flozens.

¶ n

There

Bish. of Man There is another Bishopricke, called the See of Mona, or Man, sometime named Episcopatus Sodorensis, whereof one Vvimundus was ordained the first Bishop, and John the second, in the troublesome time of king Stephen. But the gift of this Brelary is said to rest in the Earls of Darby, to nominate thereto (from time to time) such as they deeme conuenient.

¶ Of the Colledges in Cambridge and Oxford. and their Founders.

In Cambridge.

Years of the foundations	Colledges.	Founders.
1146	1. Trinity Colledge.	King Henry the 8.
1441	2. The Kings Col.	King Henry the sixt, Edward the fourth, Henry the 7. Hen. 8.
1511	3. Saint Iohns.	by L. Margaret, grand mother to Henry 8.
1505	4. Christs Colledge.	by Hen. 6. and Lady Marg. before named.
1446	5. The Queens col.	Lady Margaret, wife to Henry the sixt.
1496	6. Iesus Colledge.	John Alcock, bishop of Elie.
1342	7. Bennet Colledge.	by The Brethren of a Guild, cald Cor. Chr.
1343	8. Pembroke Hall.	Maria de Valencia, Countesse of Pembr. Hugh

9. Peter Colledge.	Hugh Balsiam, by shop of Elie.	1256
10. Gundeuill, and Caius Colledge.	Edmund Gundeuil, Parson of Tettington, and Iohn Caius, Doctor of Physicke.	1348
11. Trinity Hall.	VWilliam Bateman, bishop of Norwich.	1354
12. Clare Hall.	by Rich. Badow, Chan- celler of Cambridg.	1326
13. Katherine Hall.	Robert Woodlark, Doctor of diuinity.	1459
14. Magdalen Colle.	Edward D. of Buck, and Tho. L. Audley.	1519
15. Emanuell Colle.	Sir VValter Mild- may, &c.	1585

In Oxford.

1. Christes Church.	by King Henry the eight.	1559
2. Magdalen colledge	Wil. Wainfleet, first fellow of Merton Colledge, then scholler of Winchester, and afterward Bishop there.	1459
3. New Colledge.	Wil. Wickham. By shop of Winchester.	1375
4. Merton colledge.	by Walter Merton, By shop of Rochester.	1276
5. All Soules Col- ledge.	Hen. Chichelie, Arch bishop of Canterbury	1437
6. Corpus Christi Colledge.	Richard Fox, Bishop of Winchester.	1516
7. Lincoln colledge.	Richard Fleming, b ^{is}	1430

¶ n 2 shop

<u>1323</u>	8. Auriell Colledge.	shop of Lincolne.
<u>1340</u>	9. Duens colledge.	Abraham Browne, Almoner to R. Ed. 2. R. Eglesfield, Chaplaine to Phillip, Ducene and Wife to King Edward the third.
<u>1363</u>	10. Balioll Colledge	John Baliol, king of Scotland.
<u>1357</u>	11. Saint Iohns col- ledge.	Sir Thomas White, Lord Mayor of Lon- don.
<u>1355</u>	12. Trinity Colledge	Sir Thomas Pope Knight.
<u>1316</u>	13. Excester colledge	Walter Stapleton, bis shop of Excester.
<u>1317</u>	14. Brazen-nose.	William Smith, Bis shop of Lincolne.
<u>873</u>	15. Vniuersity Col.	William Archdeacon of Duelsme.
	16. Glocester Col- ledge.	John Gifford, who made it a Cell for 13 Monkes.
	17. Iesus Colledge.	Hugh ap Rice, Do- ctor of the Ciuill-law.

Hostels or Hals in Oxford.

Broade-gates.	} Saint Mary Hall.
Hart Hall.	
Magdalen Hall.	
Alburne Hall.	
Postminster Hall.	
	White Hall.
	New Inne.
	Edmund Hall.

The

The Names of the Shires in England
and Wales.

The first tenne Shires do lye betwæne the
Brittish Sea, and the Thames, according to
Polydore.

Kent.	}	Wiltshire.
Sussex.		Dorsetshire.
Surrey.		Somersetshire.
Hampshire.		Deuonshire.
Barkshire.		Cornewall.

On the South side of the Thames, betwæne it
and Trent, which passeth thorough the midst of
England, are 16. other Shires, five toward the
East, and the other toward the west.

Essex, sometime all Forrest, saue one hundred.	}	Huntingdon,
Middlesex.		wherein are foure hundreds.
Hertfordshire.		Buckingham.
Suffolke.		Oxford.
Norfolke.		Northampton.
Cambridgeshire, wherein are twelu hundreds.		Rutland.
Bedfordshire.		Leicestershire.
		Nottinghamshire.
		Warwickshire.
		Lincolnshire.

There are six also westward, toward Wales.

Glocester.	}	Shropshire.
Hereford.		Stafford.
Worcester.		Chestershire.

An 3

These

These are the 32. Shires, which lye by South of the River Trent; beyond which River, there are other eight.

Darby.
Yorke.
Lancaster.
Cumberland.
Westmerland.
Richmond,
wherein are five
Mapentakes;

And when it is accounted as a parcell of Yorkshire (out of which it is taken) then is it reputed for the whole Kiding.
Durham.
Northumberland.

So that in the portion sometime called Lhoegria, there are now forty Shires. In Wales also there be thirtē, whereof seauen are in South Wales.

Cardigan, or
Cereticon. } hundreds or Com-
Penmoroke, or } mots.
Penbroke. } Glamorgan.
Caermardin, } Monmouth.
wherein are nine } Brecknocke.
Radnor.

In North-wales likewise are five.

Angleſcie. } Denbigh.
Caernarvon. } Flint.
Merioneth. } Montgomerie.

Which beeing added to those of England, doe make vp 53. Shires or Counties.

¶ A

¶ A Briefe Collection, of the Originall, Antiquity, Increase and Moderne estate of the honourable City of London.

To the Worshipfull, M. Cornelius Fish,
Esquire, and Chamberlaine of
the saide most famous
Cittie.



Concerning the name of this ancient and worthy City, by diuers Authoꝝ it hath bin (as diuersly) descanted on: Tacitus, Ptolomeus, and Antoninus called it Londinium and Longidinium: Amianus Marcellinus learned it Lundinum and Augusta: Stephen (in his Citties) calleth it AINDONION: our Brittaines, Lundayn: the old Saxons, Londonceaster, or Londonbeig; Strangers, Londra and Londres; and the Inhabitants, London. By other writers (whom some iudge fabulous) it hath bin called Troia-noua, or Troy-nouant, New Troy, according to the name that Brute (first founder thereof) gaue it: Dinas Belin, Belins City; & Caer-Lud, or Luds-Towne, of King Lud: who not onely re-edified, but also gaue it that name. Erasmus deriued it from Lindum, a Cittie in the Isle of Rhodes: and so (by variety of iudgements) it hath run into the like variety of names. In which straunge streame of opinion, howe a man may best carry himselfe,

The names
by diuers
giuen to
London.

¶ n 4

with

without impeach to any, is, freely to leane each man maister, of his owne coniecture: whether Londons true name took originall from any of these fore-mentioned, or whether *Moodes* and *Groues* (being named in y^e British tongue *Lhwn*) London should receiue her title, by way of excellency, and be called, The Citty, or A City thicke of Trees, because the Britains called these woods and Groues by the names of *Citties* & *Townes*, which they had fenced with trees cast downe and plashed, to stop vp all passage.

Caesar and
Strabo, al-
leged by
M. Camden

London
burnt by
the Danes.

Wil. Malms-
bury.

But leauing the name, we finde that London was burnt and destroyed (howe faire soeuer it was built before) by the Danes, and other *Magan* enemies, about the yeare of Christ, 839. but afterward, in the yeare, 886. Alfred, King of the west-Saxons, both restored, repayzed, and made it honourably habitable: giuing the charge and keeping thereof, to his Sonne in Law Ethelred, Earle of the Mercians, with whom hee had formerly married his Daughter Ethelreda. That it was strongly defended with wals, I read, that the Londoners did shut vp their gates, and manfully withstood the Danes, preserving their king Ethelred within their wals; this was in Anno Christi, 994. Also in Anno 1016. when Edmund Ironside governed the VVest-Saxons, Canutus the Dane brought hys Fleet to the West part of the bridge, and threw a trench about the Citty, as hoping by assault to win it: but the Citizens repulsed him, and drove him from their walles. Those walles were (from time to time) well

well maintained & repayzed: with stones from the Jewes broken houses, in King Johns time, 1215. When the Barons (entring by Ealdgate, or Aldgate) brake their houses downe. And in K. Henries time the thirde, when the walles and gates were repayzed (in more seemely wise then before) at the common charge of the Citty. The circuite of London wall on the landes side, is measured thus. From the Tower of London in the East, to Ealdgate, commonly called Aldgate, 82. perches. From Algate to Byshopsgate, 86. perches: From Byshopsgate in the North, to the Postern of Criplesgate, 162. perches. From Criplesgate to Ealderigate, or Eldrich gate, 75. perches. From Ealderigate to Newgate, 66. perches. From Newgate in the West, to Ludgate, 42. perches, amounting in all to 513. perches of Alsise. From Ludgate to the Fleet Dike, 60. perches. From Fleet-bridge South, to the River of Thames, about 70. perches. Which perches (in compleat number) rise to 643. each perch containing five yards and an halfe: which in yards doe amount to 3536. & an halfe, containing 10608. foote, that make vp two English miles, & more by 608. foote.

Mainte-
nance of the
wals.

London
wall in cir-
cuite.

There were but foure Gates (at first) made in the wall of this Citty, viz: Aldgate, Eastward; Aldergate, Northward; Ludgate, Westward; and the Bridge-gate (ouer Thames) Southward. But other Gates and Posterns (for ease and conueniency of passage) were afterwarde made, as mens affayres required to other quar-
Four Gates
& no more
in elder
time,

The Pos-
terne gate
by the To-
wer.

Aldgate.

Bishopsgate

ters of the Citty. A Posterne gate was sometime neere to the Tower of London, which decaying by length of time, and a deepe Ditch made with- out the wall, it fell downe in the year, 1440. the eighteenth of King Henry the first, and was neuer after builde againe: but a plaine Cottage of Timber, Lath, and Loame, with a narrow pas- sage, being erected instead thereof, it so continu- eth. Aldgate was next in the East, so named by the antiquity thereof: for it was so called in King Edgars time: and the Soke or Franchise (wyth the Port of Aldgate, and all customs thereto ap- pertaining) were likewise given by Matilda (Da- to Henry the first) to the Priour of the B. Trini- tie, within Aldgate (and by her founded) in as ample and free maner as she enjoyed them. The third was Bishopsgate toward the North, built by some Bishop of London, as is imagined, for other certainty is not as yet found, which Gate did much ease to such as trauailed East, and by North, as to Norffolke, Suffolke, Cambridge- shire; &c. because before the erection thereof, such as iourned out at Aldgate, of necessity helde on to the miles end, and turning them on the lefte hand to Blethon-hall, now Bednal-Greene, rode directly to Cambridge Heath, and so tooke their iournes North, or East, and by North, or occa- sion required. Otherwise, refusing Aldgate way, they had no other helpe then out at Alders- gate, through Aldersgate Streete, and Goswell Street, now termed Pickt-hatch, towards Isel- don, and by a Crosse of Stone on their right hand, set

set by for a marke by the North end of Golding- lane; passed thzogh a long street (yet called Ald- streete, or Old-street) to another Crosse by Se- wers ditch Church, where now stands a smiths Forge, and there they turned againe North- wards, to Tottenham, Enfield, waltham, ware, &c. This Bishopsgate, the Dutch Marchants of the Haunce, Stiliard, or Guildhalla Tentonicorum, were bound by couenant, both to repayre and defend, at all times of daunger and extremi- ty. The fourth, was a Posterne, now called Mooregate, which one Thomas Faulconer, Maio of London, An. 1413. and third of Hen- ry the fift, caused to be made there on the Moyses side, where neuer Gate was before: that people might passe vpon cause-ways into the fielde for recreation, because the fielde was then a marsh. The fift Gate was the Posterne of Criplesgate, so called long before the Conquest, in regarde of Criples begging there: and the body of S. Ed- mond the Martyr was brought into London thereat, when it was conuayed from Bedris- worth (now called Bury S. Edmunds) thorough the East Saxons Kingdome, to the parish church of S. Gregory, neere to the Cathedral church of S. Paul, where it rested 3. daies. This posterne of Cripplesgate, was a prison of commitment for Cittizens and others, being arrested for debte or common trespasses, as now the Compters are: & it was now builded by the Brethren of London, An. 1244. But in An. 1483. Edmund Shaa, or Shaw, Goldsmith and Maio of London, gaue

The Easter-
lings.

Mooregate.

Criplesgate.

Fabians ma-
nuscript.

400. Parkes by his will, and stufte of the Olde gate, to builde it againe new, as now it is, which his executors performed in the yeare, 1491.

Aldersgate. The first was Aldersgate, or Aldersgate, not Aldrich, Elders or Elderngate, as deuied from ancient men that builded it, or trees there sometime growing: but from antiquity of the gate it selfe, being one of the foure that were first builded, and to serue the North-parts, as Aldgate did for the East, both bearing the name of Aldgate, and Alder or Aldersgate, to differ their seniority in building. The 7. was a Posterne gate made in the 6. yeare of Edw. the 6. in the Wall of the dissolved cloyster of Gray Friers, now cald Christs Church

Christs hos. and Hospitall, seruing for passage to S. Bartholomewes in Smithfield. The 8. west and by North,

New-gate. was called Newgate, because it was later buylded then the rest, by reason that S. Pauls Church being burned in the Conquerors time, about the yeare 1086. Mauritius, then bish. of London, not repaying y^e old church, but seeking to begin another, extended y^e work in such largenes of ground, that al passage from Aldgate in the East to Ludgate in the west, was almost stoppt by. Whereupon this gate was first deuised and made, and so named: seruing aptly for passage & carriages, from Aldgate, along Cornhil, through West-chap. & S. Nicholas Shambles, and the Market taking name of Newgate, to any Westward part ouer Oldborne bydye; or turning (without the gate) into Smithfield, to Iseldon. or any part North & by west. It hath bin a Gaole or prison for iellons

& other offenders long time, as the records in K. Johns time testifieth. And in an. 1422. the first of Henry 6. the executors to Richard Whittington had licenſe to reedify the said gate, which they did with his goods. The 8. gate was Ludgate in the west, builded by K. Lud, before Christs natiuitie, 66. yeares, seruing for the west, as Aldgate for the East, & was repaired with the stones of y^e Jewes defaced houses, when the Barons were in armes in K. Johns time, as Aldgate & the other gates the were. A notable testimony to confirm this assertion, appeared in the year 1581. When the gate was taken downe to be new builded, for a stone was then found in the wal, which had bin taken from one of those Jewes houses, with this Inscription thereon (but in Hebrew Characters) *Hac est statio Rabbi Moses. filij insignis Rabbi Isaac: This is the station or ward of Rabbi Moses, son of the honorable Rabbi Isaac.* And it seemed to haue bin fixed in the front of some one of the Jewes houses, as a note or signe, y^e such a one dwelled there. It was made a free prison in the 1. yeare of K. Richard 2. Nicholas Brembar bring then maior, & after confirmed (in the time of John Northampton Maior 1382) by a common Counsel in the Guild-hal, y^e freemen of the City, for debt, trespasses, accounts & contempts, shold be imprisoned in Ludgate, & for treasons, felonies, murders, and other criminall offences, Newgate shold be the prison. Lastly, there is also a breach in the City Wall, and a Bridge made of Timber ouer the Fleete Dike, betwixte Fleete-bridge and Thames, directlie

Ludgate.

Ludgate
made a free
prison.

ouer

uer against the House of Bride-Well, but it is not as (as I thinke) called any Gate.

The South
side of Lon-
don.

William
Fitz Stephē
his words.

Water gates

Queenes-
Hith.

The Stil-
yard, or
Gilda-
Halla Teu-
sonicorum.

Now concerning the South-side of the Citty, and that it was sometime walled too, the Citty being then round engirt with a Wall: the Testimony of William Fitz-Stephen (who wrote in the raigne of King Henry the second) may serue to approue it, for these are his very wordes. The Wall is high and great, well towred on the North-side, with due distances betweene the Towers. On the South-side also, the Citty was walled and towred: but the Fishfull Riuer of Thames, with his ebbing and flowing, hath long since subuerted them. If then wee shall speake of Water-Gates, as already wee haue done of Land-gates, and, being now in the west, returne towards the East; the first then was called Ripa Reginae, the Queens-banck, or Queens Hith, deseruing well to bee esteemed a Water-Gate, and the very chiefe of the Citty, being a common Strand or landing place, equall with, and (in olde time) farre excellling Belines-Gate. For, beside the antiquity thereof, and to whom, (in those daies) it seuerally appertained; I finde that King Henry the third, in the ninth of his raigne, commaunded the Constables of the Tower of London, to arrest the Shippes of the Cinque-Portes on the Riuer of Thames, and compell them to bring their Cozne and Fish to no other place, but to the Queenes-Hith only. And when cozn arrived between the Gate of Guilden-hall, of the Merchantes of Colleyne, and the

Soke of the Arch-bishop of Canterbury (for hee had then a House nere to the Blacke-Fryers) it was not to bee measured by any other quarter, then that of the Queenes Soke or Hith, on paine of forty shillings amercement. Afterward, Queenes-Hith, and the Farme thereof (granted by Richard Earle of Cornewall) was by the said King Henry the third, confirmed to Iohn Gisors then Mayor, the Communitie of London, and their Successours for ever (as appeareth by his royall Charter) for the sum of fifty poundes. It was also ordained by King Edward the fourth, that all Shippes, Vessels, or Boates, bringing provision of Victuall to the Citty (of what quality soeuer) if but one Vessel only: it came to the Queenes-Hith; if two, the one to Queenes-Hithe, the other to Belins-gate; if three, two to Queenes-Hithe, the third to Belins-gate, &c. so that (alwaies) the more part came to Queenes-Hithe. But if the Vessel were so great, comming with Salt or otherwise, from the Bay, and could not conveniently come to these Gates or Keyes; it was then to bee conuayed to them, (as aforesaid) by Lighters.

Downe-gate is the next, and was so named (as is supposed) by reason of the waies suddaine descent or stooping, from Saint Johns Church in Walbroke, to the Riuer of Thames. It was sometime a large Water-gate, frequented with Shippes and vessels, like to the Queenes-Hithe; and appeared (by an Inquisition, in the twentieth yeare of Henry the third) to be a part thereof,

The order
for the Cit-
ties provisi-
on, at Belins
gate, and
Queenes-
hith.

Downe-
gate.

of, being ordered by the customes thereto belonging.

Wolfes-gate Wolfes-gate, now out of use; one part being builded on by the Earle of Shrewsbury, the other by the Chamberlain of London, and now called Cold-Harbor.

Ebgate. Ebgate, so called of olde time: but now it is a narrow passage to the Thames, called Ebgate-lane, or old Swan.

Oyster-gate Oyster-gate, so called of Oysters usually there sold, as chiefest market for them, and other shell-fish. There now stands the water-engine, that serves the Citty with water, made in the yeare 1582. by Peter Moris, Dutchman.

Bridge-gate. Bridge-gate, so called of London Bridge, whereon it standeth, being one of the Citties first foure and principall Gates, and long before the Conquest, when there (then) stood a bridge of Timber.

Buttolphs-gate. Buttolphs-gate, so called of the Parish-church of S. Buttolph next adjoining: which Gate was some time given, and confirmed by William the Conqueror, to the Monkes of Westminster, by vertue of a former gift, which Almundus (of the Port of S. Buttolph) gave them, when hee was there made Monke.

Belins-gate. Belins-gate, or Belingsgate, the largest water-gate now on the Thames, and most frequented. Belin, a King of the Brittons (according to Geoffrey of Monmouth) first built it, and gave it his owne name, about 400. years before Christs Nativity.

There

There are two Water-gates more, one on the west-side of Wooll-wharffe, or Customers Key, gates. beautifully enlarged and built of late: This gate is commonly called the Water-Gate, at South end of Water-lane. The other, by the Lower Bulwarke, and is the last and furthest Water-gate Eastward. Beside these common Water-gates, there were then diuers private wharffes & keies, all along from East to West of the Citty, on the banck of the Riuer of Thames.

Before we part further from this famous riuer, let London- us here remember Londonbridge ouer it, which, bridge. before there was any bridge at all, or it a bridge of timber, there was a Ferry kept in the same place, & no other passage was there then to Southwark, but by the Ferry onely. The Ferry-man and his Wife dying, left this Ferry to their only daughter, named Mary; who (with her Parents goods left her, & the profits arising from the ferry) built a house of Sisters, where the East part of S. Ma- S. Marie ry Querries Church (aboue the Duler) now standeth, and where she her selfe was buried; giuing them also the ouer sight & benefits of the ferry. Afterward this house of Sisters (being conuerted to a Colledge of Priestes) the Priestes builded the Bridge of timber, and kept it in good reparations, till the continuall charges growing ouer-burthensome, about the yeare 1176. the course of the Ri- London- bridge of uer being then turned another way, for a time by a trench purposely deuised (beginning about Redriffe, or Redriffe in the East, and ending aboue Patrickleie, or Batersley in the west) the Bridge of

London
bridge of
Timber
burnt.

of stone began to be founded, and continued 33. yeares in building. The Bridge of timber, in the yeare 1136. was burnt down by fire, but in An. 1163. it was not only repaired, but new made of Timber againe, by one Peter of Cole-Church, Priest and Chaplaine: who also began the foundation of the Stone-bridge, somewhat neer to the Timber-bridge, and liued till within foure yeares of the works ending, being buried in a Chappell erected on the Bridge: But the whole bridge of stone, was finished by the worthy Merchants of London, Setle Mercer, Wil. Almaine, & Benedict Botewrite, principal Maisters of that work.

Other bridges of stone, also belonging to the City, as Fleetbridge without Ludgate, made at the charges of Iohn Wels, Maior, Anno. 1431. Oldbourne Oldborne-bridge, so called of a Bourne, which sometime ran down Old-borne. Cowbridge, by Cow-bridge-street, or Cow-lane; which being decayed, another of timber was made by Chick-lane. Beside, there were other Bridges over the Town-ditch, as without Aldgate, Bishopsgate, Mooregate, Cripples-gate, Aldersgate, the Porterne of Christs Hospitall, Newgate, and Ludgate, all paved over with stone, and leuelled with the streets: beside diuers bridges (in elder times) over the course of Walbrooke.

While wee are thus speaking of Water and Bridges, belonging to the City, heere I thinke it most conuenient also, to say somewhat concerning the Conduits, and swete waters conuained to them by Pipes of Lead. The first Cisterne where

whereof (castellated with Stone in the City of London) was called the great Conduit in West-cheape, which was begun to be builded in the year 1285. Henry Wales, then being Mayor. The Tonne upon Cornehill, was cesterne in Anno. 1401. Iohn Chadworth then being Mayor. Bofses of water, at Belins-gate; by Paules-wharffe, and by S. Gyles Church without Cripples-gate, were made about the yeare 1423.

Water was brought to the Standard in West Cheape, about the yeare 1431. And King Henry the first, in An. 1442. granted to Iohn Hatharley, Mayor, licence to take vpp 200. ffordar of Lead, for the building of Conduites; a common Granery, and of a new Crosse in West-Cheape, for Honor of the City.

The Conduit in Aldermanbury, and the Standard in Fleet-street, were made and finished by the executors of Sir Wil. Eastfield, in An. 1471. A Cisterne was also added to the Standard in Fleet-street; a second made at Fleet-bridge; and another without Cripples-gate, in An. 1478.

The Conduit in Grasle-street, in An. 1491. The Conduit at Old-bourne Crosse, about 1498. and made new againe by Master William Lambe, 1577. with an help also at Old-bourne-bridge.

The little Conduite, commonly termed the Billing-Conduit, by the Stocks-Market, about 1500.

The Conduit at Bishops-gate, 1513.

The Conduit at London-wall, 1528.

The Conduit without Aldgate, 1535.

The Conduite in Lothbury and Colman-Street, 1546.

The Conduit of Thames-water, at Downegate, 1568.

For may I hear forget the Standard of Thames water by Leaden-hall, which being deriued from the fozier of water, made by Peter Moris sozenamed, ascending by ouer the Skyle of S. Magnus Church, at the north end of London bridge, conuaieyth water into many mens houses in Thames streete, New-Fish-streete, Grasse-streete; And so mounteth by stil in Pipes, to the North-west corner of Leaden-Hall (the highest ground in at the Citty) where the wast of the maine Pipe rising into this Standard (prouided at the cities charge) at euery tide was prouided to run forth 4. waies, at foure seuerall spouts, for plentiful seruite of the nere adioyning Inhabitants, and cleansing the Channels passing those foure seuerall waies.

The Conduits of Thames-water, by the Parish Churches of S. Mary Magdalen, and Saint Nicholas Cold-Abbey, nere to old Fish-Strate, were made in An. 1583. Beside the water-fozier by London Bridge, before remembred, and another (made since) nere to Broken-wharffe, for conueiance of Thames-water into mens Houses, by an English gentleman, named M. Bevis Bulmar, in An. 1594. For will wee forget the new Conduit, lately built by Aldersgate, & Thames-water also thither conuaied, by an English Gentleman, named Thomas Hayes, in An. 1610.

Come

Of the successe of Times.

Come we now to the ancient deuision of this worthy Citty, which (as Fitz-Stephen, sayeth, four hundred yeares agoe.) This Citty, euen as Rome, is deuided into Wards. It hath yearelie Sheriffes, instead of Consuls; and hath the dignitie of Senators, in Aldermen. Whose wards, both before, and in the raigue of Henry the third, were 24. in number, 13, lying on the East-side of Walbrooke, and 11. on the West: but those wards in the west, growing in greatnes to exceede the other in the East: in Anno 1393. and 2. of Richard the second, Faringdon Ward, (being then one entire ward) was by Parliament deuided into two, also termed Faringdon within, Faringdon without, and allowed to haue two Aldermen. So y twelve wards were then on the west side of Walbrooke, and the whole number made 25. wards. The Liberties of the Borough of South-warke, were afterwarde purchased by the Maior, Communalty, and Cittizens, and added to London, as the 26. warde, in An. 1150. whereby the number of Aldermen grewe to bee 26. But because my purposed breuity, keeps within the Cities bounds only, and not (at this time, till publication of my generall Chronicle of London and Middlesex, euen so farre as the Worde Maior and Sheriffes power extendeth) permits mee to exceede that compasse; I shall nowe say nothing, eyther of South-warke, or Londons Subburbs.

Portoken ward (so named of the franchise of Portoken Aldgate) was sometime a Guild, and beganne in

Do 3

King

The Cities deuision into Wards.

26. wards, 26. Aldermen

King
Edgar's
time.

King Edgars time, about 600. yeares since, being called Knighten Guilde, of 13. poore knights or Souldiours, that (being fauoured by the King and Land, for (seruice done them) had a parcel of Land granted them on the Citties East side, and liberty of a Guild for euer. Provided, that each of them should victoriously accomplishe 3. combates; one aboue ground, one vnder ground; & the third in the water: Also, at a certaine day appointed, they shoulde run with Speares in East Smithfield, against all comers: all which, they worthily performed, and therefore the King called it Knighten Guilde. I read but of one parish church in this ward, which is called S. Burdolph without Algate, and a small parish Church, for the Inhabitants of the Close, sometime called S. Trinity, afterward the Minories. This Portoken Ward hath an Alderman, and his Deputy, sixe common Counsellors, foure Constables, four Scauengers, eighteen wardmote Enquestmen, and a Beadle. It is seised at foure pounde, ten shillings, for the fiftene.

Tower
Street
Ward.

Tower-street Ward, is the first warde within London-wall East-ward. In which ward are three parish churches, viz. Alhalloves Barking, S. Olave in Hart-street, and S. Dunstane in the East, beside S. Peter in the Tower, for the inhabitants there. Also two Halles of Companies, viz. Cloth-workers Hall, in Mincheon Lane, and Bakers Hall, in Hart or Harpe Lane. This ward hath an Alderman, and his Deputy; common Counsell, eight: Constables thirteen. Scauengers

Church
Ward
Tower
Hall

uengers, twelue. Wardemote Enquest, thirteene, & a Beadle: It is also seised at 26. poundes to the fiftene.

Aldgate Ward, taketh name of the Gate. In which ward are three parish churches, viz. S. Katherine Christ-Church: Saint Andrew Vnder-shaft, and S. Katherine Coleman. Likewise three Halles of Societies or companies: Iremongers Hall, in Fen-Church-streete, Bricklayers Hall, in Sprinkle Alley, now called Sugarloafe Alley, of the like signe: and Fletchers Hall in S. Mary street. It hath an Alderman and his Deputy, sixe common Counsellors, nine Scauengers, eightene Wardemote Enquestmen, and a Beadle. It is also tared at five pound to the fiftene.

Algate ward

* Of a shaft
or Maypole
higher then
the Church
Steeple.

* Of Colmā
Haw, a Haw
yard or gar-
den.

Limestreet Ward, so named, of vsuall making and selling of Lime there in former times, as is supposed. In this ward standeth Leaden-Hall, which, before it was built of Stone, appertained to Sir Hugh Neuill Knight, in Anno 1309. Afterward, the famous and mighty man, Syr Simon Eyre, sometime an Vpholster, and next a Draper, builded it square of Stone, as now it standeth, with a fayre and large chappell in the East side of the Quadrant, on the porch wherof, was engrauen, *Dextra Domini exaltauit me*; The right hand of the Lord hath exalted mee: And on the North-wall in the Church, these wordes, *Honorandus famosus Mercator Simon Eyre, huius operis, &c.* The honorable and famous Marchant Simon Eyre, founder of this worke, once

Limestreete
Ward.

Leaden hall

Maioir

Maioꝛ of this Cittie, and Cittizen and Draper of the same. He builded there also a goodly Granary for coꝛne, and made there an open and free market. It was once intended for a Burse, for assembly of Merchants: but tooke not effect, the Merchants meeting still in Lombard-streete, as befoꝛe they had done. In this ward, is not anie Parish church, but shal portions of two parishes, and no hall of any company. It hath an Alderman and his Deputy, foue common Counsellors, foure Constables, two Scavengers, sixtene wardemote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is taxed at one pound, nine shillings, five pence half penny farthing in the sixtene.

Bishop gate
Ward.

Byshopsgate ward, so named of the gate, supposed to be built by a byshop of London. Within this warde and Liberties of London, standeth the Hospitall of S. Marie of Bethlem, founded by Simon Fitz-Mary, Sheriffe of London, Anno. 1246. beeing an Hospitall for distracted people. Also, a goodly churchyard for burial of the dead, enclosed with a wall of bricke, performed at the charge of Sir Thomas Roe, Merchant Tayloꝛ, and Loꝛde Maioꝛ of London. There is likewise a goodly house, named Fishers-folly by Querne Elizabeth; and Crosbies place, so called by the builder thereof, Sir John Crosbie, Grocer and Woolman. Also Gresham Colledge, builded by Sir Thomas Gresham, knight, and appointed (by his will) to be a colledge of Readers (wyth large stipends allotted them) in Divinity, Law, Philosophie, Astronomy, Geometry, and Musicke.

Hospita'll of
Bethlem.
New church
yard.

Fishers folly

Crosby
place.

Gresham
Colledge.

In this ward is thre parish churches, viz. Saint Buttolphes without Byshopsgate, S. Ethelburge within the Gate, S. Helens adioyning to the Runnes Wynd. There was also (sometime) the parish Clerkes Hall, and nowe there is the Leather Sellers Hall, which they haue (verie lately) to their great cost, new builded. It hath an Alderman, and his two Deputies, one without, and the other within the gate, 6. common Counsellors, 7. Constables, 7. Scavengers, 13. wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is taxed at 13. li. to the fistane.

Leather Sellers
Hall.

Broadstreet ward, tooke name of a street, called Brodestreet, wherein are diuers goodly houses, one that belonged to Sir William Powlet, Loꝛd Treasurer, another to the Earle of Shrewsbury, and a third, wherein (sometime dwelt the Earle of Oxford, neere to Sir Thomas Greshams Almes houses. In this ward are five parish churches, viz. Alhallowes by the wall, at the North-end of Brodestreet, S. Peters the poore, at the South-end, S. Martines Oseswitch, in Three-needle street, S. Bennet * Fynk, Saint Bartholomew by the Exchange, and S. Christopher by the Stockes Market. Beside the Friers Augustines, which serueth for the Dutch nation, and another church serving in like manner for the French. There is also a free Schoole called S. Anthonies schoole, and two halls of societies: one in Throgmorton street, called Drapers hall, which somtime belonged to the Loꝛd Cromwel; the other in Three-needle-streete, called Merchant Taylers hall.

* Of three
men so named,
founders thereof
* Of Fynke
the founder.

S Anthonies
schoole,
Drapers hall

Merchant
Taylers hall.

chant Taylozs Hall. This ward hath an Aldermon and his deputy, 10. common counsellors, 10 Constables, 8. Scavengers, 12. wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is tared to the fifteene in London at 27. li. and accounted in the Erchequer after 25. li.

Corne-hill
Ward
The Wey-
house.

Cornhil ward, deriued the name thereof from a corne Market, which had bin there kept time out of mind. In this ward is the Weyhouse of Kings beame, for all Merchandizes brought from beyond the seas; which house was builded by Syr Thomas Louell, knight, and a faire front of Wenelements towards the street, which he gaue to the worshipfull company of Grocers, he being a free Brother of that society. There is also the Wasse

The Royall
Exchange.

for Merchants, afterward by Queen Elizabeth named the Royal Exchange, builded by S. Thomas Gresham, knight, Agent to her Maiesty, begun in an. 1566. and finished 1567. In this ward likewise is a Grammer Schoole, adioyning to S. Peters church, which in times past, had bin a Library, and repaired by the executors of sir Iohn Crosby, Alderman. In Corne-hill ward are two parish churches, viz. S. Peters vpon Cornhill, builded in the time of king Lucius, by Thean, the first Arch-bishop of London; And S. Michael Tharchangell, the foundation thereof being vncertaine, but William Rus, Alderman, gaue a fayre bell to this church, naming it Rus (corruptly called Rouse) to ring out nightly at eight of the clock. No hall of any Society is in this ward, but it hath an Alderman and his Depatie, foure

Rus Bell in
Cornehill.

com

common counsellors, foure constables, four Scavengers, fifteen wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle: It is charged at sixteene pound in the fifteene.

Langborne Warde, bearing name of a long Bourn of sweete water, which (in elder times) breaking forth into Fen-church street, ran along the same streete, and Lombards street also, called of the Longobards, or Lombards (Merchaunts there meeting twice a day) to the west end of S. Mary woolnothes church, where turning southward, and breaking into small shares, Killes, or streames: it gaue a name to Shareborn Lane, South-borne Lane, or Shirborne Lane, running thence South into the Thames. In this warde are seauen Parish churches, viz. S. Gabriell Fenchurch, corruptly called Fanchurch; Saint Dionis Backchurch, at Lime-street end; Alhallowes Staning, or Stane church, or Stone church (by differing from others, then builded of timber) at Martlane end. S. Edmond the king & martir. in Lombardsstreet, nere Birchouers lane, now called Birchen lane. Alhallowes in Lombardes street; S. Nicholas Acon or Hacon, in S. Nicholas lane; and S. Mary Woolnoth in Lombardstreet. One Hal there is in this ward called Pewterers Hall, in Limestreet, which society was admitted a brotherhood, in the 13. yeare of Edward the 4. It hath also an Alderman & his deputy, 8. common counsellors, 15. constables, 9. Scavengers, 17. wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle: In the Erchequer, it is tared at 20 li. 9. s. d. to the fifteen.

Langborne
Ward, all
fenny about
with a Mo-
rish ground.

*Of Bir-
choner the
first builder
and owner.

Pewterers
Hall.

Belins

Belins-gate
Ward.

Belins gate, or Billingsgate ward (so named of Belin the king, first founder of the gate or haven) wherein are many keyes and wharves, whereof is not now my purpose to speake, because they are referred to my Chronicle of London at large. In this ward are five parish churches, viz. Saint Buttolph by Belings-gate, in Thames street, S. Marie on the Hill, the street or lane being so called; S. Margaret Pattens (because pattens were usually there made and solde) in Rode lane; S. Andrew Hubbert, in East cheape; and Saynt George in Buttolph-lane. It hath also an Alderman and his Deputy, common counsellors uncertaine, Constables eleven, Scavengers six, Wardmote Enquest foueteene, and a Beadle. It is taxed in London to the fiftene, at two & thirty pound, and in the Exchequer, at one and thirty pound, ten shillings.

Bridgeward

Bridge-ward within, receiued name of the famous Bridge of London. In it are foure parish churches, viz. S. Magnus, at the Bridge-foote, Saint Margaret in Bridge-street, S. Leonard Milke Church (so named of William Melker, an especially builder thereof) on Fish-street hill, and S. Benet Grasse-church, so tearmed of the Hearbe-Market there kept. In this ward also, is the Fishmongers Hall, which Societie were (sometime) two severall companies, called Stock-fishmongers, and Saltfishmongers: and they had five severall Halls, because their companie was so great. It hath an Alderman and his Deputy, fiftene common counsellors, fiftene con-

Fishmon-
gers Hall.
Stock fish-
mongers.
Salt fish-
mongers.

Stables,

Stables, Scavengers six, fiftene wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is taxed at 47. pound to the fiftene.

Candlewick-street Ward, or Candle-wright street Ward, so called (as is likeliest) of Chandler or makers of candles, both of wax and Tallow, who seemed (to) the moze part) there to inhabite. Albeit it is verie evident, that Weavers of Drapery, Taperie, and Paperie, did altogether dwell there, time out of minde; till they were out-moyned, and their place possessed by the Drapers.

Candlewick
street ward.

Weavers of
Drapery,
Taperie, and
Paperie.

In this Ward are five Parish churches, (viz.) Saint Clements in East-cheape, Saynt Mary Abchurch, or Vpchurch, Saint Michael in Crookedlane, which was sometime called the colledge in Crooked-lane, Saint Marne Orgar, and Saint Lawrence Poultney, so called by John Poultney, Mayor of London, who made it a colledge of Iesus, and of Corpus Christi, for a Wyfiter and seauen Chaplaynes. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie, eight common counsellors, eyght constables, six Scavengers, twelue Wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is taxed at fiftene pound to the fiftene.

Walbrooke Ward, taketh name of the street, where under was (sometime) a brooke, named Wallus Brooke, as hath already beene elsewhere declared. In which Ward are five Parish churches, viz. S. Swithen by London-stone, S. Mary Woolchurch, so called of a beam to

Walbrooke
Ward.

Wooll-
Church
Haw or
Beame.

to weigh wooll, and was called Wooll Church Haw; Saint Stephen by Walbrooke; Saint Iohn upon Walbrooke; and Saint Mary But-haw, or Boathaw, so called, of nere adioyning to a Ward or Haw, where Boates (in elder times) were made, and landed (from Downegate) there to be mended. It hath an Alderman and his Deputy; 11. common Councillers; 9. Constables; 6. Scauengers; 13. Wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is taxed in London at 33. pounds to the fiftene.

Downegate
Ward.

Guild Aul:
Teutonico-
rum.

Colde Har-
brough.

Merchaunt
Taylors
schoole, the
Mannor of
the Rose.

Downgate ward, so cald, upon the down descending to the Thames. In this ward is the Guilda Aula, or Halla Teutonicorū, for the Merchants of the Haunce, or of Allemaigne, commonly cald the Stilyard, where they had their Garners to lay vppon their Coyne, and other commodities; as Cables, Ropes, Hatts, Witche Warre, Flax, Hemp, Linnen-cloth, Mainescots, Wax, Steele, &c. There is also a House, anciently called Cold-Harbrough, which (after diuers passages from Man to Man) in the eyght yeare of King Edward the third, came to Sir Iohn Poultney, who hauing bene Maior foure times in that house, it then tooke the name of Poultnays Inne. More, there is a famous Grammar Schoole, founded in the yeare 1561. by the Wardens and assistants of the Merchant Taylors, in the Parish of Saint Laurance Poultney. Richard Hilles, sometime Maister of that worthy Society, had giuen formerly five hundred poundes towarde the purchase of an house, called The Mannor of the

the Rose, belonging sometime to the Duke of Buckingham, wherein the saide Schoole is kept. In this Ward are two Parish Churches (viz:) Alhallowes ad focum, in the Ropery, (because Hay was there sold at Hay-wharffe, and Ropes in the High-streete) or Alhallowes the more; and Alhallowes on the Cellers (because it standeth on Vaults) or Alhallowes the lesse. There are likewise foure seuerall Halls of Companies, as, vpon Walbrooke, the Skinners Hall, belonging to that Worshipfull Company; and Tallow-Chandlers Hall; Ioyners Hall in Greenewich-lane, now called Fryer-lane; and Dyers Hall in Thames-streete. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie; 9. common Councillers; 8. Constables; 5. Scauengers; 14. Wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. It is taxed at 28. pounds to the fiftene. Here we end the thirteene Wardes, that are all on the East side of the water course of Walbrooke, not any one house lying on the West-side.

Skinners
hall.
Tallow-
Chandlers
Hall.
Ioyners hall
Dyers Hall

¶ Wardes on the West-side of
Walbrooke.



Intry Ward, of Vintoners (cled in olde time Merchants Vintoners) & the Vintry, for the Merchantes of Burdeaux there craned by their winnes, out of Lighters and other Vessels, and being there landed, made Sale of them within forty daies after, &c. There are in this

Vintry
ward.

Whitting-
ton's Col-
ledge.

Parish
Clerks hall.

Vintners
hall.
Plummers
Hall.
Fruiterers
Hall.
Cutlers hall
Glasiers hal

Cordwainer
street ward.

this Ward, foure Parish Churches (viz.) Saint Michael Pater Noster in the Royall, which Church was new builded and made a Colledge of Saint Spirit, and Saint Marie, founded by Richard Whittington, Mercer, foure times Maior; for a Maister, foure fellowes Maisters of Art; Clerkes, Conducts, Chorists, &c. And an Almes-house called Gods-house, or Hospital, for thirtene poore Men, &c. Saint Thomas Apostle, by Wringwren-lane; Saint Martine in the Vintie, sometime called Saint Martine de Beremand Church; and Saint Iames at Garlicke-Hithe, because Garlicke was sold usually there, on the bancke of the Riuer of Thames. Richard Plat, Brewer, founded a Fre-school there, 1601. In Brode lane is y^e Parish Clerks Hall purchased by them, after losse of their Hall in Byshop-gatestreet. Vintoners Hall, nere the Lane called Stodies Lane, giuen them by Sir Iohn Stodie, Vintoner, Mayor, in Anno 1357. Plummers Hall in Palmers Lane, now called Anchor-lane. Fruiterers Hall, in Worcester house, some-times belonging to the Carles of Worcester. Cutlers Hall, in Horsebridgestreet. Glasiers Hall in Kerion Lane: All which Halls are in the said Ward. It hath also an Alderman and his Deputy; nine Common Councillers; nine Constables; foure Scavengers; foureteene Wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle: It is taxed at five pounds, thirtene Shillings, foure pence, to the sixtene.

Cordwainer-streete-ward, taking name of Cord-

Cordwainers, or Shoe-makers, Curriers, and Workers of Leather, there dwelling. In this Ward are three Parish-churches, viz. Saint Anthonies in Budge-Rowe, corruptly called Saint Andlings; Alde Mary Church; and new Marie Church, or Mary le Bow, of Saint Marie de Arcubus, in West-Cheaping, being builded (in the Conquerours time) vpon Arches: In which Church is kept the Court of the Arches, which here taketh name of the place, & not of the Court. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputy; common Councillers eight, Constables, 8. Scavengers eight, Wardmote Enquest foureteene, and a Beadle. It is taxed in London to the sixtene, at 5 2. li. 16. s. And in the Exchequer at 5 2. li. 6. s.

Nine a
clocke Bell
is nightly
rung.

Cheape-Ward, taking name of the Market there kept, called West-cheaping, hath in it seauen Parish Churches, viz. Saint Benet Shrog, or Shorehog, but the most ancient name is Benet Shorne, of Benedict Shorne, some-time a Cittizen and Stocke-fish-Donger, a newe builder, repayer, and Benefactor thereof. S. Pancrace by Sopars-lane; Saint Mildred in the Poultry; Saint Marie Cole-church, of one Cole that builded it; Saint Martin Pomerie, in Ironmong-lane, so called of Apples some-time there growing; Alhallowes in Honny-Lane; Saint Laurance in the lury, and the Chappell of Guild-Hall, sometime a Colledge. Guild Hall it selfe also is in this Ward, begunne to be new builded in Anno 1411. the twelfth of Henry the fourth,

Gilde Hall
built, Anno
1411.

by Thomas Knoles then Maioz, and the Aldermen his brethren, to the charge whereof the companies gaue large benetolences: it was made (of a little cottage :) so large and goodlie as now it standeth, to haue the Courts for the Cittie kept therein, being nine in number.

The Courts kept in Guild.

Courts for
the City.

1. Court of Common Councill.
2. Court of the Lord Maior, and the Aldermen his Bretheren.
3. The Court of Hustings.
4. The Court of Orphanes.
5. The Sheriffes two Courts.
6. The Court of the Wardmote.
7. The Court of Hall-mote.
8. The Court of Requests, commonly called the Court of Conscience.
9. The Chamberlaines Court for Prentises, and making them free.

Moreover, in this Ward, are the Halls of two very worshipfull Companies; the Grocers Hall in Conyhope lane, which Companie being first called Pepperers, were incorporated by the name of Grocers, in Anno 1345. The Mercers Hall, sometime an Hospitall, entituled of Saint Thomas of Acon, or Acars, wherein is said a Free Schole to haue bene long kept. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputy, 11. common Councillers; 9. Scavengers; 12. Wardmote Enquest,

Mercers
Chappell
and Hall.

Enquest, and a Beadle. In London it is sessed at 72. li. 16. s. to the fifteen, and in the Erchequer, at 72. li. 11. s.

Colemanstreere-ward, taking name of a street ^{Coleman street ward.} so called, by one Coleman, the first builder and owner thereof, wherein are three Parish Churches, viz. Saint Olane Vpwell in the old Jewry, called Colechurch-streere sometimes; Saint Margaret in Lothbury: and Saint Stephen in Colemanstreere. It was named the Old Jewry, because the Iewes had a Synagogue, where now standeth the Tauerne, knowne by the name of the Windmill, and their dwelling was all thereabout. The Founders Hall in Lothbury; Lathbery, or Loadberie, so named of a ^{Founders hall.} very old Court in elder time there kept; whereof some vse hath bin, and is also made by the Merchants Adventures: and in Coleman street is the Armorers Hall, who were made a fraternitie ^{Armorers Hall.} or Guild of S. George, in the first yeare of King Henry the first. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie; common Counsellors foure, Constables foure, Scavengers foure, wardmote Enquest thirteene, and a Beadle. It is taxed at fiftene pounds, sixteen shillings nine pence to the fiftene.

Bassings Hall Ward, and said to be so named ^{Bassings Hall ward.} of Bassinges Hall, the very principall House of the Ward, which appertained to the familie of the Bassings (a name of great renoune and antiquity in this Realme) who builded the goodlie building (afterward called Bakewell Hall, of one

Bassings
Haugh.

Masons hall
Weauers
hall.

Weauers of
Woollen
Clothes.

Girdlers hal
Coopers
Hall.

Cripples
gate Ward.

Thomas Bakewel dwelling there, corruptly tearmed Blackwell Hall) and gaue it the name of Bassings Haugh, or Hall, as by theyr Armes, (before the old worke was taken downe) in very many places appeared. In this Ward is but one Parish Church, called Saint Michael at Bassings Haugh: and diuers Halles of Companies, as Masons Hall, of what antiquity, appeareth not. Weauers Hall, being then Weauers of Woollen-cloth, whose Fraternity or Guilde is of great antiquity and power, confirmed by Charter from King Henrie the second, as they held it in time of his Grandfather, King Henrie the first, or rather (as the very wordes are) freer, better, worshipfuller, and wholier, then in his said Grand-fathers time.

Other ordinaunces were there then beside, that Woollen-cloathes shoulde bee in breadth two yardes within the Lisses, and as good in the midst, as in the sides, &c. But if any Man made Cloath of Spanish Wooll, mixed with English Wooll; the Port-graue, or principall Magistrate of London ought to burne it, &c. There is also Girdlers Hall, and Coopers haue their Hall neer to the Parish Church of Saint Michael. This Ward hath an Alderman and his Deputy, foure Common Councillers; two Constables; two Scavengers; 17. Wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. In London it is taxed at 7.li. and so in the Erchequer likewise, to the fifteene.

Cripples-gate Ward, so named of the gate, called Cripples-gate, wherein are 6. parish churches, viz.

viz. S. Mary Aldermanbury, of a Bery or court, hal: here kept, now cald the Guildhal, S. Alphage (sometime Elting Hospital or spittle) by London wall, S. Mary Magdalen in Milkstreet, S. Albons in woodstreet, S. Michael in Huggenlane, and S. Giles without Cripplesgate. Halles of companies, are Haberdashers Hall, in Mayden lane, and Waxchandlers Hall there also. Pinners hal sometime, but now Plasterers Hall, in Adlestree: and Pinners Hal is now in Siluerstreet. Brewers Hall likewise in Adlestree, and Bowyers Hall not farre from Monksweil-street. This warde hath an Alderman and his Deputy within the Gate, eight common counsellers, nine constables, twelue scavengers, fifteen wardmote Enquest, and a beadle. Without the Gate also, it hath a Deputy, two common counsellors, foure constables, foure Scavengers, seauenteen wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle: It is taxed in London at forty pound to the fifteene.

Aldersgate Warde, taking name likewise of Aldersgate, hath six Parish churches in it (viz.) saint Marie Staining, in Stayning lane, S. Iohn Zachary, in Engaine or Maidenlane, S. Leonard in Fauster-lane, saint Olaus in Siluerstreet, saint Anne by Aldersgate, and saint Buttolph without Aldersgate. Halls of companies, first, Goldsmiths Hall at Maydenlane end, they beeing an ancient and very worshipfull society; for the first Maio: that euer was in London, was a brother of that society, named Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Lieftane, who continued Maio: more then 24. years

Haberdashers hall.
Waxchandlers hall.
Plasterers hall.
Brewers hal.
Pinners hal.
Bowyers hal

Aldersgate Ward

Goldsmiths Hall.

Cooks hall. yeares together. The Cookes or Paſtelers haue a Hall alſo in Alderſgateſtreet, and they were admitted to be a company, and to haue a Mayor and Wardens, in the 22. yeare of Edward the fourth. This ward hath an Alderman and his two Deputies; one within, the other without, common counſellers ſiue, Conſtables, 8. Scavengers, 9. wardmote Enqueſt, ſourteene, and a Beadle. In London it is tared at ſeauen pound to the fiſteene, and in Erchequer at ſix pounde, nineteene ſhillings.

Faringdon ward within

Faringdon ward within, or Infra, diſtinguiſhed (by that word of difference) from the other warde of the ſame name, which is without the city wals, and thercon tearmed Faringdon extra, or without. Yet (in elder times) theſe two wardes were but one, and vnder the care of one alderman, vntill the 17. yeare of king Richard the ſecond; when, the greatneſſe thereof cauſed it to be deuided into two wardes, being then ordered (by parliament) to haue two aldermen alſo as to this day it continueth. This whole great ward of Faringdon both within and without, tearmed her name of W. Faringdon, or Farendon, Goldſmith, alderman of that warde, and one of the ſheriffes of London, in anno 1281. the ninth yeare of king Edward the firſt, when he purchaſed the aldermanry of this ward, as is euident to be ſene, by an abſtract of deedes, from Thomas de Ardene, or Arderne, to Ankerin^o de Auern, Ralphe le Feure, and ſo to William Faringdon, or Farendon, cittizen and Goldſmith, and to his heires.

How Faringdon ward took name.

heires, ſo comming to Nicholas Faringdon, ſon to the ſaid William, which Nicholas was a goldſmith alſo, and 4. times Mayor: liuing 53. yeares after his firſt being Mayor, and hee buylded the Arch or gate by S. Auguſtines Church, which giueth paſſage into the South Churchyard of S. Pauls.

In this ward of Faringdon within, is the goodly Cathedral Church of S. Paule, and 9. other pariſh Churches beſide, viz. S. Peter at the croſſe in Weſt cheape, Saint Faulter in Faulter-lane; Chriſt Church, made a Pariſh church of the Gray Friers Church, and of two Pariſh churches, S. Nicholas, and ſaint Ewin, and alſo an Hoſpitall for poore childe, ſaint Mathew in Friday ſtreet, S. Auguſtine by Pauls gate, Saint Faith vnder Pauls Church, S. Martins at Ludgate, Saint Anne at the Black-fryers, S. Michael ad Bladum, or at Corne (corruptly called the Querne) by Pauls gate, where ſomtime was a Corne market kept, and the chappel of S. Iames by Cripplesgate. Halls of Societies, Ambroyders Hall in Guthurus, Barbar Chirurgions hall in Monkes-well-ſtreet, Sadlers hall in Cheap, Butchers Hall in Chick-lane in the Shambles, which ſerueth alſo for feltmakers. This ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie, twelue Common Counſellores, ſeauenteene Conſtables, eightene Scavengers, eyghteen wardmote Enqueſt, and a Beadle, It is tared at 50. pound to the fiſteene.

Bread-ſtreet Ward, ſo called of bread there ſold

1361.

The free ſchoole in Pauls Churchyard, founded by Iohn Collet, Doctor in Diuinity and Deane of Pauls.

Imbroyders hall. Barbar chirurgions hall. Sadlers hall. Butchers & felt makers hall.

Bread ſtreet Ward.

solde (in elder time) in that streete, which giveth name to the whole Warde, and hath foure Parish Churches in it. viz. Alhallowes in Bread-streete, saint Mildreds in Bread-streete, saynt Iohn Euangelist in Friday-streete, and s. Margaret Moyse in Friday-streete. Hals of companies, are the Salters Hall in Bread-streete, and Cordwainers o; Shoemakers Hall, in Maiden-lane, o; Distar lane. This ward hath an Alderman, and his Deputy; tenne common Counsellors, tenne Constables, eight Scavengers thirteene Wardmote Enquest, and a Beadle. In London it is tared at thirty seaven pound to the fifteen, and in the Erchequer at 36. ponde, 18. shillings, two pence.

Salters hall.
Cordwainers hall.

Queenes
Hith ward.

Queene-Hith Ward, so called of the Queens Hith o; water Gate, whereof wee haue already spoken. In which warde are seaven Parish churches, viz. saint Trinity in Trinity lane, saint Nicholas Cold-abbey, at Knight-riders streete, saint Nicholas Olave on Bredstreet hill, saint Mary de Monte Alto, o; Mounthaunt, by Old Fishstreet hill, o; Fine foot lane, saint Michael at the Queens Hith, saint Mary Summer-set neere Broken wharfe, and saint Peter, called Parua, by Paules wharfe. Hals of companies are these, Painter Stayners Hall in Trinitie Lane, Blacksmiths Hall on Lambert hill. This warde hath an Alderman and his Deputy, six common Counsellors, nine constables, eight Scavengers, thirteene Wardmote Enquest, and a beadle. In London it is tared at twenty pound to

Painters hal.

Blacksmiths
hall.

to the fifteen, and in the Erchequer at 19. pound 16. shillings, two pence.

Castel Baynard ward, so named of an ancient castle there standing, belonging sometime to one Baynard, a Nobleman, that came into this Lande with the conquerour, and first builded it. In this ward are foure parish churches, viz. saint Benet Hude, o; Hithe, by Paules Wharfe, saint Andrew by the Wardrobe, saint Mary Magdalen in Old-fishstreete, and saynt Gregory by Paules church. Hals of companies, are these, Woodmongers Hall, on the East-side of Paules wharfe Hill, and the Stationers Hall, neere the west end of Paules: but converted to a Tauerne since then, and the Hall. Woodmon-gees hall. Stationers Hall. was also in Milkestreet, for a while, but afterwards translated agayne into Amen lane, at the end of Pater noster row, to a goodly ancient house in oldetime, belonging to Iohn Duke of Britaine, and Earle of Richmond. Afterward called Pembrokes Anne, as appertaining to the Earles of Pembroke, in the tyme of Richard the second, the eighteenth yeare, and Henry the first the fourteenth yeare. But it lately belonged to Henry Lord of Aburgaueny, and was called Aburgauenie house. This ward hath an Alderman and his Deputie, common counsellors, 9. constables, 10. Scavengers, 7. wardmote Enquest, 14. and a Beadle: In London it is tared at twelve pound to the fifteen, and in the Erchequer at 11. li. 13. s.

There remayne, yet two moze, Faringdon ward

Faringdon
warde and
Bride-warde
both with-
out.

ward without, and Bridgeward without, or the Borough of the Southwarke, & the round inclosing Suburbs without the wals, the Dutchy of Lancaster, and Cittie of Westminster; All which beeing not comprized within this instant determination, craue fauour for reference to our Chronicle of London, whercin, whatsoeuer is wanting heere, and this slender pile woulde not permit (stretching alreadye beyond expectation) shall (by Gods assistance) be more fully, effectually, and largely performed, then (as yet) Master Iohn Stow his Suruey, or any other worke (that I haue scene) hath so amply deliuered, especially concerning this honorable Cittie, and the Countie of Middlesex, so far as the cities bounds and priuiledges do grant admittance. Let me not be rashly censured in these gay seeming words, to cast any disgrace or ill aspersiō, on the painful labors of that worthy and industrious man Master Iohn Stow (whom liuing, I loued as a dear and intimate friend, and dead, I honor with all kinde remembrance) for such as haue had knowledge of our inward respect of each other, & what hath past betwene vs (concerning this businesse for the Cittie) I know will no way misconceite of me: they are too wise and vertuous, to swerne in a knowne truth, and more sounde and solide, then malice can haue any power to seduce: whatsoeuer then is referred to our further intention, as it hath bin a labour willingly undertaken by me (albeit both beseming and requiring a much better Iudgement) So, by his helpe, who is both

both the hope and helpe of all Vertuous endeauours, it shall bee effected with all possible diligence.

Of the Temporall Government of this
Honorable Cittie, since the
Conquest.

To the worshipfull M. Rowland Smart, Esquire,
Sword-Bearer of London.



Passing ouer those Tempestuous times of the old Britons, Romans, Saxons, and Danes, till Ethelred or Alfrid, Earle of Mercia, who had the custody of this cittie in his power: he no sooner dyed, but both it, and all other possessions belonging to the saide Earle, returned to King Edward (surnamed the Elder) c. Remaining thus in obedience to him, he then ordaining Portgraues, to haue the gouernement thereof vnder him: which name, Portgraue, or Portreue, is compounded of two Saxon wordes, Porte and Gerefe, or Reue: Porte signifyeng a Towne or City, & Gerefe or Reue, a Guardian or Ruler of the said town or city. Before the conquest, in the daies of K. Edw. the Confessor, one Wolfegare was Portgraue, as appeareth by the kings charter to him, thus: *Edward K. greeteth Alward byshop, Wolfegare my Portgraue, & al the Burgeses in London, &c.* These Portgraues continued in William the conquerors time, William Rufus,

Ethelred
Earle of
Mercia

Portgraue
or Portreue

Wolfegat
Portgraue

Prouost.

Robert Bar-
Querel pro-
uost.Portgraue
and Sheriff
of London
& Middle-
sex.William
FitzStephen
his words.Bayliffes of
London.

Rufus, and Henry the first, when Hugh Buche was Portgraue, and Leostanas, Goldsmith, Prouost, which name of Prouost then beganne: for Aubery de Vere was (afterward) Portgraue, and Robert Bar-Querel, Prouost. Then (by the same King) was the Shrieue of London and Middlesex granted to the Cittizens of London. In the raigne of King Stephen, Gilbert Becket was Portgraue, and Andrew Buchuet Prouost: and Godfrey Magnailla, of Mandeuil (by gift of Maude the Emperesse) was Portgraue of Sheriffe of London and Middlesex, for the yearely farme of thre hundred pound, as appeareth by the Charter. In the tyme of k. Henry the second, those Portgraues were likewise (in diuers records) called Vicecomites, Vicounties of Sheriffes, as being vnder an Earle, and then (as since) used that Office, as the Sheriffes of London now doo. Albeit some Authoꝝ tearme them Domesmen, Elder-men, of Judges of the Kings court. Heere then, it shall not seeme impertinent, once moꝝe to remember the wordes of William Fitz-Stephen, saying. Euen as Rome is deuided into Wards, so is this Citty. It hath yearely Sheriffes, insted of Consuls. It hath the dignity of Senators, in Aldermen; It hath vnder Officers, and (according to the qualitie of Lawes) so hath it seuerall Courts, and generall assemblies, vpon appointed daies.

At parting with the name of Portgraues and Prouosts, in the first yeare of k. Richard 1. the cittizens obtained to be gouerned by 2. Bayliffes, who

who (in auncient daies) were called Sheriffes, as the Lawe tearmeth the Shire Balliua, vsing the same office of Shrieue, as the Portgraues before did. The names of the first Bayliffes of Officers, entring into their dignity at the feast of Saint Michael the Arch-angell, Anno 1189 were Henry Cornehill, and Richard Reynere. King Richard also (at that very time) appointed a supream Officer about the rest, by the name of Maior, which worde was borrowed from the Hebrew word Mar, and signifieth Dominus, Lord; a word used by the Franconians and old Saxons, their Neighbours (of whom Englishmen haue their Originall) but called Maire, as the French did their Maires of the Wallace. Thus was the chiefe Gouernor called Lord Maire, of Maior, because they vnderstood not, that the epithite Maire, of Maior, implied no lesse then lord, without any other additions, yet thus was it the giuen, for a larger augmentation of Honor.

Now, as the Goldsmiths yeilded London a Prouost before (named Leostanus) euen so the same Company (albeit not as yet ranked into a List of Brother-hood) gaue London likewise, the first Lord Maire of Maior in Dignity, whose name was Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Lieftane, Maire of London. and being so appointed by the King; he continued in that supream Office, from the first yeare of King Richard the first, vntill the fiftenth of k. John, which was moꝝe then twenty foure years. Henry Cornehill and Richard Reynere (being first chosen Bayliffes) serued then as Sheriffes, (by

The first
Bayliffes of
London.Beginning
of the May-
rality.The first L.
Maire of
London.

The time of
the L. Mairs
election.

Choyce of
Lord Maire
by voyces
and hands.
Choyce of
Sheriffes.

Forrest of
Middlesex
and warren
of Stanes.

Toule free
thorough al
England
granted to
London.

(by all likelihood) to the said Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Liefflane, Maire. whereby very well may bee obserued, the progresse and continuance of those seuerall elections and choyces (euen to this day) the Sheriffes beeing first appointed, and then the Lorde Maire after chosen, at the feast of Saint Michael the Arch-aungell, at the first, (by King Richard) it was ordained. King Iohn in like manner, after this high Dignity (begun by his Brother) graunted them free liberty by Charter, to chuse by (voyces and handes) yearely, out of the twelue chiefest and principall Companies, their Prætor or Maire: Also two Sheriffes, whereof the one should be called the Kings Sheriffe, and the other the Citties Sheriffe, which (in that forme) hath continued euen to this instant. Nay more, he graunted them full power and authority, not onely to chuse theyr Sheriffes at their owne pleasure, but also (vppon iust occasion, either of contempt, mutiny, disobedience, or other offences) to degrade and deprive them. The Forrest of Middlesex, and the Warren of Stanes, being laid open in An. 1218. the King afterward, in the yeare 1226. confirmed to the Citizens of London, free warrant and liberty, to hunt a limited circuite about the City, and in the Warren of Stanes. Also, that the Cittizens of London shoulde passe Toule-free, thorough al England: and the Kedeles or weres in the Riuer of Thames or Midway, to be pluckt vp and destroyed for euer. When the franchises and liberties were thus confirmed by King Iohn, he

he granted moreover, that either Sheriffe should haue two Clarks, and two Sergeants; also, that the Citty should haue a common Seale, and that the Maire should bee presented to the Barons of the Erchequer, and they then to admit him, as lawfull Lieutenant and Deputy (vnder the king) to gouerne the Citty.

Common
scale of the
Citty.

Having thus briefly discoursed, how the dignity of hono^r began in this famous Citty, both in the stile of Lord Maire and Sheriffes; as briefly wil we also part their progresse and succession, from that first worthy man Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Liefflane, Gold-Smith, to the as worthy Man, Sir William Crauon, now gouerning, this present yeare, 1611.

Henry Fitz-Alwin, Fitz-Liefflane, Gold-Smith, beginning to take that high office on him, in the first yeare of King Richard the first (who was also for his valour and courage surnamed Cueur de Lion) continued still in the same Dignity, for more then twenty foure yeares, and then deceassing, in the 15. yeare of King Iohn, he was buried in the Priory of the holy Trinity, neer vnto Aldgate.

1189

In the said 15. yeare of King Iohn (either to serue out the remainder of that yeare, or to go on in a new election,) Roger Fitz-Alwain was chosen Lord Maire: but I neyther find his freedom, or his death, albeit he continued (as it seemeth) in Office but one yeare; the like did Serle Mercer, and William Hardell, in the yeares 1214. and 1215. And then began the raigne of King Henry the

1213.

the third, Son to King John, the 19. of October,
1216.

1216 James Alderman, and Salomon Blasing, Lord
Mayor, serued out this yeare (by severall parts)
each after other.

1217. Serle Mercer, was againe chosen Lord Mai-
or, and continued in the Dignity six yeares to-
gether.

1223 Richard Renger, beeing chosen Lord Mayor,
continued so the space of foure yeares.

1227 Roger Duke, of Duck, was Lord Mayor of
London foure yeares.

1231 Andrew Bokerell, Pepperer, was Lord Mai-
or of London seauen yeares together.

1238 Richard Renger, Lord Mayor againe one
yeare.

1239 William Ioyner, Lord Mayor one yeare, who
builded the Quier of the Gray-fryers Church
in London, and afterward became a lay brother
of that house.

1240 Gerard Bat, Lord Mayor one yeare: and be-
ing elected againe for the ensuing yeare, the King
would not suffer it, because he had bene charged
(in the former yeare) with taking Money of the
Witchallers, and could shew no reason for it.

1241 Reginald Bongey, was Lord Mayor two
yeares.

1243. Raphe Ashwy, Lord Mayor one yeare.

1244 Michael Tonny, Lord Mayor one yeare.

1245 John Gisors, Pepperer, Lord Mayor two
yeares.

1247 Peter Fitz-Alwin, Lord Mayor one yeare.

Michael

Michael Tonny, Lord Mayor againe one yeare. 1248

Roger Fitz-Roger, Lord Mayor one yeare. 1249

John Norman, Lord Mayor one yeare. 1250

Adam Basing, Lord Mayor one yeare. 1251

John Tolason, Draper, Lord Mayor one yeare. 1252

Richard Hardell, Draper, was Lord Mayor six
yeares together. 1253

John Gisors, Pepperer, againe Lord Mayor one
yeare. 1259

William Fitz-Richard, was Lord Mayor two
yeares. 1260

Thomas Fitz-Richard, was Lord Mayor four
yeares together. 1262

Will Richards, againe Lord Mayor one yeare. 1266

Allen le Zouch, Lord Mayor one yeare: and
beeing a Baron of the Land, and chiefe Justice
also, he was slaine in Westminster Hall, by John
Warren, Earle of Surry, in An. 1270. 1267

Sir Stephen Edwards, Lord Mayor one yeare. 1268

Sir Hugh Fitz-Othon, was made Custos of
London, and Constable of the Tower, by rea-
son of a great quarrell happening betwene the
Goldsmiths and the Taylors: so that the King
gave the keeping of the Citty to his Son Prince
Edward, who made the laide Sir Hugh Fitz-
Othon Custos of the Citty, and Constable of the
Tower, as his Deputie. But Prince Edward
quickly obtained of the King his Father, to have
the Cittyes ancient liberties confirmed by Char-
ter againe, and so they proceeded on to their won-
ned election of a Lord Mayor and Sheriffes, as be-
fore, and Sir Hugh Fitz Othon was discharged
of

A Custos
appointed
over the
Citie of
London.

of his office.

1270 John Adrian, Vintoner, was Lorde Maioꝝ of London two yeares.

1272. Sir Walter Haruey, Lorde Maioꝝ, and H. Fro-wike, Pepperer, likewise for part of that yeare: wherein began the raigne of King Edward the first, the 16. of Nouember, 1272.

1273. Sir Walter Haruey, Lorde Maioꝝ againe for one yeare.

1274 Henry Walleis, Lorde Maioꝝ for one yeare.

1275 Gregory Roksley, Golde-Smith, chiefe Say Maister of all the Kinges Mints thorough Eng-land, and keeper of the Kings Erchange at Lon-don; was Lorde Maioꝝ seauen yeares together.

1282 Henry Walleis, who builded the Tanne upon Cornhill, to be a Waisen, and the Stockes to be a Market-house, was Lorde Maioꝝ againe thre yeares together.

1285 Gregory Roksley being choſen Lorde Maioꝝ a-gaine, King Edward was informed, that the said Gregory Roksley tooke bribes of the Bak-ers, and suffered them to sell bread, that wanted sixe or seauen ounces of weight in a Pennie-loafe, yet Wheat was then sold at London for 12. & 16 pence the quarter. Upō which information, the K. seized the franchises and liberties into his own handes, appointing first one John Sandwich, to be Custos thereof for one part of the yeare, and

London a-gaine in the charge or rule of a Custos.
Sir Iohn Breton, Knight, for the other part. Thus did the Cittie of London continue vnder the gouernment of seuerall Men, bearing the names of Custos, till King Edward the second began

began his raigne, which was the seauenth day of July, 1307.

Sir Iohn Blunt, Knight, hauing bene Cu-
stos of the Cittie, for the space of sixe yeares be-
foze, was now in the first yeare of King Edward
the second, Lorde Maioꝝ for one yeare.

Nicholas Faringdon, of Farendon, Golde-
smith, of whom the Ward of Faringdon (both
within, and without) toke name, was L. Maioꝝ
for one yeare.

Thomas Romaine, Lorde Maioꝝ one yeare. 1309

Richard Reffam, Mercer, Maioꝝ one yeare. 1310

Sir Iohn Gisors, Pepperer, Lorde Maioꝝ two
yeares. 1311

Nicholas Faringdon, Golde-Smith, againe
Lorde Maioꝝ one yeare. 1313

Sir Iohn Gisors, Pepperer, againe L. Maioꝝ
one yeare. 1314

Stephen Abendon, Lord Maior one yeare. 1315

Iohn Wingraue, Lorde Maior thre yeares.
In his time happened such cheapnesse of Cozne,
that a Bushell of Wheate (which had bene sold
formerly for ten shillings) was then solde for ten
pence. 1316

Hamond Chickwell, Pepperer, Lorde Mayor
one yeare. 1319

Nicholas Faringdon, againe Lord Maior one
yeares. 1320

Hamond Chickwell, Pepperer, againe Lord
Mayor two yeares. 1321

Nicholas Faringdon, Golde-Smith, againe L.
Maior one yeare. 1323

1324	Hamond Chickwell, Pepperer, againe Lord Mayor two yeares.
1326	Richard Britaine, Goldsmith, Lord Mayor one yeare. In whose time King Edward the third began his raigne, the 25 day of January, 1326. who graunted the Lord Mayor to bee Justice for the Gaole deliuey at New-gate; and the Cittizens of London not to goe (by any constraint) to any Warre out of the Citty of London. Beside, that the franchises and liberties of the Citty, should not thenceforward (for any cause) be seized into the Kinges handes: Nor any Escheator to bee in the Citty, but the Lord Mayor for the time being.
1327	Hamond Chickwell, Pepperer, againe Lord Mayor one yeare.
1328	John Grantham, Lord Mayor one yeare.
1329	Richard Swandland, Lord Mayor one yeare: In whose time the King kept a great Turling in Cheape, betwene Sopars-lane and the great Crosse.
1330	Sir Iohn Poultney, Draper, Lord Mayor two yeares.
1332	John Preston, Draper, Lord Mayor one year.
1333	Sir Iohn Poultney, Draper, againe L. Mayor one yeare.
1334	Reginald at the Conduit, Vintoner, L. Mayor one yeare.
1335	Nicholas Wotten, Lord Mayor one yeare.
1336	Sir Iohn Poultney, Draper, againe Lord Mayor one yeare. He founded a Colledge in the parish Church of Saint Laurence Poultney, by Candlewicke.

The Lord Mayor lussie for Gaole deliuey at New gate.

dlewick-streete.

Henry Darcy, Lord Mayor two yeares: In whose time the Sergeants to the Lord Mayor, and Sherifes of London, were graunted by the King, to beare Places of Silver and Gilt, with the Kings armes on them.	1337	The first Places to Sergeants granted.
Andrew Aubery, Grocer, L. Mayor two yeares.	1339	
John of Oxenford, Vintoner, Lord Mayor one yeare.	1341	
Simon Francis, Mercer, L. Mayor one yeare.	1342	
John Hamond, Lord Mayor two yeares.	1343	
Richard Leget, Lord Mayor one yeare.	1345	
Geffrey Wicheingham, L. Mayor one yeare.	1346	
Tho. Leggy, Skinner, Lord Mayor one year.	1347	
John Louekin, Fish-Monger, Lord Mayor one yeare.	1348	
Walter Turk, Fish-Monger, Lord Mayor one yeare.	1349	
Richard Killingbury, Lord Mayor one yeare.	1350	
Andrew Aubery, Grocer, againe Lord Mayor one yeare.	1351	
Simon Francis, Mercer, who (with Henry Fro-wike) founded the Colledge in Guild-hall Chapell, and was againe Lord Mayor two yeares.	1352	
Thomas Leggy, Skinner, againe Lord Mayor one yeare.	1354	
Simon Francis, Mercer, againe Lord Mayor one yeare.	1355	
Henry Prichard, of Piccard, Vintoner, who (in one day) feasted the kings of England, France, Scots, and Cypres, at his own house, and was L. Mayor one yeare.	1356	Four kings feasted at the L. Maiors house in one day.

1257	John Stody, Vintoner, Lorde Mayor one yeare.
1258	John Louekin, Fish-Monger, againe Lorde Mayor one yeare.
1259	Simon Dollesby, Grocer, Lord Mayor one yeare.
1260	John Wroth, Fish-Monger, Lorde Mayor one yeare.
1261	John Peche, Fish-Monger, Lord Maior one yeare.
1262	Stephen Gondish, Draper, Lorde Mayor one yeare.
1262	John Not, Grocer, Lord Maior one yeare.
1264	Adam of Burie, Skinner, Lorde Mayor one yeare.
1265	John Louekin, Fish-Monger, againe Lorde Mayor, and Adam of Bury one yeare.
1266	John Louekin, Fish-Monger, againe Lorde Mayor one yeare. This John Louekin builded Saint Michaels Church in crooked-lane.
1267	James Andrew, Draper, Lorde Mayor one yeare.
1268	Simon Mordon, Fish-monger, Lord Maior one yeare.
1269	John Chichester, Gold-smith, Lord Mayor one yeare.
1270	John Earnes, Mercer, Lorde Mayor two yeares.
1272	John Piell, Mercer, Lord Mayor one yeare.
1273	Adam of Bury, Skinner, againe Lord Maior one yeare.

William

William Walworth, Fish-Monger, Lorde Mayor one yeare.	1274
John VVarde, Grocer, Lorde Mayor one yeare.	1275
Adam Staple, Mercer, Lord Maior one yeare. His time no sooner expired, but therewith ended the life of King Edward the third, and on the 21. of June 1277. began the reign of King Richard the second.	1276
Sir Nicholas Brember, Grocer, Lord Mayor one yeare.	1277
John Philpot, Grocer, Lord Maior one yeare.	1278
John Hadley, Grocer, Lord Maior one yeare.	1279
Wil. Walworth, Fish-Monger, againe Lord Mayor. In this yeare of his Mayraltie happened the tumultuous rebellion of Iack Straw, Wat Tiler, Iack Carter, Iack Truman, &c. with the commons of Kent, Essex, and other places: But William Walworth, being then Lord Mayor, arrested the Traytor Iack Straw so stoutly with his weapon on the head (euen as he saucily took the Kings Horse by the bridle in Smithfelde) that, thrusting him afterward through the throat; the whole crew were disheartened, and seeing they Captaine slaine, betooke themselves to flight. For which worthy act, the King immediately knighted the Lorde Maior William Walworth, and with him Ralphe Standish, John Philpot, Nicholas Brember, John Launde, and Nicholas Twi-field, Burgessees of the Citty, adding the Dagger into the Citties Armes, which till that day was a red Crosse in a Silver field onely.	1280

The Lord Mayor kild Iack Straw the Rebell.

The dagger added to the Citties Armes.

1381	John Northampton, Draper, Lord Maior two yeares.
1382	Sir Nicholas Brember, Grocer, knighted with Syr William Walworth, Lorde Maior three yeares together.
1387	Nicholas Exton, fishmon. lord maior 1. yeare
1388	Nicholas T.iffeld, of Twytorde, knighted with Syr William Walworth, Lord Maior one yeare.
1389	William Vennor, Grocer, Lord Maior, one yeare.
1390	Adam Bamme, Goldsmith (who provided the Cittie of such plenty of come from beyonde the seas, that the Cittie was able to furnish the countrey) Lord Maior one yeare.
1391	John Hend, Draper, in whose time happened a great tumult in London, because one of the bishopps of Salisbury men, had taken a Horse lease from a Bakers man in Fleetstrate, and on the Bishops complaint to the King, the Lord Maior being sent to Windsor, and other of his Brethren; the Maior, Sherifes, and other substantiall Citizens, were there arrested, the Maior committed to the castle of Windsor, and the rest to other Castles and Holdes. The king seized the citty into his hands, appointing a Mar- den to gouerne it, named Sir Edward Darlington, knight, &c. But in short while the Kinges displeasure was pacified, and the liberties of London restored and ratified.
1392	William Stondon, Grocer, lord maior 1. year.
1393	John Hadley, Grocer, againe lord maior one yeare.

A Warden
appointed
to gouerne
London.

John Frothe, Mercer, Lorde maior one yeare.	1394
William More, Wintner, L. Maior one yeare	1395
Adam Bamme, Gold-Smith, againe Lorde Maior one yeare.	1396
Richard Whittington, mercer, Lorde Maior one yeare.	1397
Drew Barentine, Gold-Smith, Lord Maior 1. yeare. At his expiration of Office, beganne the raigne of King Henry the fourth, the 29. of September, 1399.	1398
Thomas Knolles, Grocer, lord maior 1. yeare.	1399
John Francis, Goldsmith, lord maior one year.	1400
John Shadworth, mercer, lord maior one yeare.	1401
John Walcote, Draper, lord maior one yeare.	1402
William Ascham, fishmonger, lord maior one yeare.	1403
John Hend, draper, again lord maior one year, he builded new againe the parish Church of saint Swithen at London Stone.	1404
John woodcock, mercer, lord maior one yeare.	1405
Richard VWhittington, mercer, agayne lord maior one year e. In which year died of y plague more then 30000. people.	1406
William Stondon, Grocer, againe lord maior one yeare.	1407
Drew Barentine, Gold-Smith, againe lord maior one yeare. He builded part of the Goldsmiths Hall, and gaue them lands.	1408
Richard Marlow, Ironmonger, Lorde Maior one yeare.	1409
Thomas Knoles, Grocer, againe L. Maior one yeare: he began anew to bulde the Guild-Hall in	1410

in London, &c.

- 1411 Robert Chichley, Grocer, Lord Mayor one
yeare.
- 1412 William Waldren, mercer, Lord Mayor one
yeare. In his time died king Henry the fourth, &
his sonne king Henry the fift began his raigne,
the 20. day of march, 1412.
- 1413 William Cromar, Draper, lord Mayor one
yeare.
- 1414 Thomas Faulconer, mercer, who builded the
Postern at Moorgate, and lent the king 10000.
markes vpon Jewels, Lord Mayor one yeare.
- 1415 Nicholas Wotton, Draper, Lord Mayor one
yeare.
- 1416 Henry Barton, Skinner, who first ordayned
Lanthorn and Candle-light in the winter Cue-
nings, from Hallontide to Candlemasse: Lord
Mayor one yeare.
- 1417 Richard Marlow, Ironmonger, againe Lord
Mayor one yeare.
- 1418 William Seuenoke, Grocer, (who founded a
free Schoole, and Almshouses at Seuenoke in
Kent) Lord Mayor one yeare.
- 1419 Richard Whittington, mercer, of whose wo-
thy deeds we haue else where spoken, Lord Ma-
ior againe one yeare.
- 1420 William Cambridge, Grocer, Lord Mayor
one yeare.
- 1421 Robert Chicheley, Grocer, againe L. Mayor
one yeare. He gaue the plot of ground, to builde
the parish church of S. Stephens in Walbrooke
thereon: In his time died king Henry the fift,
and

First Lan-
thorne and
candle-lightand king Henry the fift began his raigne the 31
of August, 1422.

- William walderne, mercer, againe Lord Mayor 1422
one yeare. Newgate was then builded by Ri-
chard Whittingtons executors.
- William Cromar, Draper, againe Lord Mayor 1423
one yeare.
- John Michell, Fishmonger, Lord Mayor one 1424
yeare.
- John Couentrie, mercer, Lord Mayor one year. 1425
- John Reinwell, Fishm. lord mayor one yeare. 1426
- John Gidney, Draper Lord Mayor one yeare. 1427
- Henry Barton, Skinner, againe Lord Mayor 1428
one yeare.
- William East-field, mercer, Lord Mayor one 1429
yeare.
- 57 Nicholas wotton, Draper, againe Lord Mayor 1430
one yeare.
- John Welles, Grocer, a liberall benefactor, for
newe building the chappell by Guild-Hall; be-
side, of his goodes was builde the Standarde in
West-Cheape, Lord Mayor one yeare.
- John Parneis, Fishmonger, Lord Mayor one 1432
yeare.
- John Brokle, Draper, Lord Mayor one yeare. 1433
- Roger Oteley, Grocer, Lord Mayor one year. 1434
- Henry Frowicke, Mercer, Lord Mayor one 1435
yeare.
- John Michell, Fishmonger, againe L. Mayor 1436
one yeare.
- Sir VWilliam East-field, mercer (who was
made a knight of the Bathe, and gaue great
bountie

L. Maior,
Knight of
the Bath.
1418

bounty to the Water conduits, Lord Maioz a-
gaine one yeare.

1419

Stephen Browne, Grocer, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

1410

Robert Large, mercer, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

1411

John Paddesley, Goldsmith, mint-maister,
Lord Maioz one yeare.

1412

Robert Clopton, Draper, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

1413

John Hatherley, Fromonger, Lord Maioz
one yeare.

1414

Thomas Catworth, Grocer, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

Pauls mer-
ple fired.

1445

Henry Frowicke, mercer, in whose time Pauls
Steeple was fiered with lightning, and hardye
quenched, Lord Maioz againe one yeare.

1446

Sir Simon Eyre, Draper (who builded Leaden
Hal, for a common Granary to the city, &c.) Lord
Maioz one yeare.

1447

John Olney, mercer, Lord Maioz one yeare.

1448

John Sidney, Draper, Lord Maioz one yeare.
Stephen Browne, Grocer, againe Lord Maioz
one yeare.

1449

Thomas Chalton, mercer (in whose time hap-
pened the Rebellion of Iack Cade of Kent) Lord
Maioz one yeare.

1450

Nicholas VVilford, Grocer, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

1451

William Gregory, Skinner, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

1452

Godfrey Filding, mercer, who was made one
of

of the counsell to King Henry the first, and King
Edward the fourth, Lord Maioz one yeare.

John Norman, Draper, who was the first
maioz that was rowed by water to westminster,
for (till that time) they rode thither on horseback,
Lord Maioz, one yeare.

Stephen Foster, fishmonger (who enlarged
Ludgate) Lord Maioz one yeare.

William Marrow, Grocer, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

Thomas Canning, Grocer, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

Godfrey Bolaine, mercer (who gaue a 1000.li.
to poore householders in London, &c.) Lord Maioz
one yeare.

Thomas Scot, Draper, Lord Maioz one yeare.
William Hulin, fishmonger, Lord Maioz one
yeare.

Richard Lee, Grocer, Lord Maioz one yeare.
In his time began King Henry the first his trou-
bles, and King Edward the fourth entered hys
raigne the fourth of March, 1460.

Hugh witch, mercer, Lord Maioz one yeare.

Thomas Cooke, Draper, made knight of the
Bath, in the fift yeare of King Edward the 4.
Lord maioz one yeare.

Mathew Phillip, Goldsmith (made knight
of the Bath the fift yeare of Edward the fourth,
and afterward knighted in field, the tenth of Ed-
ward the fourth, Lord maioz one yeare.

Raphe Ioceline, Draper, knight of the Bath
and knighted also in field, Lord maioz one yeare.

Raphe

1453

The first
Maior row-
ed to West-
minster.

1454

1455

1456

1457

1458

1459

1460

1461

1462

Lord Maior
Knight of
the Bath.

1463

Lord Maior
Knighted in
the field.

1464

1465	Raph Verney, mercer, Lord Maior one yeare.
A sheriffe knight of the Bath.	Henry weauer, one of the Sheriffes of London, was then made knight of the Bath.
1466	5 ^y John Yong, Grocer (knighted in the field) L. Maior one yeare.
1467	Tho. Oldgraue, Skinner, L. Mayor 1. year.
1468	William Tayler, Grocer, L. Maior one yeare.
1469	Richard Lee, Grocer, againe Lord Maior one yeare. In whose time the Towler of London being deliuered to him and his brethren, they released King Henry the first thence.
Lord Maior deliuered the king out of the Tower.	John Stockton, mercer, who worthily withstanding the Bastard Fauconbridge, hee, with sleuen Aldermen, & Thomas Vrswick, then Recorder, were all knighted in the fiede by K. Edward the fourth; Lord Maior one yeare.
1470	William Edwards, Grocer, L. Maior 1. year.
L. Maior 11 Aldermen, and the Recorder, knighted in fiede.	Sir William Hampton, Fishmonger, Lorde Maior one yeare.
1471	John Tate, mercer, Lord Maior one yeare. In his time 5 Sheriffes of London were appointed to haue seuerally 16. Sergeants, & each Sergeant his Peoman. Then also was ordained fire Clarke, viz. a Secondary, a Clarke of the Papers, and foure other Clarkes, beside the vnder Sheriffes Clarkes.
1472	Robert Drope, Draper, L. Maior one yeare.
1473	Robert Bassler, Salter, L. Maior. one yeare.
Sergeants, yeomen, & Clarke appointed.	Sir Raphe Ioceline, Draper, knight of the Bath, Lord Maior one yeare.
1474	Humfrey Hayford, Goldsmith, Lord Maior, one yeare.
1475	
1476	
1477	

Richard

Richard Gardener, mercer, Lord Maior one year. 1478
 Sir Bartholnew Iames, Draper, knighted in field and (who newly builded the great Conduit in West-Cheape) Lord Maior one yeare. 1479

John Browne, mercer, Lord Maior one yeare. 1480
 William Hariot, Draper, Lord Maior one year 1481
 Edmund Shaa, Goldsmith, who builded Cripple-gate, Lord Maior one yeare. Then beganne the raigne of King Edward the first, son to King Edward the fourth; but preuented by the cruell usurpation of his Uncle Richard, Duke of Gloucester, who began his raign the 22. day of June, 1483.

And because many haue often desired, to knowe the country and parentage of our Lord Maiors of London, in regard that diuers worthy houses haue descended of them; my purpose was, to haue examined our ancient Records, from the verie beginning of that honourable dignity, and so to haue pursued the tract thereof (by reporting each mans Fathers name and Country) euen to this instant. Wherein I haue had the most laborious and painfull helpe, of my especiall kind friende, maister W. Williams: And shaping our course from the present government of Sir William Crauon, hoping to haue reached the maine height of our purpose, euen to Henry Fitz-Alwin, &c. We could proceed no further backward, then the raign of King Richard the third, where I will now begin with their country, and parents, and so heereafter, go on with the rest, if this great labor may be but fauourably accepted.

The

¶ The raigne of King Richard the third.

1483

Robert Billifdon, Haberdasher, Sonne to Alexander Billifdó, of Queensborough, in the Countie of Leicester, Lorde Maioꝝ one yeare.

1484

Thomas Hill, Grocer, Sonne to William Hil of Hilston, in the Countie of Kent. Sir William Stocker, Draper, sonne to Thomas Stocker, of Eton, in the Countie of Bedford. And John Ward, Grocer, son to Richard Ward, of Howdon, in the Countie of Yorke. These thre Maioꝝ were all in this one yeare, by reason a sweating sicknesse. And King Richard, being slaine at Bosworth-field; Henry the seauenth began his raigne the 22. of August 1485.

1485

Hugh Brice, Gold-smith, Sonne to Richard Brice of Dubline in Ireland: Lorde Maior one yeare.

1486

Henry Collet, Mercer, son to Robert Collet of Windouer, in the Countie of Buckingham, Lorde Maior one yeare.

1487

Sir William Horne, Salter (made knight in the field by King Henry the seauenth) was son to Thomas Horne of Snaylewell, in Cambridgeshire; Lorde Maioꝝ one yeare.

1488

Robert Tate, Mercer, Sonne to Thomas Tate, of the Cittie of Couentry; Lorde Maioꝝ one yeare.

1489

William White, Draper, son to Wil. White of

of Tickhill in the Countie of York; Lorde Maioꝝ one yeare.

John Mathew, Linnen-Draper, and translated to the Mercers, Sonne to Thomas Mathew of Sherington, in the Countie of Buckingham; Lorde Maioꝝ one yeare.

1490

Hugh Clopton, Mercer, son to John Clopton of Stratford vppon Auon, in the Countie of Warwicke (where the saide Hugh builded the goodlie Stone-Bridge) Lorde Maioꝝ one yeare.

1491

William Martine, Skinner, sonne to Walter Martin, of the Countie of Hertford; Lord Maior one yeare.

1492

Sir Raphe Ostrich, Fish-Monger (knighted by Henry the seauenth) sonne to Henry Ostrich of Hitchin, in the Countie of Hertford, lord Maior one yeare.

1493

Richard Chawry, Salter, Son to William Chawry, of Westram in Kent; Lord Mayor one yeare.

1494

Henry Collet, Mercer, again Lorde Maior one yeare.

1495

John Tate, Mercer, sonne to Thomas Tate of Couentry, and Brother to Robert Tate Maior, so renamed, Lorde Mayor one yeare.

1496

This John Tate, Robert Sheffielde, Recorder, and both the Sheriffes, were knighted in the fiede by King Henry the seauenth, for theye good scrute against the Rebelles at Black-Heath fiede.

William Purchas, Mercer, son to John Purchas of Gamelinghey, in the County of Cambridge;

1497.

bridge, Lord Maior one yeare.

1498

Sir Iohn Perciuall, Merchant-Taylor, knighted in field by King Henry the seuenth) sonne to Roger Perciuall of London; L. Maior one year.

1499

Nicholas Aldwine, Mercer, Son to Richard Aldwine of Spalding in Lincolnshire, lord Maior one yeare. Hee gaue twelue pence a peece to 3000. poore people in London; and the like to as many in Spalding.

1500

William Remington, Fish-Monger, son to Robert Remington, of Boston in Lincolnshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1501

John Shaa, Gold-smith, son to Iohn Shaa of Rochford in Essex, Lord Maior one yeare. Hee was made knight in the fiede by King Henry the seauenth, and hee caused the Aldermen his Wyetheren, to ride from the Guilde-Hall to the Thames side, when he took Wardge to Westminster, where he was swozne by the Kinges Council. He first kept Court alone in the afternoon, for redresse of matters called before him.

Lord Mairs
first riding
from the
Guild Hall,
to take
Bardge to
Westmin-
ster.

1502

Bartholmew Reade, Gold-smith, son of Roger Reade of Crowthorpe in Norffolke; L. Maior one yeare.

1503

William Capell, Draper, son of Iohn Capell of Stokeneyland in Suffolke; Lorde Maior one yeare. He was knighted by King Henry the seauenth. And he first caused Caddes to be set vp in euery Ward, for punishment of Rogues and vagabonds.

First setting
vp of Cad-
ges.

1504

Iohn Winger, Grocer, son to William Winger of Leicester; Lord Maior one yeare.

Thomas

Thomas Knesworth, Fish-Monger, sonne to Iohn Knesworth, of Knesworth in Cambridge-shire, Lord Maior one yeare. 1505

Sir Richard Haddon, Mercer, son of VVilliam Haddon, Cittizen and Mercer of London, Lord Maior one yeare. 1506

VVilliam Browne, Mercer, Sonne of Iohn Browne, Cittizen and Mercer of London, Lord Maior for one part of the yeare, and Laurance Ailmer, Draper, Sonne of Thomas Ailmer, of Ellesham in Essex, Lorde Maior for the other part. 1507

Stephen Iennings, Merchant-Taylor, sonne to VVilliam Iennings, of VVolnerhampton in Staffordshire (where hee builded a free Schoole, worthily yet maintained by the Merchant-Tailors, and the greater part of S. Andrews Vnder-shaft Parish Church in London) Lorde Maior one yeare. 1508

Thomas Bradbury, Mercer, sonne to VVilliam Bradbury of Branghing in Hertfordshire: Lord Maior part of the yeare, and Sir VVilliam Capell the rest, wherein dyed King Henry the seauenth, and Henry the eight his sonne, began his traigne the 22. of Aprill, 1509. 1509

Henry Keble, Grocer, son to George Keble of London, Cittizen and Grocer; Lord Maior one yeare. 1510

Roger Acheley, Draper, sonne to Thomas Acheley of Stanwardine in Shropshire; Lorde Maior one yeare. 1511

Sir VVilliam Coppinger, Fish-Monger, son to 1512

to VValter Coppinger, of Buckseill in Suffolk;
And Sir Richard Haddon, Mercer, were Lord
Maiors this yeare by severall partes, each after
other.

1512. William Browne, Mercer, sonne to Iohn
Browne, Cittizen and Mercer of London, Lord
Maior one yeare.

1514 George Monox, Draper, bozne in London,
Lord Mayor one yeare.

1515 Sir William Butler, Grocer, son to Richard
Butler, of Bindenham in Bedfordshire, Lorde
Mayor one yeare.

1516 Iohn Reest, Grocer, sonne to William Reest
of Peterborow, in Northamptonshire, Lorde
Maior one yeare.

1517 Sir Thomas Exmew, Golde-smith, sonne to
Richard Exmew of Ruthin in Cheshire; Lorde
Maior one yeare: he made the Water-Conduite
in London wall by Moore-gate, &c.

1518 Thomas Mirfin, Skinner, sonne to George
Mirfin, of Elie in Cambridgeshire, L. Mayor one
yeare.

1519 Sir Iames Yardford, Mercer, sonne to Wil-
liam Yardford of Kidwelley in Wales; L. Mai-
or one yeare.

1520 Sir Iohn Brugge, Draper, sonne to Thomas
Brugge of Dymmocke in Gloucestershire; Lord
Mayor one yeare.

1521 Sir Iohn Milborne, Draper, son to Iohn Mil-
borne of Long-Melford in Suffolke; L. Mayor
one yeare.

1522 Sir Iohn Mundy, Gold-Smith, son to Wil-
liam

Iam Mundy of Wycomb in Buckinghamshire;
Lord Mayor one yeare.

Sir Thomas Baldry, Mercer, son to Richard
Baldry, of Stow-market in Suffolke; Lord Ma-
ior one yeare. 1523

Sir William Baylie, Draper, son to Iohn Bay-
lie of Thackstead in Essex; Lorde Mayor one
yeare. 1524

Sir Iohn Allen, Mercer, son to Richard Al-
len of Thackstead, in Essex; Lorde Mayor two
yeares. 1525

Sir Thomas Seymor, Mercer, sonne to Iohn
Seymor of London, filly-bonger, who was
sonne to Robert Seymor of Walden in Essex;
Lord Maior one yeare. 1526

Sir Iames Spencer, Vintoner, son to Robert
Spencer of Congleton in Cheshire, Lord Mayor
one yeare. 1527

Sir Iohn Rudstone, Draper, son to Robert
Rudstone of Hatton in Yorkshire; Lord Maior
one yeare. 1528

Sir Raphe Dodmer, Mercer, son to Henrie
Dodmer, of Pickering-Leigh in Yorkshire; be-
ing free of the Brewers, he was from them tran-
slated to the Mercers, and Lorde Mayor one
yeare. 1529

Sir Thomas Pargitor, Salter, sonne to Iohn
Pargitor, of Chipping-norton in Oxfordshire,
Lord Maior one yeare. 1530

Sir Nicholas Lambert, Grocer, son to Ed-
mond Lambert of Wilton in Wiltshire; L. Ma-
ior one yeare. 1531

1532. Sir Stephen Peacock, Haberdasher, sonne to Stephen Peacock of the Cittie of Dublin; Lorde Maio: one yeare.
- 1533 Sir Christopher Askew, Draper, son to Iohn Askew of Edmonton in Middlesex; Lorde Maio: one yeare.
- 1534 Sir Iohn Champneis, Skinner, sonne to R. Champneis, of Chew in Somersetshire; Lorde Mayor one yeare.
- 1535 Sir Iohn Allen, Mercer, againe Lord Maio: one yeare, and made a priuy Counceller to the King, for his great wisedome.
- 1536 Sir Raphe Warren Mercer, son to Thomas Warren of London, Fuller, who was sonne to William Warren, of Fering in Essex: L. Maio: one yeare.
- 1537 Sir Richard Gresham, Mercer, son to Iohn Gresham, of Holte in Norffolke; Lorde Maio: one yeare.
- 1538 Sir William Forman, Haberdasher, sonne to Willi. Forman of Gainsburgh in Lincolnshire, Lorde Maio: one yeare.
- 1539 Sir William Hollis of London, Mercer, L. Maio: one yeare.
- 1540 Sir William Roche, Draper, sonne to Iohn Roche of Wixley in Yorkshire; Lorde Maio: one yeare.
- 1541 Sir Michaell Dormer, Mercer, son to Geoffrey Dormer of Tame in Derbyshire; L. Maio: one yeare.
- 1542 Iohn Cootes, Salter, son to Thomas Cootes of Bearton, in Buckinghamshire; Lorde Maio: one

one yeare.

Sir William Bowyer, Draper, son to William Bowyer, of Harston in Cambridgshire, Lorde Maio: one yeare.

Sir William Laxton, Grocer, sonne to Iohn Laxton, of Yongdel in Northamptonshire; Lorde Maio: one yeare.

Sir Martin Bowes, Golde-Smith, sonne to Thomas Bowes of Yorke Cittie, Lorde Maio: one yeare.

Sir Henry Hubberthorne, Merchant-Taylo: son to Christopher Hubberthorne, of VVaddingworth in Lincolnshire, L. Maio: one year. In whose time died King Henry the 8. and King Edward the first, began his raigne the 28. of January, 1546.

Sir Iohn Gresham, Mercer, son to Iohn Gresham of Holte in Norffolke, Lorde Mayor one yeare.

Sir Henry Amcotes, Fish-Monger, son to William Amcotes of Astrap in Lincolnshire, L. Maio: one yeare.

Sir Rowland Hill, Mercer, sonne to Thomas Hill of Hodnet in Shropshire: Lorde Maio: one yeare.

Sir Andrew Iudde, Skinner, son to Iohn Iudde of Tonebridge in Kent, Lord Maio: one yeare.

Sir Richard Dobbess, Skinner, son to Robert Dobbess of Baitby in Yorkshire: L. Maio: one yeare.

Sir George Barne, Haberdasher, sonne to George Barne, Cittizen and Haberdasher of London,

1543

1544

1545.

1546

1547

1548

1549

1550

1551

1552

London, Lord Maior one yeare.

1553

Sir Thomas White, Merchant-Taylor, son to Thomas White of Rickmansworth, in Hertfordshire, Lord maior one yeare. Then died king Edward, and Quene Mary began her raign the 6. day of July, 1553. This sir Thomas White founded S. Iohn Baptists Colledge in Oxenford: and gaue 2000.li. to the Cittie of Bristoll, to purchase 100. and 20. li. land yearely, &c.

1554

Sir Thomas Lyon, Grocer, son to Iohn Lyon of Peryfare in Middlesex, Lord Maior one yeare.

1555

Sir William Gerard, Haberdasher, sonne to Iohn Gerard, Cittizen and Grocer of London, who was son to William Gerard, of Seddingbourne in Kent; Lord Maior one yeare.

1556

Sir Thomas Offley, Merchant-Taylor, sonne to VVilliam Offley, of the Cittie of Chester, Lord maior one yeare.

1557

Sir Thomas Curteis, Fish-Monger, sonne to Iohn Curteis of Enfield in Middlesex, he was free of the Pewterers, and from them translated to the Fish-Mongers, Lord Maior one yeare.

1558

Sir Thomas Leigh, Mercer, sonne to Roger Leigh, of VVillington, in Shropshire, Lorde Maior one yeare. In which yeare died Quene Mary, and Quene Elizabeth began her princely raigne the seauententh day of Nouember, 1558.

1559

Sir William Huet, Cloth-worker, son to Edmond Huet of Wales in Yorkshire: Lord Maior one yeare.

Sir

Sir William Chester, Draper, sonne to Iohn Chester, Cittizen and Draper of London; Lord Maior one yeare. 1560

Sir William Harper, Merchant-Taylor, son to William Harper, of the Towne of Bedford, Lord maior one yeare. 1561

Sir Thomas Lodge, Grocer, son to William Lodge, of Cresset in Shropshire, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1562

Sir Iohn White, Grocer, sonne to Robert White of Farnam in Surry, Lorde Maior one yeare. 1563

Sir Richard Malory, Mercer, son to Anthony Malory of Papworthamus, in Cambridgeshire; Lord Maior one yeare. 1564

Sir Richard Champion, Draper, son to Richard Champion of Godilming in Surrey, Lord maior one yeare. 1565

Sir Christopher Draper, Iron-monger, son to Iohn Draper of Melton Mowbrey; Lord Maior one yeare. 1566

Sir Roger Martin, Mercer, son to Laurance Martine of Melford in Suffolke, Lord maior one yeare. 1567

Sir Thomas Roe Merchant-Taylor, son to Robert Roe, Cittizen and Merchant-Taylor of London, who was son to Reiginald Roe, of Lee in Kent, Lord maior one yeare. 1568

Sir Alexander Auenand, Iron-monger, son to Robert Auenand, of Kings-Norton in Worcester-shire, Lorde maior one yeare. 1569

Sir Rowland Heyward, Cloth-worker, sonne to 1570

to

to George Heiward of Bridge-north in Shropshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1571

Sir William Allen, Mercer, son to William Allen, Cittizen and Pasteller of London, who was son to Richard Allen, of Stondon in Hertfordshire; Lord Mayor one yeare.

1572

Sir Lionell Duckett, Mercer, son to William Duckett of Flynton in Nottinghamshire, Lord maior one yeare.

1573

Sir Iohn Riuers, Grocer, son to Richard Riuers of Pensherst in Kent L. Maior one yeare.

1574

Sir James Hawes, Cloth-wozker, son to Thomas Hawes, Cittizen and Merchant of London, who was son to Iohn Hawes of Stokenwenton, in Middlesex, Lord Maior one yeare.

1575

Sir Ambrose Nicholas, Salter, sonne to Iohn Nicholas of Nedingworth in Huntingdonshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1576

Sir Iohn Langley, Gold-Smith, son to Robert Langley, of Althrop in Lincolnshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1577

Sir Thomas Ramsey, Grocer, sonne to Iohn Ramsey, of Elenbridge in Kent; Lord Maior one yeare.

1578

Sir Richard Pipe, Draper, sonne to Richard Pipe of Wolnerhampton, in Staffordshire, hee was free of the Leather-sellers, and from them translated to the Drapers, Lord Maior one yeare.

1579

Sir Nicholas Woodroue, Haberdasher, son to Dauid Woodroue, Cittizen and Haberdasher of London, who was son to Iohn Woodroue, of the Parish of Vscombe in Deuonshire; Lord Maior one yeare.

Sir

Sir Iohn Branche, Draper, sonne to Iohn Branche, Cittizen and Draper of London, who was son to Iohn Branch of Laynham in Suffolk; Lord Maior one yeare.

1580

Sir Iames Haruey, Iron-monger, son to William Haruey, of Cotwalton in Staffordshire, L. Maior one yeare.

1581

Sir Thomas Blanke, Haberdasher, sonne to Thomas Blanke, Cittizen and Haberdasher of London, who was sonne to Thomas Blancke of Guildford in Surry, Lord Maior one yeare.

1582

Sir Edward Osborne, Cloth-wozker, sonne to Richard Osborne of Ashford in Kent, Lord Maior one yeare.

1583

Sir Thomas Pulloccill, Draper, son to William Pulloccill, of Fotescray in Kent, Lord Maior one yeare.

1584

Sir Wolstane Dixie, Skinner, son to Thomas Dixie of Catworth in Huntingdonshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1585

Sir George Barne, Haberdasher, son to Sir George Barne, knight, Cittizen and Haberdasher of London, Lord Maior one yeare.

1586

Sir George Bond, Haberdasher, sonne of R. Bond of Trull in Somersetshire, Lord Maior one yeare.

1587

Sir Martine Calthrop, Cittizen and Draper of London, Lord Maior for part of the yeare, and Richard Martine, Gold-smith, for the rest.

1588

Sir Iohn Hart, Grocer, son of Raphe Hart of Sproston Court in Yorkshire, L. Maior one yeare.

1589

Sir Iohn Allot, Fish-Monger, son to Richard Allot

1590

Allot of Lymbergh in Lincolnshire, Lord Maio: one part of the yeare, and Sir Rowland Heywerd the rest.

1591

Sir William Webbe, Salter, Sonne to Iohn Webbe of Reading in Berkshire, Lord Maio: one yeare.

1592

Sir William Roe, Ironmonger, Sonne to Thomas Roe of Penfeherst in Kent, Lord Maio: one yeare.

1593

Sir Cutbbert Buckle, Vintoner, son to Christopher Buckle, of Bourgh in Westmerland, Lord Maio: for part of the yeare, and Sir Richard Martine Goldsmith, the rest: This Sir Richard Martine was sonne to Thomas Martine, of Saffron VValden in Essex.

1594

Sir Iohn Spenser, Cloth-worker, son to Rich. Spenser of Maldenfeld in Suffolke, Lord Maio: one yeare.

1595

Sir Stephen Slaney, Skinner, sonne to Iohn Slaney of Mitton in Staffordshire, Lord Maio: one yeare.

1596

Thomas Skinner, Cloth-worker, son to Iohn Skinner of Walden in Essex: Lord Maio: for part of the yeare, and Sir Henry Billingsley Haberdasher the rest. This Sir Henrie Billingsley was sonne to William Billingsley, Cittizen and Haberdasher of London, who was sonne to Roger Billingsley, of the City of Canterbury in Kent.

1597

Sir Richard Saltonstall, Skinner, son to Gilbert Saltonstall, of Hallyfax in Yorkshire, Lord Mayor one yeare.

Sir

Sir Stephen Soame, Grocer, son to Thomas Soame of Bradley in Suffolke, Lord Maio: one year. He was free of the Girdlers, and from them translated to the Grocers. 1598

Sir Nicholas Mosley, Cloth-worker, sonne to Edward Mosley of Hough in Lancashire, Lord Maio: one yeare. 1599

Sir William Ryder, Haberdasher, sonne to Thomas Ryder of Muckleston in Staffordshire, Lord Maio: one yeare. 1600

Sir Iohn Gerard, Haberdasher, son to Sir William Gerard, Knight, Cittizen and Haberdasher of London, Lord Maio: one yeare. 1601

Sir Robert Lee, Merchant-Taylor, sonne to Humphrey Lee of Bridge-north, in Shropshire, Lord Maio: one yeare. 1602

Sir Thomas Benet, Mercer, sonne to Thomas Benet of Wallingford in Berkshire, Lord Maio: one yeare. 1603

Sir Thomas Low, Haberdasher, son to Simon Low, Cittizen and Merchant-Tailor of London, who was sonne to Raphe Low of London, Gentleman; Lord Maio: one yeare. 1604

Sir Leonard Holyday, Merchant-Taylor, son to William Holyday, of Redborow in Gloucestershire, Lord Maio: one yeare. 1605

Sir Iohn Wats, Cloth-worker, sonne to Thomas Wats of Buntingford in Hertfordshire, Lord Maio: one yeare. 1606

Sir Henry Roe, Mercer, sonne to Sir Thomas Roe, Knight, Cittizen and Merchant-Taylor of London; Lord Mayor one yeare. 1607

Sir

608 A brieft Chronicle

1608 Sir Humphrey Welde, Grocer, son to Iohn Welde of Eaton in Cheshire; Lord Mayor one yeare.

1609 Sir Thomas Cambell, Iron-Monger, son to Robert Cambell, of Fulsam in Norffolk, Lord Maior one yeare.

1610 Sir William Crauon, Merchant-Taylor, son to William Crauon, of Appletreewick in Yorkshire; Lord Maior now governing, to whom
(with the rest of his worthy Brethren)
I wish all health and happineſſe.

Since



Of the Successe of Times. 609

Since the time also of King *Richard* the third, these Gentlemen haue borne office in this Cit-ty, according to their names and places.

¶ *Recorders of this Citty.*

Mr. **H**umphrey Starkey, Esquire.
Mr. **T**homas Fitz-Williams, Esquire.
Sir Robert Sheffield, Knight.
Mr. Iohn Chaloner, Esquire.
Mr. Robert Brooke, Esquire.
Mr. Shelley, Esquire.
Mr. Baker, Esquire.
Mr. Roger Cholmeley, Esquire.
Mr. Richard Onslow, Esquire.
Mr. Thomas Bromeley, Esquire.
Mr. William Fleetwood, Esquire.
Mr. Edward Coke, Esquire.
Mr. Edward Drew, Esquire.
Mr. Thomas Fleming, Esquire.
Mr. Iohn Crooke, Esquire.
Sir Henry Montague, Knight.

Common Sergeants of this Citty.

Mr. Robert Moloneux, Esquire.
Mr. Iohn Haugh, Esquire. Thomas Higham.
Mr. Thomas Frowick, Esquire.
Mr. Thomas Marow, Esquire.
Mr. Iohn Greene, Esquire.
Mr. VWhite, Esquire.
Mr. VValsingham, Esquire.

Won-

¶. VVonley, Esquire.
 ¶. Robert Sothwell, Esquire.
 ¶. Robert Brooke, Esquire.
 ¶. Atkins, Esquire.
 ¶. Marsh, Esquire.
 ¶. Randall, Esquire.
 ¶. Thomas Kirton, Esquire.
 ¶. Thomas Wilbraham, Esquire.
 ¶. Richard Wheeler, Esquire.

¶ Chamberlaines of this
City.

¶. William Phillip, Esquire.
 ¶. Miles Adys.
 ¶. VWilliam Purhas.
 ¶. William Milborne.
 ¶. Nicholas Mattock.
 ¶. George Medley.
 ¶. Thomas Haies.
 ¶. John Sturgeon.
 ¶. George Heaton.
 ¶. John Mabbe.
 ¶. Robert Brandon.
 ¶. Thomas Wilford.
 ¶. Cornelius Fish.

¶ Common-Clerkes, or Towne-
Clerkes.

¶. William Dunthorne.
 ¶. Nicholas Pakenham.

¶. Wal-

¶. Walter Stub.
 ¶. William Pauior.
 ¶. Thomas Rushton.
 ¶. Blackwell.
 ¶. Anthony Stapleton.
 ¶. William Sebright.
 ¶. Richard Langley.

Esquires attending on the Lorde Maior
in his house, and else-where.
Sword-bearers.

Iohn Metford.
 Walter Thomas.
 Iohn Pynchbecke.
 Valentine Mafon.
 Richard Berwick.
 Walter Smith.
 Robert Smart.
 Mathew Sturdeuant.
 Rowland Smart.

Common Hunt.

Iohn Stokker.
 Arnold Babington.
 Iohn Burton.
 Thomas Abbot.
 Thomas Vnderhill.
 Iohn Lune.
 Iohn Dewell.
 William Richbell.

S f

Common

Common Proclaimer, or Cryer.

John Ashe.
 Thomas Camery.
 Thomas Say.
 Richard White.
 VVilliam Nicholson.
 John Hallyday.
 John Greene.
 Christopher Fowkes.
 John Northage.
 Edward Ap-Iohn.

VVater Bayliffe.

Iohn Good.
 Henry Snowe.
 Geffrey Morton.
 Thomas Briggs.
 Sebastian Hillarie.
 Henry King.
 Nicholas VVillie.
 Robert Sharborowe.
 Cuthbert Thursbie.
 Thomas Benson,

These Officers also doo attend the Lorde Maior
 in their seuerall places.

Vnder Chamberlaine.
 Foure Clearkes of the Lord Maiors court,
 who wrote weckely in the Lorde Maiors house se-
 uerally. Corq

Coroner of London.
 Sergeant Caruers, three.
 Sergeants of the Chamber, three.
 Sergeant of the Chancell.
 Proman of the Chancell.
 Promen of the Water side, foure.
 Under water Walyffe
 Promen of the Chamber, two.
 Meale weighers, three.
 Promen of the wood wharfes, two.
 The sword beares man.
 Common Huntsmen two
 Common Cryers man. } Esquires men.
 Water Bayliffes men two
 The Caruers man.
 Five of these haue Vueries of the Lord Maior. viz
 The sword bearer, and his man.
 Three Caruers.
 Foure Promen of the water side.

FINIS.

